

# PRACTICAL USSIAN GRAMMAR





-

Frances Kirschenbeum

,

# PRACTICAL RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

4

# A RUSSIAN VOCABULARY

WITH PRONUNCIATION

Classified lists of more than two thousand Russian words, with phonetic pronunciation of each and its English equivalent.

By R. T. CURRALL, M.A. Size 5<sup>1</sup>/<sub>2</sub> × 3 ins. 126 pp. **1s.** net.

# PRACTICAL RUSSIAN GRAMMAR

# PART I

 $\mathbf{B}\mathbf{Y}$ 

# R. T. CURRALL M.A.

SENIOR MODERN LANGUAGE MASTER GEORGE WATSON'S COLLEGE EDINBURGH

## LONDON

GEORGE G. HARRAP & CO. LTD. 2 & 3 PORTSMOUTH STREET KINGSWAY W.C.

#### 1918

Printed in Great Britain by R. & R. CLARK, LIMITED, Edinburgh

schenness

PERSONAL experience in commencing the study of Russian, confirmed by more recent experience in teaching classes supplied with one of the best of existing manuals, has convinced the compiler of this book that Russian grammar, if presented from the same end as that at which the study of Latin or French or German is usually begun, will always appear to be more formidable than it is. This book, the manuscript of which was practically complete before the end of December 1916, is an attempt to deal with the subject starting from a rather unusual point. The plan, however, once it is explained, may commend itself to teachers working with classes of younger pupils and to adult private students, and it is hoped that it will justify the book's claim to the title of a 'practical' grammar.

In Russian, though it is possible to express many a simple thought or command without actually using a verb at all, the verb is still, as in our own speech, the "soul of the sentence," and is the part of speech which offers the greatest difficulty to strangers. The distinctive feature of the Russian verb is the system of 'Aspects,' the theory of which can be made clear to a serious student in half an hour (see Lesson LI of this book). But the application of this theory to the practical purposes of reading and writing depends upon a thorough knowledge of the forms of the present tense. Unfortunately the present tense of the Russian

verb, while it is beyond question the most frequently employed of all the forms, is for a beginner something like a maze in its apparent confusion of consonantal and accentual changes. More real and, in the final result, more rapid progress may be made if we take what may seem at first sight to be a longer way round.

It happens that the past tense of Russian verbs is remarkably regular and simple, having only four endings—masculine, feminine, and neuter singular and one plural—identical in form with those of nouns of corresponding gender and number. Upon that fact this method is based. We begin with the past tense.

From the first lesson sentences are constructed and read, but while the student is learning the common forms of nouns, pronouns, and adjectives his attention is not simultaneously being distracted by the vagaries of the verb, for the past tense requires hardly any special study. When a considerable number of verbs have by mere iteration become familiar, the present is taken up, the student having the advantage of learning the forms without at the same time having to acquire a completely new set of words. Not until a useful store of material has been accumulated and is at command is the presentation of the Aspects attempted.

Participles are of very frequent occurrence in Russian texts: their forms must therefore be known. These have been indicated in the grammatical summary at page 35 and illustrated in notes to the paragraphs referred to on page 35, but otherwise participles have been systematically ignored. There is much to be done by the beginner before he need concern himself seriously with the study of participles in composition. Indeed the foreigner who does not enjoy complete mastery of the language, provided he

can recognize participles in his reading, may get along very well by the use of adverbial and relative clauses.

Numerous summaries in the form of Lists have been given as an aid to clearness.

For those who hesitate to adopt uncompromisingly the plan of the book, some suggestions as to its use have been given on page 36.

Much attention has been devoted to the important matters of Script and Pronunciation. For those who value such things a phonetic transcript of every word used in the exercises and of the Russian exercises themselves is given. As for the system of phonetics adopted, it will be found to be approximately exact, though, especially with regard to the representation of certain unaccented vowels, there may be occasional and considerable divergence of opinion.

The Vocabularies at the end of the book are, it is hoped, complete. Users of the book will welcome the arrangement of the general Russian-English vocabulary of verbs.

The total number of words employed is considerable, but as the main purpose of this volume is to impress on the memory the essential forms of the language, the forms that must be mastered by the learner, there is a good deal of deliberate iteration in the exercises.

For illustrations of many kinds indebtedness is acknowledged first of all to Tolstoi's «Азбука» and «Книги для чтенія», which 'Primer' and 'Readers' have exercised a very marked influence on the substance and arrangement of many a Russian school-book published since Tolstoi gave up his experiments as a dominie.

Secondly, reference has been made to many admirable books issued in Russia with the approval of the Russian Government for the teaching of Russian to foreign children in Russian schools. Three series of this kind that deserve to become widely known among those interested in the teaching of Russian are :

Михеевъ, «Книги для чтенія», published by the Центральная Типографіа in Kazan;

Дависъ, «Родной Міръ», published by К. Г. Зихманъ in Riga;

Вольперъ, «Русская Рѣчь», published by the author in Petrograd.

While he is alone responsible for the plan of the book and whatever faults it may still contain, the compiler gratefully expresses his sense of obligation to his friend Mr James Melville, of George Heriot's School, in whose company he began the study of Russian, and who has kindly read the proofs of this book. Finally, for the care he has taken with the printing more than a word of thanks is due to Messrs. R. & R. Clark's reader.

R. T. C.

EDINBURGH, September 1917

# CONTENTS

										1	PAGE
PREFACI	E	•					٠				5
INTROD	UCT	ION									13
			.—Th								13
PAR.	III.	-Pho	netic &	Symbo	ls used						15
PAR.	IV.	-Hare	and and	Soft \	Vowels						16
PAR.	V	-Voice	d and	Voice	less Co	nsonar	nts.				16
PAR.	VI.	-Pror	unciat	ion							16
PAR.	VII	Cor	itents	of Pai	rs. VIII	-XX					17
Pars	. VI	II-XX	K.—Ex	ample	s and P	honeti	e Valu	es of tl	he Lett	ers 17	-31
					learnin						31
PAR.	XX	III.—S	umma	ry of	Regular	Forn	1S .			32	-35
SUGGEST	[10]	NS FOR	R THE	Use o	F THIS	Воок					36

### LESSONS I-LVI

As Pronouns are used in every Lesson, beginning with the first, they are not often separately mentioned in headings of Lessons.

#### I. PAST TENSE OF VERB

#### 1. MASCULINE AND NEUTER NOUNS IN SINGULAR

LESSON

I.	Typical Masculine Nominative Singular Noun (hard fo	orm)	and	
	Adjective. "Is," "is not".			37
II.	Masculine Singular Past Tense. Nominative Singular of 1	Pron	ouns,	
	Personal, Possessive, Interrogative		•	-38
III.	Genitive, Dative, and Accusative of Nouns in T. Pronou	ins		41
IV.	Use of y with Genitive to translate "to have".			44
	Masculine Noun-Soft Forms in B and ii. Genitive af			
	три, четы́ре			45
VI.	Genitive in Negative and Partitive Forms. Infinitive			47
VII.	Neuter Nouns in o, e—Four Cases. Neuter Adjectives.	Cer	tain	
	General Rules of Orthography			49

10	CONTENTS	
LESSON	Number Dark Warren Deflecter Weltersterrenzen Det	PAGE
V 111.	Neuter Past Tense. Reflexive Verb нра́виться. Dative	
	with къ	51
IX.	ходи́лъ and шёлъ. Idioms with Infinitive. Complete Declen-	
	sion of Maseuline and Neuter Nouns. Instrumental Case	53
Х.	Prepositional Case. Forms in	56
XI.	Revision of Pronouns	59
	-50.—Accentuation of Masculine and Neuter Nouns that have	
	occurred. Lists	61
PAR. 51	-Prepositions that have occurred	61
	*	
0		
2.	MASCULINE, FEMININE, AND NEUTER NOUNS IN SINGULAR	
XII.	Feminine Nouns in a and я. Rules of Orthography .	62
	Feminine Adjectives. оди́нъ, одна́, одно́	63
	Feminine Form of Past Tense. Pronouns	65
AV.	Prepositions въ and на. Compounds of шёлъ	66
XVI.	Same subjects as last Lesson : Accusative and Prepositional	
		~ ~

	Cases	•					· .	68
XVII.	Feminine							-70
XVIII.	Idiomatic	Uses o	f Instr	umenta	al Case			71
XIX.	Prepositio	ons with	n Genit	ive				73

#### 3. Complete Declension of Noun and Adjective

PARS. 72-79.—Nouns that have occurred classified according to Form	
and Accentuation of Plural. Lists	76
XX. Plural of Past Tense. Pronouns. Adjectives. Suggestions	
for the learning of the Plurals of Nouns and ineidentally for	
the impressing of the Voeabulary in Lessons I-XIX .	81
XXI. Plurals and Pronouns	84
XXII. мать and дочь. Preposition по with Dative	85
XXIII. Complete Declension of the Adjective. Forms in ый, ая, ое,	
and о́й, а́я, о́е	87
XXIV. Deelension of Adjective in iй, яя, ее	89
XXV. Declension of Adjective in кій, кая, кое	-90
XXVI. Declension of Adjective in чій, чая, чее	-91
XXVII. A few very common Irregular Past Tenses. шёлъ and	
ъ́халъ. Translation of 'from'	92
XXVIII. Prepositions go and upo. Indefinite 3rd Plural. Passive	
Voice. Reflexive Pronoun	95
XXIX. Pronouns: cBóii and forms similarly declined	98
XXX. Dative, Instrumental, and Prepositional Plurals of Nouns and	
Adjectives	101
XXXI. Some Useful Idioms	102

CONTENTS	11
PARS. 117–119.—List of Nouns occurring for the first time in Lessons XX–XXXI, classified according to Form and Accentua-	PAGE
PAR. 120.—Prepositions that have occurred	104 106
II. FUTURE AND PRESENT TENSES	
PARS. 121, 122.—Lists of Verbs that have occurred elassified (1) according	
to Aspect—A Imperfective, B Perfective; (2) under A, according to form of Present Tense	106
1. FUTURE TENSE	
XXXII. Future of быть. Future of any A Verb XXXIII. Complete Plurals of Personal Pronouns XXXIV. Time Phrases	108     109     110
2. Present Tense of I A Verbs	
XXXV. Endings of Present Tense ; Two Main Types. Present Tense	
оf дѣлать Туре	$\frac{112}{115}$
3. Present Tense of II A Verbs	
XXXVII. Туре стою, стои́шь. Distinction between сидѣть and	
сади́ться. Sequence of Tenses	117
XXXVIII. Туре сто́ю, сто́ишь. Numerals 11-19         . </td <td><math>120 \\ 122</math></td>	$120 \\ 122$
XL. Genitive Plural of Feminine Nouns. Numerals 100–1000.	144
Adverbs of Quantity	124
XLI. Revision—Past, Present, Future	127
4. Present Tense of I A Verbs with Consonantal Stem, or Stem in Ť	
XLII. Туре живу́, живёшь. Various Forms of Infinitive. ходи́ть	1.20
and итти́.         Compounds of итти́, their Future Tense           XL111.         Monosyllabie         Verbs: ПИТЬ; жать.         Ordinal Numerals           1st-19th         .         .         .         .         .	129 133
XLIV. Туре нишу́, пи́шешь. Regular Consonantal Changes.	100
Ordinal Numerals 20th-100th         .<	136
XLV. Genitive Plural of Neuter Nouns	139
XXXII-XLV	140

#### CONTENTS

Lessons which may be read at any time after Lesson XX, though the exercises cannot be worked with any satisfaction till after Lesson XLVI.

XLVII.	On Numerals—Declension, etc.	Ord	inal Nu	nerals	from 1	00th	PAGE
	upwards						142
XLVIII.	Verbs governing Instrumental						146
XLIX.	Predicative Adjective .						149
L.	Comparison of Adjectives .			•			152

#### III. THE ASPECTS OF THE VERB

LI. Explanation of this feature of the Russian Verb. Illustrative	
Passages with Translation	155
LII. The Imperative. Salutations. Distinction between Imper-	
fective and Perfective Imperative. Verbs in Vocabulary	
grouped in Classes according to formation of Aspects .	164
LIII. Declension of время. Verbs ѣсть, ѣхать, хотѣть.	
Conditional. Verbs in Vocabulary grouped as in Lesson LII	168
LIV. Verbs in OBATL and LIBATL. Mixture of Tenses. 'Whether.'	
Verbs grouped as in Lesson LII	172
LV. Declension of дитя́ and ребёнокъ. Nouns in анинъ. Verb	
дава́ть. Verbs grouped as in Lesson LII	176
LVI. Long and Short. Construction with Verbs of Wishing and	
Fearing. Distinction between самъ and са́мый .	180
LIST OF PREPOSITIONS	185
LIST OF ADJECTIVES showing Form and Accentuation of Predicative .	186
EXAMPLES OF PREDICATIVE COMPARATIVE IN C	188
A FEW IRREGULAR VERBS	189
EXAMPLES OF RUSSIAN SCRIPT	190
PHONETIC TRANSCRIPT OF THE EXERCISES	194
INCLUDE INMUSERIE OF THE LANCESES	101
VOCABULARIES:	
	210
	217
	229
INDEX	946
AATA-AAA	UTW

I. THE Russian alphabet is called the Cyrillic, as its creation is rightly or wrongly ascribed to St. Cyril, a Greek missionary of the ninth century who carried Christianity to the Slavs of Macedonia. This alphabet is based on the Greek capitals. It includes a few letters corresponding to Latin characters of similar form, a few more that have the form but not the value of Latin symbols, and several entirely new symbols that must have been invented.

As applied to modern Russian the alphabet is, for various historical reasons, by no means perfect in its approximation to the phonetic ideal. It is, however, for the purpose of representing a Slav tongue far better adapted than the Latin character, for, once the Cyrillic alphabet is mastered, it is seen that the words are neither so long nor so barbarous in appearance in their native dress as when transliterated for English readers. The Czechs, Poles, and other Northern Slavs (exclusive of the Russians) use the Latin character, while the Russians, Bulgars, Serbs, and most other Southern Slavs use the Cyrillic.

#### II. THE ALPHABET

	rinted aracters	Itali Charact		Phonetic Symbols	
Α,	a (VIII) <sup>1</sup>	Α,	a	[a] [A]	
Б,	б (хіу)	Б,	б	[b] [b]	
В,	B (XIV)	Β,	в	[v][v]	
Γ,	г (xv)	Γ,	S	[g] [ġ] [ɡ]	
Д,	д (XVI)	Д,	д	[d] [d]	
Ε,	e (1X)	E,	е	[jɛ] [je] [jə]	

<sup>1</sup> Paragraph in which illustrations of the phonetic value of each letter will be found. Specimens of script are given at pages 190–193.

Printed Characters	Italic Characters	Phonetic Symbols
Ë, ë (XI)	$\ddot{E}, \ddot{e}$	[jo]
Ж, ж (хүш)	Ж, ж	[3]
З, з (хvп)	3, 3	[z] [ż]
И, и (х)	И, и	[i]
I, $i(x)$	I, i	[i]
Й, й (x)	<i>Й</i> , й	[ĭ]
К, к (xv)	$K, \kappa$	[k] [k]
Л, л (хх)	Л, л	
М, м (хіх)	М, м	[n] [m]
H, $H(XIX)$	Н, н	[n] [n]
0, 0 (XI)	0, 0	
П, п (хіу)	О, 0 П, п	[v] [x] [ġ] [ġ]
P, $p(xx)$	<b>D</b>	[r] [ř]
C, c ( $xvm$ )	P, p C, c	
T, т (хvі)	T, m	[s] [s] [t] [t]
У, у (хп)		[v] [c] [u]
$\Phi, \phi(xiv)$	$\begin{array}{ccc} \mathcal{Y}, & \mathcal{Y} \\ \Phi, & \phi \end{array}$	[f] [f]
$\Phi$ , $\psi$ (XIV) X, x (XV)	$\begin{array}{c} \varphi, & g \\ X, & x \end{array}$	
		[X]
	Ц, ц Ч, ч	[ts] [ts]
		[tʃ]
Ш, ш (xviii)		[ <u>\</u> ]
Щ, щ (хүш)	Щ,щ Ъ, ъ	[ʃtʃ]
Ъ, ъ (хпп)		None
Ы, ы (x)	Ы, ы	[ï]
Ь, ь (хіп)	Ь, ь Ф. т	[∴][j]
Ъ, ѣ (IX)	Ъ, го	[jɛ] [je] [jə] [jo]
Э, э (IX)	$\partial, \partial$	[ɛ] [e]
IO, 10 (XII)	IO, 10	[ju]
Я, я (vm)	Я, я	[ja] [jʌ] [jə]
$\Theta, \Theta (XIV)$	$\theta, \theta$	[f] [ř]
V, v this letter	is another 'i'; it is	no longer in use.

There is no h, no w, no x; these are usually represented by  $\Gamma$ , B, RC respectively. Certain symbols are redundant, *e.g.* i,  $\mathfrak{H}$ , and others have to stand for more than one distinct sound.

III. The phonetic symbols employed in the transcript are as follows :

#### VOWELS

- [a] as in 'father.'
- [A] as in 'another.'
- [ɛ] as in 'them.'
- [e] as in 'they.'
- [ə] as in 'mother.'
- [i] as in 'bit' (but see Par. X, note 1).
- [i] as in 'been.'
- [ĭ] second half of diphthong in words like 'boy,' 'my,' 'try.'
- [o] as in 'yon.'
- [u] as in 'too.'
- [j] to represent sound of English y before any vowel.
- [-] The dot placed over any consonant indicates that the consonant is to be pronounced 'soft,' *i.e.* to be palatalized (French *mouillé*).
- [()<sup>i</sup>] added to a vowel indicates that a very faint i is audible just before the succeeding consonant.

Consonants

LABIALS ( $\vec{0}$ ,  $\vec{n}$ ,  $\vec{B}$ ,  $\vec{\Phi}$ ,  $\vec{\Theta}$ ).

- [b] as in 'booty,' [b] as in 'beauty.' [p] as in 'pat,' [p] as in 'pure.'
- [v] as in 'van,' [v] as in 'view.' [f] as in 'far,' [f] as in 'few.'

GUTTURALS (F, K, X).

- [g] as in 'good,' [ġ] as in 'figurative.'
- [g] voiced form of ch which is sometimes written in English gh (North German 'wegen' with the g aspirated).
- [k] as in 'kick,' [k] as in 'Kew.'
- [x] as in 'ich' (German), softer than ch in 'loch.'

DENTALS (Д, Т, Ц).

[d] as in 'done,' [d] as in 'due.' [t] as in 'tool,' [t] as in 'tune.'

SIBILANTS (1) (3, C).

[z] as in 'maze'; [z] as in '(he) sees you' spoken as one word.

[s] as in 'loss'; [s] as in 'disunion.'

(2) (ж, ш, ч, щ).

 $[\int]$  as in 'hush'; [3] as in 'azure.' (Cf. Par. XVIII.)

NASALS (M, H).

- [m] as in 'man'; [m] as in 'muse.' [n] as in 'none'; [m] as in 'news.' LIQUIDS (л, р).
- [1] as in 'cattle'; [1] as in 'million.' [r] as in 'Russia'; [r] as in 'Harriet.'

IV. Russian Vowels fall into two exactly corresponding series called hard vowels and soft vowels. This distinction is most important, as it meets one at every turn in Russian orthography, and the observation of the exact correspondence will reduce by one half the labour of memorizing conjugations and declensions.

The hard vowels are:

a  $[\alpha] \rightarrow [\varepsilon] \text{ or } [e] \qquad H[i] \qquad O[o] \qquad y[u]$ The soft or palatal vowels corresponding are :

я [ja] e, ѣ [jɛ] or [je] и, i, й [i] [ĭ] ё [jo] ю [ju]

There are, further, two signs that occupy much space in Russian printing, viz. ъ and ь: ъ is called the 'hard' sign, and indicates merely the absence of ь, the 'soft' sign. (See Par. XIII.)

No Russian word is written with a consonant as the last letter : a word must end in a vowel or in ъ or ь. These two signs were themselves originally vowels.

V. It is often convenient to distinguish voiceless consonants  $(\Pi, \phi, \kappa, x, \tau, c, \mu)$  from voiced consonants  $(\delta, B, \Gamma, \Gamma [g], \Pi, 3, \pi)$ , while certain consonants  $(\mathcal{H}, \mu, \mathcal{H}, \mu)$ , are by nature soft, in the sense that they tend to palatalize even the hard vowels.

#### VI. PRONUNCIATION

The articulation of the individual sounds in Russian is not so difficult for an English-speaking person as is the correct production of French sounds. The one serious difficulty in Russian pronunciation lies in the fact that Russian more than other European tongues resembles English in two important respects : the accent is variable, and only the accented vowels have their full normal value. That is to say, in order to pronounce a Russian word with a semblance of correctness, one must know on which syllable the accent falls, and bear in mind that unaccented vowels are for the most part short and relatively obscure, though long compound words often have what may be called a secondary accent. Voiced consonants standing before final ъ or ь tend to become voiceless (see preceding paragraph), but this tendency should not be exaggerated, especially in monosyllables.

In Paragraphs VIII to XX numerous examples illustrating all ordinary combinations of letters are given.

VII. The following pages, Par. VIII to Par. XX, show for every letter of the alphabet :

(1) Printed Character

(2) Italic

(3) Russian Name

(4) Phonetic Value

Examples. Explanatory notes.

The letters of the Alphabet are arranged in the following order : *Vowels*:

а, я (Par. VIII); э, е, ѣ (Par. IX); ы, и, і, ї (Par. X); о, ё (Par. XI); у, ю (Par. XII); ъ, ь (Par. XIII).

Consonants :

Labials (Par. XIV). Gutturals (Par. XV). Dentals (Par. XVI). Sibilants (1) (Par. XVII); (2) (Par. XVIII). Nasals (Par. XIX). Liquids (Par. XX).

VIII. (1) A a, A  $\alpha$ . Name : a. Value : [ $\alpha$ ] (accented), [ $\Lambda$ ] (unaccented).

Англія	Англія	[ánglija (lja)]1	England
показа́лъ	показалъ	[p.k.zát] <sup>2,1</sup>	he showed
каранда́шъ	карандашъ	[kʌrʌndá∫] <sup>2,1</sup>	pencil
часово́й ·	часовой	[t∫∆s∆vóĭ] <sup>3</sup>	sentry
жара́	ысара	[ʒʌrá] <sup>3</sup>	heat

<sup>1</sup> 'a' when accented has the sound of a in 'father,' = [a].

<sup>2</sup> 'a' when not accented has the sound of a or o in 'another,' =  $[\Lambda]$ .

<sup>3</sup> 'a' when unaccented after the consonants  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$  retains so little of the original open [a] sound that it might often be rendered by the symbol [ə]; *i.e.* it becomes almost as obscure as the last vowel of 'another.' But it has been thought advisable not to insist on this refinement in the phonetic transcript.

Soft vowel corresponding to 'a':

(2) Я я, Я я. Name: я. Value: [jo] (accented), [jл, jə] (unaccented).

(This vowel never follows r, K, X, H, H, III, III.)

Япенія	Японія	[jəpónijʌ (njʌ)] <sup>2, 3</sup>	Japan
я́года	ягода	[jágʌdʌ] <sup>1</sup>	berry
язы́къ	языкъ	[jəzîk] <sup>2</sup>	tongue
ея́	ея	[jəjó, jəjá] <sup>4</sup>	of her, her
запря́гъ	запрягъ	[zʌpŕók] <sup>4</sup>	he yoked
у́чится	учится	[út∫itsʌ] <sup>5</sup>	learns

<sup>1</sup> 'A' when accented has the sound of ya as in 'yak,'=[j $\alpha$ ,  $\div \alpha$ ]. <sup>2</sup> 'A' when unaccented has the sound of ye in 'lawyer,' =[j $\partial$ ,  $\div \partial$ ]. <sup>3</sup> 'A' in the unaccented terminations -A, -iA in nouns =[j $\Lambda$ ]. <sup>4</sup> 'A' in a very few words has the value of yo in 'yon,' =[jo,  $\div o$ ]. <sup>5</sup> 'A' in the syllable -CA of reflexive verbs =[ $\Lambda$ ].

IX. (1)	Ээ, Ээ. Name:	э оборо́тное (e reversed).	Value: [ɛ, e].
Эстля́ндія	Эстляндія	[estlándija (dja)] <sup>2</sup>	Esthonia
э́тотъ	этотъ	[état] <sup>1</sup>	this, that
э́ти	эти	[éṫi] <sup>2</sup>	these, those
эмигра́нтъ	эмигрантъ	[emigránt] <sup>2</sup>	emigrant

<sup>1</sup> ' $\vartheta$ ' before a consonant or a group of consonants followed by the hard sign or any hard vowel has the open sound of the vowel in 'them,' = [ $\varepsilon$ ].

<sup>2</sup> ' $\vartheta$ ' before a consonant or a group of consonants followed by the soft sign or by any soft vowel has the close sound of the vowel in 'they,' 'hate,'=[e].\*

Soft vowels corresponding to ' ':

(2) E e, E e. Name: e. Value:  $[j\varepsilon, je]$  (accented),  $[j\overline{\rho}, -\overline{\rho}]$  (unaccented).

Евро́па	Eвропа	[jəvrópʌ] <sup>3</sup>	Europe
мéлочь	мелочь	[méłʌt∫]¹	trifle
весь	весь	[ves] or [ves] <sup>2</sup>	all, whole
скаме́йка	скамейка	[skaméĭka] <sup>2</sup>	bench, seat
мо́ре	море	[mórə] <sup>3</sup>	sea

<sup>1</sup> 'c' when accented and preceding a consonantal group followed by the hard sign or a hard vowel has the open sound of ye in 'yet,' =  $[j_{\varepsilon}, \div \varepsilon]$ .

<sup>2</sup> 'e' when accented and preceding a consonantal group followed by the soft sign or any soft vowel has the close sound of the vowel in 'yea,' =[je,  $\div$  e]. <sup>3</sup> 'e' when unaccented has the value of 'ye' in 'lawyer'=[jə,  $\div$  ə].

unaccented has the value of 'ye' in 'lawyer = [j=, -

For the value of 'ë' see Par. XI (2).

\* Care must be taken not to pronounce this sound like the Southern English E<sup>1</sup> or E<sup>1</sup>. Russian vowels are pure vowels, NOT diphthongs.

ѣ́здить	ъздить	[jézdit]	to ride, drive, travel
Ѣ҆дущій	ъдущій	[jźdu[t[i]	travelling, traveller
ълъ	толъ	[jɛt]	he ate
фсть	ъсть	[jest]	to eat
тяжелѣе	тяжелње	[təʒəléjə]	heavier
<b>Ъзд</b> о́къ	17320175	[jəzdók]	traveller, passenger
ви́дѣть	видъть	[vídət]	to see
звѣ́зды	звъзды	[zvózdĭ] <sup>1</sup>	stars
цвѣлъ	цвълъ	[tsvot]1	was blooming
<b>г</b> нѣ́зда	<i>гн</i> љзда	[gnósdʌ] <sup>1</sup>	nests
пріобрѣ́лъ	пріобрълъ	[přiabřóř] <sup>1</sup>	he obtained
сѣ́дла	съдла	[śódłʌ]¹	saddles

(3) Ъѣ, Бъ. Name: ять. Value: same as that of 'e.'

This letter is superfluous, as it has no sound which is not also represented by 'e.'

It has the sounds [jɛ, je, jə] according to the same rules as 'c.'

<sup>1</sup> In a few words ' $\pm$ ' has the sound of ' $\ddot{e}$ ,' =[jo,  $\pm o$ ], for which see Par. XI (2).

X. (1) Ыы, Ыы. Name: еры. Value: [ї].

(This vowel is never initial and never follows г, к, х, ж, ч, ш, щ.)

ты	ты	[tï] <sup>1</sup>	thou
мыть	мыть	[mïṫ] <sup>1</sup>	to wash
мыча́ть	мычать	[mït∫á <sup>i</sup> ṫ]¹	to low, bellow
быть	быть	[bït] <sup>1</sup>	to be
бытово́й	бытовой	[bïtʌvóĭ] <sup>1</sup>	taken from real life
вы́лить	вълить	[vílit] <sup>1</sup>	to pour out
ста́рый	старый	[stúri] <sup>2</sup>	old
ка́менный	каменный	[kánənï] <sup>2</sup>	made of stone

ĸ

<sup>1</sup> 'bi,' accented or unaccented, is a vowel not difficult to imitate from the living voice, but not so easily described. We have it as an unaccented vowel in the second syllable of 'pretty.' As an accented vowel it is very nearly equivalent to the vowel of the first syllable of 'pretty,' as pronounced in the south of England, or more exactly, it is almost identical with the thick, slovenly utterance of the vowel *i* heard in some parts of Scotland in 'b*i*t' and 'f*i*t,' = [ $\ddot{i}$ ].

<sup>2</sup> In the termination of the masculine singular of the adjective this sound is theoretically prolonged by the half-vowel ii, but the practical effect is so slight that it has been ignored in the transcript.

Soft vowels corresponding to 'ы':

(2) И и,	И u. Name:	і двойное (і	double). Value: [i]
Ита́лія	Италія	[itálijʌ (ĺjʌ)] <sup>1</sup>	Italy
и́ва	ива	$[iv_{\Lambda}]^1$	willow
смо́тритъ	смотритъ	[smótrit] <sup>1</sup>	he looks (at)
жизнь	жизнь	[ʒïzń] <sup>2</sup>	life
ши́рма	ширма	[∫îrmʌ] <sup>2</sup>	screen
ихъ	ux5	[ix, jix] <sup>3</sup>	them, of them
имъ	имъ	[im, jim] <sup>3</sup>	to them
и́ми	11M11	[ími, jími] <sup>3</sup>	(with) them

<sup>1</sup> 'H' has the sound of ee in 'deem,' =[i], the d being pronounced as in 'duty.' Like all other vowels it is short when unaccented.

<sup>2</sup> 'II' after II,  $\mathcal{H}$ , III is pronounced like  $\mathbf{H}$  [I]. After  $\mathbf{Y}$  and III this modification is not quite so noticeable and 'i' has been kept in the transcript.

<sup>3</sup> Only in the last three words has initial 'u' the sound [ji].

(3) I i, I i. Name: і съ то́чкой (i with a dot). Value: [i].

(This letter never stands before consonants.)

Іису́съ	Iuсусъ	[iisús] <sup>1</sup>	Jesus
ію́нь	іюнь	[ijú <sup>i</sup> ň, ju <sup>i</sup> ň] <sup>1</sup>	June
іюль	іюль	[ijú <sup>i</sup> ], ju <sup>i</sup> ] <sup>1</sup>	July
Россія	Россія	[rʌśíjʌ] <sup>1</sup>	Russia
зна́ніе	знаніе	[znáňjə] <sup>2</sup>	knowledge
міръ	міръ	[mir] <sup>3</sup>	world, peasant village
миръ	миръ	[mir] <sup>3</sup>	peace [community

<sup>1</sup> 'i' has the same value as H; it replaces H before vowels; =[i].

<sup>2</sup> The termination '-ie' might also have been rendered by [-ijə], but in natural rapid speech the [i] is so short that the dotted consonant +[jə] seems adequate to represent this combination.

<sup>3</sup> 'i' stands before a consonant in the one word мipъ, 'worid,' to distinguish it from миръ, 'peace.'

(4) Й й, Й й. Name: й съ кра́ткой (i with a short mark). Value: [ĭ].

(This letter is never initial; it always stands after a vowel, forming a diphthong with it.)

май	май	[mɑĭ] <sup>1</sup>	May
capáñ	сарай	[sʌráĭ] <sup>1</sup>	cart-shed
домбіі	домой	[dʌmóĭ] <sup>1</sup>	homeward
война́	война	[ <b>v</b> ∧ĭná]¹	war

уйдётъ	уйдётъ	[uĭḋót]1	he will go away
чей?	чей?	[tʃéĭ] <sup>1</sup>	whose ?
ста́рый	старый	[stári] <sup>2</sup>	old
яйцо́	яйцо	[jĭtsó, jətsó] <sup>3</sup>	egg
послу́шайте !	послушайте !	[p.stújətə] <sup>3</sup>	listen !

<sup>1</sup> ' it ' added to a vowel turns it into a diphthong [aĭ, oĭ, uĭ, ctc.]; compare English ' buy,' ' boy.'

2 'it' added to  $\mathbf{H}$  and i makes in natural discourse so slight a change that it has been ignored in the transcript.

<sup>3</sup> 'it' added to unaccented a,  $\pi$ , e, gives an indistinct sound which can be rendered by [ $\ni$ ] or [1].

XI. (1) O o, O o. Name: o. Value: [o] (accented), [ $\Lambda$ ] (unaccented).

(When unaccented, 'o' is replaced by 'e' after ж, ч, ш, щ, ц.)

бльга	Ольга	[ó <sup>i</sup> ]gʌ] <sup>1</sup>	Olga
тво́й	твой	[tvoĭ] <sup>1</sup>	thy
геро́й	герой	[ġəróĭ] <sup>1</sup>	hero
этого	этого	$[\acute{\epsilon}t_{\Lambda}v_{\Lambda}]^2$	of that
пло́хо	плохо	[płóxʌ] <sup>2</sup>	badly
плохо́й	плохой	[pł.\xóĭ] <sup>2, 1</sup>	bad
хорошо́	хорошо	[xArA∫ó] <sup>2, 1</sup>	well

<sup>1</sup> 'o' accented has the sound of o in 'yon,' = [o].

<sup>2</sup> 'o' unaccented has the sound of o in 'other,' = [ $\Lambda$ ]. Russian 'o' is always open as in 'yon' or 'other'; it never has the value of the rounded o in 'home,' 'bone.'

Soft vowel corresponding to 'o':

(2) Ë ë, J	<mark>Ë ë.</mark> Name: ë	. Value: [jo,	́o].
ёжится	ёжится	[jóʒïtsʌ]	it shrivels up
жёлтый	жёлтый	[ʒóltī]	yellow
лёгъ	лёгъ	[log]	he lay down
счётъ	счётъ	[st∫ot]	account
шёлъ	<u>้ แ</u> ёлъ	[∫ot]	he went
вёзъ	вёзъ	[voz, vos]	he conveyed (in a vehicle)
возъ	<u>603</u> 5	[voz, vos]	cart-load

'ë' is always accented, *i.e.* 'e' when accented often = [jo,  $\div$ o]. The occurrence of this sound should be carefully noted, as it is only in books for beginners that accents and diacritics are used; in ordinary Russian printing they do not appear, and there is nothing to distinguish 'e' from 'ë.'

XII. (1)	Уу, Уу.	Name: y. Valu	ıe : [u].
Укра́йна	Украйна	[ukráĭnʌ]	Ukraine
ýxo	yxo	[úxA]	ear
уѣ́хать	уъхать	[ujéxst]	to drive away
уедине́ніе	уединеніе	[ujədinenjə]	lone liness
уйти́	уйти	[uĭṫí]	to go away
бýду	буду	[búdu]	I shall be
туда́	my∂a	[tudá]	thither

'y' always has the sound of *oo* in 'too,' = [u]. The only difference between the accented and the unaccented vowel is one of quantity, the unaccented vowel being very short.

Soft vowel corresponding to 'y':

(2) IO 10, IO 10. Name: 10. Value: [ju, -u].

(In native Russian words this vowel never follows г, к, х, ж, ч, ш, щ.)

Ю́рьевъ	Юрьевъ	[júrjəf] <sup>1</sup>	Dorpat (city)
югъ	1022	[jug, juk]	south
сюда́	сюда	[sudá]	hither
ю́ноша	юноша	[júnʌʃʌ]	a youth
люблю́	люблю	[lublú]	I love
юсти́ція	юстиція	[justítsja]	justice, law
ню́хать	нюхать	[núxʌt]	to smell (trans.)
Гюго́	Гюго	[ġugó] <sup>2</sup>	Hugo

<sup>1</sup> ' $\omega$ ' always has the sound of u in 'use,' = [ju, -u]. As with 'y,' the corresponding hard vowel, the difference between ' $\omega$ ' accented and unaccented is one of quantity only.

<sup>2</sup> '10' is used to transliterate French u and German  $\ddot{u}$ .

XIII. (1) Ъъ, Ъъ. Name: еръ, от твёрдый знакъ (hard sign). Value: [none].

(This sign is never initial; it never follows a vowel.)

братъ	братъ	[brat]	brother
садъ	садъ	[sad, sat]	garden
объёмъ	объёмъ	[Abjóm]	extent, size
шутъ	шутъ	[∫ut]	buffoon, joker
изъявление	изъявленіе	[isjəvlénjə]	testimony

Examples will be given with each of the consonants showing the use of this hard sign, which was originally a vowel, but is really a superfluous character in the modern tongue, for it merely indicates that the L, or soft sign, is not present.

The distinction between лъ and ль is particularly important (see Par. XX).

(2) Ь ь, *Ь ь*. Name: ерь or мя́гкій знакъ (soft sign). Value: [ –, j, or nil].

(This sign is never initial; it never follows a vowel, or  $\Gamma$ ,  $\kappa$ ,  $\chi$ .)

чуть	чуть	[t∫u <sup>i</sup> t] <sup>1</sup>	hardly
говори́ть	говорить	[gavaiit] <sup>1</sup>	to speak
сядь!	сядь!	[šá <sup>i</sup> t] <sup>1</sup>	sit down !
весь	весь	$[\dot{v}e\dot{s}]^2$	all, whole
ма́ленькій	маленькій	[múĺəňki] <sup>2</sup>	small
любо́вь	<u>любовь</u>	[ĺubóif] <sup>3</sup>	love
день	день	[dein] <sup>3</sup>	day
ружьё	ружьё	[ruʒjó] <sup>4</sup>	arm, rifle
льва	льва	[İva] <sup>5</sup>	of the lion
рожь	рожь	[ro∫] <sup>6</sup>	rye

 $^{\circ}$  b,' the soft sign, is very important, as it may not only alter the value of the consonant preceding, but very often, especially with H,  $\pi$  and T, may affect the preceding vowel.

<sup>1</sup> The consonant preceding the b is softened by the suggestion of a very slight [jə], which however must not be made into an extra syllable. The consonants which show most clearly the difference between the effects of the hard and soft signs are  $\pi$ , H,  $\tau$ . Examples are given with the various consonants to illustrate this point, the effect of the soft sign being indicated by [-].

<sup>2</sup> After some final consonants and when occurring between two consonants its effect is very slight, except in as far as it may modify the preceding yowel.

<sup>3</sup> In many cases its effect is noticeable on the preceding vowel to which it adds a *very* short [ĭ]. (Cf. French 'Espagne.') When this effect is decided, it is marked in the transcript by  $[a^i][a^i]$ , etc.

<sup>4</sup> When the b serves to separate clearly a vowel from the preceding consonant, it has been indicated by the use of [j].

<sup>5</sup> The absence of b in JbBa would indicate the hard [†] (see Par. XIII (1)).

<sup>6</sup> After the consonants ж, ч, ш, щ, the ь has no effect.

XIV.	Бб, <i>Б</i> б. N	Name: 6e. Value:	[b, b].
Болга́рія	Болгарія	[bʌt͡ɡáɨɨjʌ (ɨjʌ)]	<sup>1</sup> Bulgaria
бу́лка	булка	[búłkʌ] <sup>1</sup>	roll (of bread)
бёрце	бёрце	[bórtsə] <sup>2</sup>	shin, tibia
бе́й!	бей!	[beĭ] <sup>2</sup>	beat !
зубъ	зубъ	[zup] <sup>3</sup>	tooth
зыбь	зыбь	[zïp] <sup>3</sup>	swell, ripple

<sup>1</sup> ' $\tilde{0}$ ' before any hard vowel sounds as b in 'booty,' = [b].

<sup>2</sup> '**6**' before any soft vowel sounds as b in 'beauty,' = [b].

<sup>3</sup> '6' final resembles p rather than b, =[p]. The distinction between  $\mathbf{6}\mathbf{b}$  and  $\mathbf{6}\mathbf{b}$  is not perceptible.

В в, В в.	Name: Be.	Value: [v, v].	
Вене́ція	Венеція	[vənétsija (sja)] <sup>2</sup>	Venice
вы́дать	выдать	[vid <sub>A</sub> t] <sup>1</sup>	to betray
вить	вить	[vit] 2	to wind
впасть	впасть	[fpast] <sup>3, 5</sup>	to fall in
въ комнатъ	въ комнатиъ	[fkómnatə] <sup>3, 5</sup>	in the room
Рома́новъ	Pомановъ	[rʌmánʌf] <sup>4</sup>	Roman of
любо́вь	любовь	[lubó <sup>i</sup> f] <sup>4</sup>	love
внукъ	впикъ	[vnuk] <sup>5</sup>	grands on

<sup>1</sup> 'B' before any hard vowel sounds as v in 'van,' =  $\lceil v \rceil$ .

<sup>2</sup> 'B' before any soft vowel sounds as v in 'view,' =  $\lceil v \rceil$ .

 $^3$  'B' is sounded [f] before any voiceless consonant, *i.e.* before p, t, k, etc. There is no difficulty in making this distinction; English-speaking people make it instinctively.

<sup>4</sup> 'B' when final = [f]. The distinction between Bb and Bb when final is negligible, except in so far as the preceding vowel may be affected.

<sup>5</sup> 'B' is often initial before consonants.

П п, П	<i>n</i> . Name: пе.	Value : [p, ṗ].	
Пётръ	Пётръ	[potr] <sup>2</sup>	Peter
па́па	nana	[pápʌ] <sup>1</sup>	papa
полъ	полъ	[pot] 1	floor
пры́гать	прыгать	[prígʌt] <sup>1</sup>	to jump about
ПЯТЬ	пять	[pá <sup>i</sup> t] <sup>2</sup>	five
пей!	neŭ!	[ṗeĭ] <sup>2</sup>	drink !
ПИТЬ	пить	[ṗiṫ] <sup>2</sup>	to drink
о снопѣ	о снопъ	[ʌsnʌṗέ] <sup>2</sup>	about the sheaf
папироса	папироса	[pʌṗirósʌ] <sup>1, 2</sup>	cigarette

<sup>1</sup> 'II' before consonants,  $\mathbf{b}$ , and hard vowels sounds as p in 'pat,' =[p]. <sup>2</sup> 'II' before  $\mathbf{b}$  and soft vowels sounds as p in 'pure,' =[ $\dot{\mathbf{p}}$ ]. The softening before II is not so noticeable as before  $\pi$ ,  $\mathbf{e}$ ,  $\mathbf{b}$ ,  $\mathbf{\ddot{e}}$ , 10.

Фф, Фф.	Name: эфъ.	Value : [f, f].	
Франція	Франція	[frántšija (šja)]	France
фапта́зія	фантазія	[fantážija (žja)]	fancy, imagination
форма	форма	[fórm.\]	form
фарфо́ръ	фарфоръ	[farfór]	porcelain
фуражка	фуражка	[furú∫k∧]	uniform cap
фыркать	фыркать	[firkAt]	to snort
философъ	டுயாலல்லுக	[fitós.f]	philosopher

' $\phi$ ' has the value of English f in 'far,' = [f], or of f in 'few,' = [f].

θ θ, θ θ.	Name: өнта́.	Value: [f, f].	
Өёдоръ	Өёдоръ	[fódʌr]	The odore
Өома́	Өома	[f.má]	Thomas
ка́оедра	каоедра	[káfədrʌ]	pulpit, teacher's desk
Өесса́лія	Өессалія	[ḟəsɑ́l <b>i</b> jʌ (ljʌ)]	Thessaly
Өеофи́лъ	Өеофилъ	[fʌfit]	Theophilus
өнта	өита	[fitá]	name of this letter

This consonant appears only in a few words of Greek origin, and in many of these even it is often replaced by  $\phi$ , which has exactly the same phonetic value.

XV. Γ г, *Г* г. Name: ге. Value: [q, q, q].\*

(This letter is never followed by я, ы, ю, ь.)

Голла́ндія	Голландія	[gatándija (dja)] 1.6	Holland
говори́ть	говорить	[gavařít] <sup>1</sup>	to speak
друго́й	другой	[drugóĭ] <sup>1</sup>	other
много	много	[mnógʌ] <sup>1</sup>	much, many
врагъ	врагъ	[vrak] <sup>2</sup>	enemy
другъ	другъ	[druk] <sup>2</sup>	friend
Бо́га	Бога	[bógʌ] <sup>8</sup>	of God
мя́гкій	мягкій	[máxki] <sup>4</sup>	soft
δοτάτατο	богатаго	[bagátava] <sup>5</sup>	of rich
большо́го	больтого	[b <sub>A</sub> il <sub>j</sub> óv <sub>A</sub> ] <sup>5</sup>	large
дома́шняго	домашняго	[damáfüava] <sup>5</sup>	domestic, tame
самого́	самого	[samavó] <sup>5</sup>	self
Викторъ Гюго́	Викторъ Гюго	[ˈtɨktʌr ġugó] <sup>6</sup>	Victor Hugo
гнило́й	гнилой	[gnitóĭ] <sup>7</sup>	decayed

<sup>1</sup> 'r' usually has the sound of g in 'good,' = [g].

<sup>2</sup> 'r' when final has the sound of k, =[k].

<sup>3</sup> 'r' in a few words is a deep aspirated voiced guttural sometimes transliterated by gh (the same as the initial g in Dutch or the aspirated German g in 'Segen'), =[g].

<sup>4</sup> Preceding a voiceless consonant (t, p, k, etc.), the sound described under (3) becomes voiceless like ch in 'loch' or more exactly like ch in German 'ich,' = [x].

<sup>5</sup> In the genitive singular termination of masculine and neuter adjectives  $(\mathbf{r}' = [\mathbf{v}])$ .

<sup>6</sup> There is no h in Russian, and although the consonant x is much nearer than r to h, this letter in foreign words has been generally transliterated by r, =[g]. The 10 transliterates French u.

<sup>7</sup> 'r' must always be pronounced, even when immediately preceding H.

\* In a very few words the dotted [j] has been used in the transcript, but the distinction is not important.

#### К к, $K \kappa$ . Name: ка. Value: [k, k].

(This letter is never followed by я, ю, ы, ь.)

	`	<i>v</i> ,	
Кита́й	Китай	[kitáĭ] <sup>1</sup>	China
ко́мната	комната	[kómnata] <sup>1</sup>	room
квасъ	квасъ	[kvas]1	kvass
къ нему́	къ нему	[kǹəmú] <sup>2</sup>	toward him
къ бе́регу	къ берегу	[gbéiəgu] <sup>2</sup>	toward the shore
кѣмъ	ктомъ	[kɛm] <sup>3</sup>	with whom
кни́га	книга	[kníga] <sup>4</sup>	book
кро́ткій	кроткій	[krótki] <sup>5</sup>	gentle

<sup>1</sup> 'R' usually has the sound of k in 'kick,' = [k].

<sup>2</sup> There are in Russian several prepositions which consist of a single consonant prefixed to the noun, and pronounced as one word with the noun. Kb is such a preposition. In some cases, as before voiced consonants (b, d, v, etc.), where the clear sharp value of k is almost impossible, the pronunciation is facilitated by taking [g] instead of [k].

<sup>3</sup> 'K' before  $\oplus$  is pronounced as in 'Kew,' = [k].

<sup>4</sup> 'K' must always be pronounced, even before H.

<sup>5</sup> The termination i i is pronounced after gutturals with a slight rounding of the lips, but as this is not sufficient to warrant the use of [i] in the transcript, [i] has been used throughout.

#### X x, X x. Name: xa. Value: [x].

(This letter is never followed by A, IO, II, L.)

Христофо́ръ	Христофоръ	[xiistAfór]	Christopher
ху́же	хуже	[xúʒə]	worse
хи́трый	хитрый	[xítrï]	cunning
хра́брый	храбрый	[xrábrï]	brave
охо́тникъ	охотникъ	[Axótnik]	sportsman
двухъ	двухъ	[dvux]	of two
/			

'x' has the sound of ch in 'loch,' or of softer ch in German 'ich,' = [x].

XVI.  $\Pi$   $\Pi$ ,  $\Pi$   $\partial$ . Name:  $\Pi$ e. Value: [d, d].

Да́нія	Данія	[dánijʌ (nˈjʌ)] <sup>1</sup>	Denmark
два	два	[dva] <sup>1</sup>	two
дя́дя	дядя	$\left[\dot{d}\dot{d}\Lambda\right]^2$	uncle
дѣдъ	$\partial r_{\circ} \partial \sigma$	[det, ded] <sup>2, 3</sup>	grandfather
будь!	будь!	[ˈbú <sup>i</sup> tˈ] <sup>3</sup>	be !

<sup>1</sup> ' $\mu$ ' before a hard vowel has the sound of d in 'done,' = [d].

<sup>2</sup> ' $\mu$ ' before a soft vowel has the sound of d in 'due,' = [d].

<sup>3</sup> ' $\mu$ ' when final, before either the hard or the soft sign, approximates to the sound of  $t_{i} = [t, \dot{t}]$ .

Тт, <i>Т</i> т.	Name: те.	Value : [t, i].	
Ту́рція	Турція	[túrtšija (šja)] <sup>1</sup>	Turkey
такъ	такъ	[tak] 1	80
твоя́	твоя	[tvajá] <sup>1</sup>	thy (fem. sing.)
братъ	братъ	[brut] <sup>1</sup>	brother
брать	брать	[bráit] <sup>2</sup>	to take
три	три	[tii] 1	three
тебя	тебя	[təbá] <sup>2</sup>	thee, of thee
мытъ	мытъ	[mït] <sup>1</sup>	washed
мыть	мыть	[mïi] <sup>2</sup>	lo wash

<sup>1</sup> 'T' before the hard sign or a hard vowel has the value of t in 'tool,' =[t]. <sup>2</sup> 'T' before the soft sign or a soft vowel has the value of t in 'tune,'

=[t].

----

Цц, Цц. Name: це. Value: [ts, ts].

(This letter is never followed by 10, 11, or by unaccented 0, which is replaced by 'e.')

Царьгра́дъ	Царьградъ	[tsʌirɡrát] 1	Constantinople
цари́ца	царица	[tsʌrítsʌ] <sup>1</sup>	czarina
цвѣтъ	цвътъ	[tsvɛt] 1	colour, flower
цы́почки	цыпочки	[tsîpʌt∫ki] ¹	tip-toes
ци́шикъ	циникъ	[tsinik] <sup>1</sup>	cynic
це́рковь	церковь	[tśśrkʌf] <sup>2</sup>	church
цѣ́лый	цюлый	[tśźłï] <sup>2</sup>	whole, entire

<sup>1</sup> 'u' has the sound of *ts* in 'bits,'=[ts].

<sup>2</sup> or the sound of ts in "it's useless," pronounced as one word, =[ts].

XV11.	33, 33. Name:	3e. Value :	$[Z, \dot{Z}].$
За́падъ	Западъ	[zápʌt] <sup>1</sup>	West
забыть	забыть	[z.bït] <sup>1</sup>	to forget
зналъ	зналъ	[znat]1	he knew
звѣрь	звторь	[zvé <sup>i</sup> ř] <sup>1</sup>	wild beast
ЗЯТЬ	зять	[żá <sup>i</sup> t] <sup>2</sup>	son-in-law, or sister's
вязъ	6язъ	[vas] <sup>3</sup>	elm [husband
вязь	вязь	[váis] <sup>3</sup>	binding

<sup>1</sup> '3' normally has the sound of z in 'maze,' = [z].

<sup>2</sup> '3' before soft vowels has the value of s in "he sees you," =  $[\dot{z}]$ .

<sup>3</sup> '3' when final before hard sign = [s], before soft sign [s] or [s].

C c, <i>C</i> c.	Name: эсъ.	Value: [s, s].	
Севасто́поль	Севастополь	[ˈsəvʌstópʌˈi] <sup>2</sup>	Sebastopol
соль	соль	[so <sup>i</sup> ] <sup>1</sup>	salt
стулъ	стулъ	[stuf] <sup>1</sup>	chair
СЪ НИМЪ	съ нимъ	[snim] <sup>1</sup>	with him
сёла	сёла	[sótʌ] <sup>2</sup>	villages
го́лосъ	20Л0C2	[gótʌs] <sup>3</sup>	voice
ОСЬ	ось	[os, os] <sup>3</sup>	axle

<sup>1</sup> 'c' normally has the value of ss in 'loss,' = [s].

<sup>2</sup> 'c' before soft vowels has the sound of s in 'disunion,' =  $[\dot{s}]$ .

<sup>3</sup> Final Cb = [s]; final Cb = [s] or  $[\dot{s}]$ .

XVIII.\* Ш ш, Ш ш. Name: ша. Value: [ʃ].

(This letter is never followed by я, ю, ы, or unaccented o.)

Шве́ція	Швеція	[∫vétšij∧ (šj∧)]	Sweden
шагъ	шагъ	[ʃak]	step
шесть	шесть	[∫est]	six
башмаки́	башмаки	[bʌ∫mʌkí]	shoes
ши́ре	шире	[∫îrə]	broader
нашъ	нашъ	[na∫]	our
фшь!	ъшь!	[je∫]	eat !
шоссе́	шоссе	[ʃʌśé] <sup>1</sup>	road
Шотла́ндія	Шотландія	[ʃʌtłẩndijʌ (djʌ)] <sup>1</sup>	Scotland

'III' has the sound of *sh* in 'swish,' =[ $\int$ ]. Compared with the corresponding English sound 'III' is more mouth-filling, and before the vowel following this consonant there is just the suggestion of a [j]. It is, along with  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$ , regarded as by nature a soft consonant.

<sup>1</sup> III may precede unaccented o in foreign words.

Ж ж, Ж ж. Name: же. Value: [5].

(This letter is never followed by A, 10, 11, or unaccented c.]

Жуко́вскій	Жуковскій	[ 3ukófski] 1	Zhukofsky
жажда	экажда	[ʒáʒdʌ] 1	thirst
жилъ	энсилъ	[ʒït] 1	he lived
положи́ть	положить	[pałazit] <sup>1</sup>	to put, lay
ло́жка	ложса	[łóʃkʌ] <sup>2</sup>	spoon
мужъ	мужъ	[mu∫] <sup>3</sup>	husband
рожь	рожь	[ro∫] <sup>3</sup>	rye

<sup>1</sup> ' $\mathcal{H}$ ' usually has the sound of s in 'measure,' = [3].

<sup>2</sup> ' $\mathfrak{K}$ ' before voiceless consonants (p, t, k, etc.) has the sound of *sh* in 'swish,' =[ $\mathfrak{f}$ ]. <sup>3</sup> Final  $\mathfrak{K}\mathfrak{b}$  or  $\mathfrak{K}\mathfrak{b}$ =[ $\mathfrak{f}$ ].

\* The French name for the consonants dealt with in this paragraph, *chuintants*, best describes them.

(This letter is never followed by *n*, 10, 11, or unaccented 0.)

Че́ховъ	Чеховъ	[t∫éx∧f]	T chech of
чай	чай	[t]áĭ]	tea
че́резъ	черезъ	[t]érəs]	through
могу́чій	могучій	[mʌgút∫i]	powerful
сургу́чъ	сургучъ	[surgút]]	sealing- $wax$
лечь	лечь	[let∫]	to lie down
что	что	[ʃto, tʃto] <sup>1</sup>	what
чортъ	чортъ	[t∫ort]	devil
чёрный	черный	[t∫órnï]	black

'4' is pronounced like ch in 'chat,' = [t $\int$ ]. Like  $\mathfrak{K}$ ,  $\mathfrak{II}$ ,  $\mathfrak{II}$ ,  $\mathfrak{II}$ , this letter is regarded as by nature a soft consonant.

<sup>1</sup> Occasionally the '4' is heard without the [t] element.

Щ, щ, Щ щ. Name: ща. Value: [\ft].

(This letter is never followed by A, 10, bi, or unaccented 0.)

Ще́пкинъ	Щепкинъ	[ʃtʃépkin]	Shtshepkin
щи	щи	[ʃtʃi]	cabbage soup
щель	щель	[ʃtʃeil]	crevice
же́нщина	женщина	[zénʃtʃinʌ]	woman
дрожа́щій	дрожащій	[drʌzá∫t∫i]	trembling
борщъ	борщъ	[borft]	beetroot soup
мощь	мощь	[mojtj]	power
щу́ка	щука	[∫t∫úk∆]	pike (fish)
щека́	щека	[∫t∫əká]	cheek

'III,' is the equivalent of  $III + \Psi$ , *i.e.* it has the sound of *shch* in 'foolish chatter,' or 'Ashchurch' = [[t[]].

AIA. W	IM, WIM.	мате: эмь.	vanue:	[m, m].
Москва́	Москва	[m.\skv	í]1	Moscow
мышь	мышь	[mï∫] ¹		mouse
мозгъ	M0325	[mosk]	L	brain, marrow
соло́ма	солома	s.\tóm.\	] 1	straw
ми́ло	мило	[mítʌ] <sup>2</sup>		dear, nice
мёдъ	мёдъ	[inot] <sup>2</sup>		honey
мѣсяцъ	мъсяцъ	[inésəts]		month, moon
моме́нтъ	момент	υ [momér	t] <sup>1,2</sup>	moment

VIV M w M w Nomer put Veluer [m ...]

<sup>1</sup> 'M' before hard vowels has the sound of English m in 'mass,' = [m]. <sup>2</sup> 'M' before soft yowels has the sound of English m in 'muse,' = [m].

29

Н н, <i>Н н</i> .	Name : энъ.	Value: [n, n].	
Никола́й	Николай	[ňikʌłáĭ] <sup>2</sup>	Nicholas
нужда́	нужда	[nuzdá] <sup>1</sup>	need
ны́нѣ	нынть	[n <sup>i</sup> nə] <sup>1, 2</sup>	nowadays
вонъ!	вонъ!	[von] <sup>1</sup>	away !
ню́хать	нюхать	[núxʌt] <sup>2</sup>	to smell (trans.)
нить	нить	[nit] <sup>2</sup>	thread
день	день	[dein] <sup>2</sup>	day
Монтэ́нь	Монтэнь	[monté <sup>i</sup> n] <sup>2</sup>	Montaigne
накану́нѣ	наканунъ	[nʌkʌnúnə] <sup>1.2</sup>	eve, day before
шарма́нка	шарманка	[∫armánk∆] <sup>3</sup>	barrel-organ

<sup>1</sup> 'H' before  $\mathcal{F}$  and hard vowels has the sound of n in 'none,' = [n].

<sup>2</sup> 'H' before b and soft vowels has the value of n in 'new,' = [ii].

 $^3$  'H' before K and r does not take the value of English ng, but retains the sound [n].

XX. Лл,	Лл. Name:	элъ, эль. Value	: [t, i].
Лапла́ндія	Лапландія	[taptánḋijʌ (ḋjʌ)] 1	Lapland
ла́па	лапа	[túp.] 1	paw
ля́пать	ляпать	[lápʌt] <sup>2</sup>	to smack
лу́чше	лучше	[tút]ə]1	better
любишь	любишь	[lúbi∫] ²	thou lovest
злой	злой	[ztoĭ] <sup>1</sup>	spiteful, wicked
зелёный	зелёный	[żəlónï] <sup>2</sup>	green
пла́мя	пламя	[ptánis] <sup>1</sup>	flame
большо́й	болшой	[bʌ <sup>i</sup> l∫óĭ] <sup>2</sup>	big
дѣ́лалось	дклалось	[détatas] <sup>1</sup>	it was done
учи́тель	учитель	[utʃíṫəl] <sup>2</sup>	teacher
столъ	столъ	[stot] <sup>1</sup>	table
столь	столь	[sto <sup>i</sup> ] <sup>2</sup>	80 -
у́голъ	уголъ	[úgʌt] <sup>1</sup>	corner
у́голь	уголь	[úgʌ <sup>i</sup> ] <sup>2</sup>	coal

'  $\pi$  ' has two sounds which are so distinct that they require the use of different symbols.

<sup>1</sup> Hard ' $\pi$ ' has a sound akin to that of l in English 'battle,' 'people.' In Russian it occurs in any position, and may be produced by pronouncing l with the tip of the tongue drawn back so as to touch the upper palate just behind the teeth; =[†]. This sound never precedes  $\mathbf{b}$  or any soft vowel.

<sup>2</sup> Soft ' $\pi$ ' is sounded like *l* in English 'million'; =[1]. This sound never precedes  $\mathfrak{L}$  or any hard vowel.

Рр, <i>Рр</i> .	Name: эръ.	Value: [r, r].	
Россія	Россія	[rʌśíjʌ] <sup>1</sup>	Russia
радъ	радъ	[rad, rat] <sup>1</sup>	glad
рядъ	рядъ	[iad, iat] <sup>2</sup>	row, rank
рука́	рука	[rukú] <sup>1</sup>	hand, arm
рю́мка	рюмка	[řúmkʌ] <sup>2</sup>	wine-glass
ко́рка	корка	[kórkʌ] <sup>1</sup>	shell, rind
рѣзать	рњзать	[řézat] <sup>2</sup>	to cut
ведро́	ведро	[vədró] <sup>1</sup>	pail
го́рькій	горькій	[gó <sup>i</sup> ŕki] <sup>2</sup>	bitter
поръ	поръ	[por] 1	of times
теперь	теперь	[təpé <sup>i</sup> r] <sup>2</sup>	now

<sup>1</sup> 'p' is never silent and never uvular. It is distinctly trilled, as in Northern English 'were,' 'Russia,' =[r].

<sup>2</sup> Preceding **b** or any soft vowel, 'p' is pronounced as in English 'Harriet,' but rather more softly, =[r].

XXI. In ordinary Russian books accents are not used.

It is in Russian, as in English, important to learn with every word the tonic accent. A difference in accentuation sometimes distinguishes to the ear words that in print are identical in appearance, e.g.:

бѣ́лка	[béłka]	squirrel	бѣлка́	[bəłká]	of the white (of the eye, or egg)
вёдро	[vódrA]	fine weather	ведро́	[vədró]	pail
воротъ	[vór.t]	collar	воро́тъ	[v.srót]	of a gate
доро́гой	[d.róg.ıĭ]	on the way	дорого́й	[dʌrʌgóĭ]	dear
жа́ркое	[ʒárkʌjə]	hot	жарко́е	[ʒʌrkójə]	roast meat
за́мокъ	[zúmsk]	castle	замо́къ	[zʌmók]	lock
ка́пель	[kápəl]	of drops	капе́ль	[kʌṗé <sup>i</sup> ]]	chapel
кро́ю	[króju]	I cover	крою́	[kr.jú]	I cut
мо́ю	[móju]	I wash	ΜΟΙΌ	[mʌjú]	my (fem. acc.)
му́ка	[múkʌ]	torture	мука́	[muká]	flour
нача́ло	[nst[áŤs]	beginning	начало́	[nʌt∫ʌłó]	it began
пла́чу	[płút/u]	I weep	плачу́	[pħ₁tʃú]	I pay
по́лы	[półï]	sexes	полы́	[pʌᠯí]	floors
соро́ка	[sArókA]	magpie	сорока́	[saraká]	of forty
сто́нтъ	[stóit]	it costs	стойтъ	[st.it]	it stands
у́же	[úʒə]	narrower	ужé	[uzé]	already
ýxa	[úx.\]	of the ear	yxá	[uxá]	fish soup

XXII. Russian is richly endowed with prepositions and particles, but it is a highly inflected language, *i.e.* the relations between words are indicated by modifications in the form of termination and stem. For this reason, no doubt, the word-order, though by no means a matter of absolute indifference, is not so rigid as in English. The total number of different inflections is, however, small; the principal ones are given in the following summary of regular forms.

		SUMMARY	Y C	)F REG	ULA]	R FORM	IS											
NOUNS																		
Masculines																		
Hard Form Soft Forms																		
	Sing.	Plur.		Sing.	Plu	Γ.	Sing.		Plur.									
nom.	Ъ	ы		Й	11		Ь		И									
gen.	а	ОВЪ		я	ева	Ь	я		ей									
dat.	У	амъ		IO	ям	ГЪ	ю		ЯМЪ									
acc.	ъ ога	ы ог овъ	5	й or	я и от евъ		ьor	я	и от ей									
instr.	ОМЪ	ами		емъ	ЯМ	и	емъ		ями									
prep.	Ť	ахъ		Ť	ЯХ	Ъ	Ť		яхъ									
° (See Lessons IX, LV.)																		
FEMININES																		
	Hard Form			Soft Forms			Sing.											
	Sing. Plur.			Sing.		Plur.		Plu	r.									
nom.	а	ы	я	ія		и	Ь	и										
gen.	ы	Ъ	п	ін		ь (й) <sup>1</sup>	И	ей										
dat.	Ť	амъ	Ъ	ін		ямъ	И	ямъ										
acc.	У	ы отъ	Ю	ію		и or ь (й)	1ь	и <i>от</i> ей										
instr.	010, 0	й ами	ею	,ей іею	(eii)	ями	ью	ями (ьмн)										
prep.	Ъ	ахъ	Ъ	in <sup>2</sup>	2	яхъ	И	яхъ										
(Lessons XII, XVII, XXII, Voc. XXXIV.)																		
NEUTERS																		
	Hard Fe	orm		Soft Forms														
	Sing.	Plur.	1	Sing.	Plur.		ing.		Plur.									
nom.	0	а		e	я	-	мя		мена									
gen.	a	Ъ		Я	eй (й)		мени мени		менъ									
dat.	У	амъ		ю	ямъ				менамъ									
acc.	0	a		е	я				мена									
instr.	ОМЪ	ами		емъ	ямн		Metten	ГЪ	менами									
prep.	Ť	ахъ		Ъ́(н) <sup>2</sup>	яхъ		мени		менахъ									
		(Se	ee Le	essons IX	and L	.III.)			(See Lessons IX and LIII.)									

<sup>1</sup> in is the gen. pl. termination of nouns in -in and -ie.

<sup>2</sup> in is the prep. sing. termination of nouns in -in and -ie.

32

### INTRODUCTION

### ATTRIBUTIVE ADJECTIVES

	S	Singular				Plura	l
	М.	F.	N.		M.	F	N.
nom.	ый	ая	oe		ые	$\mathbf{B}\mathbf{H}$	ыя
					_	~	
gen.	аго	ОЙ	аго			ыхъ	
dat.	ому	ой	ому			ымъ	
acc.	ый <i>ог</i> аго	<b>у</b> ю	oe		nom	. or g	en.
instr.	ымъ	ой (0ю)	ымъ			ыми	
prep.	ОМЪ	ой	омъ			ыхъ	
(Lesson XXIII.)							
	Varianta	64 60	60	(Lougon)	V V TT	T)	

Variants:	он, ая, ое	(Lesson	XXIII).
	ій, яя, ее	( ,,	XXIV).
	кій, кая, кое	( ,,	XXV).
	шій, шая, шее	( ,,	XXVI).

#### PREDICATIVE ADJECTIVES

Nom. Case—ъ, a, o, ы (Lesson XLIX and Lists, Par. 237).

#### COMPARISON OF ADJECTIVES

Comparative in -ѣe. Lists of comparatives in -e at Par. 238. Most useful form of attributive comparative : бо́лѣе + positive degree. Most useful form of superlative : са́мый + positive degree. (See Lesson L.)

#### ADVERBS

Typical form derived from the adjective ends in -o or -e. (See Par. 189 (1) and lists of predicative adjectives and comparatives.)

#### PRONOUNS

 Personal (Pars. 47 A, 59, 125, 126).
 Emphatic (Pars. 107 c, 235).

 Possessive (Pars. 104, 105, 108, 109).
 Reflexive (Pars. 38, 103, 132).

 Relative and interrogative (Pars. 47 D, 106).
 Demonstrative (Pars. 47 C, 106, 107).

 Indefinite (Pars. 47 E, 106).
 Indefinite (Pars. 47 E, 106).

#### NUMERALS

Cardinals (Par. 27, Voc. XXXVI, Pars. 148, 150, 155). Ordinals (Pars. 166, 171, 184). Declension (Lesson XLVII).

С

### INTRODUCTION

#### VERBS

### $быть^1 = To be$

#### Past Tense

Sing.—1st, 2nd, 3rd persons, былъ, á, о (see Pars. 9, 58). Plur.—1st, 2nd, 3rd persons, бы́лн.

### Present Tense

3rd Sing. есть.

3rd Plur. суть (very little used).

Future Tense

Sing. бу́ду, ешь, стъ. Plur. бу́демъ, ете, утъ.

Imperative (Lesson LII)

Sing. будь, пусть онъ (она́, оно́) бу́детъ. Plur. бу́демъ, бу́дьте, пусть они́ (онѣ́) бу́дутъ.

Participles

 Adjectival
 Adverbial

 Pres. су́щій, being, that is.
 бу́дучи, being, while being.

 Past бы́вшій, having been, that once
 бы́вши, having been, after having

 was.
 been.

 Fut. бу́дущій, about to be, that is to
 been.

be, future.

### REGULAR VERB

### FIRST CONJUGATION

Туре дѣлать (Stem дѣла-) ог паха́ть (Stem паш-, пах-)

IMPERFECTIVE ASPECT

PERFECTIVE ASPECT (See Pars. 202-208.)

Past Tense<sup>2</sup>

Sing. лъ, ла, ло; Plur. лн.

Present Tense

Sing. ю or y, ешь, етъ.

No present.

Similar endings.

Plur. емъ, сте, ютъ or утъ. (Lessons XXXV, XLII–XLIV.)

Future Tense

Future of быть + infinitive. (Lesson XXXII.) Endings as for the endings of the imperfective present tense.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> бывать, to be usually the case, is a regular verb of the 1st conjugation.

<sup>2</sup> This tense corresponds to the Imperfect, Perfect, and Pluperfect in other languages, and has to be rendered according to the context by any one of these forms.

<sup>3</sup> The perfective aspect may belong to the First or Second Conjugation.

# INTRODUCTION

#### IMPERFECTIVE ASPECT

#### PERFECTIVE ASPECT

Imperative Mood

2nd Sing. й, н, ь (one of these). Similar endings. 2nd Plur. йте, ите, ьте. (Lesson LII.)

PARTICIPLES have been indicated but not thoroughly discussed in this book (see Preface). (Notes to Pars. 80, 96, 131, 139, 157).

### Adjectival Participles

Pres.	(active) -ющій, -ущій, formed from 3rd plur. pres. tense,	No present participle.
	'one who is doing.'	No present porticiple
	(passive) -емый, from 1st plur. pres., 'one that is suffering	No present participle.
	the action.'	
Past	(active) -вшій, from sing. of past	-вшій.
	tense, 'one who has done.'	
	(passive) -нный, sometimes	-шный ог -тый.
	-тый, from sing. of past	
	tense, ' one that has suffered	
	the action.'	
	Adverbial ]	PARTICIPLES

#### 

tense, ' having done.'

SECOND CONJUGATION

### Туре говори́ть (Stem говори-)

Has endings like those of the First Conjugation except in the present tense, which has

Sing. ю or y, ишь, итъ.

Plur. HMB, HTE, HTE or ATE (see Lessons XXXVII-XXXIX).

The present participle active has

-ящій or -ащій.

The present participle passive has

-нмый.

The PERFECTIVE ASPECT may be of the First or Second Conjugation.

# PASSIVE VOICE

Apart from the Passive Participles indicated above there is no Passive Voice (Par. 102).

# SUGGESTIONS FOR THE USE OF THIS BOOK

Naturally the first one is that the book should be used as it stands. But many may not care to spend so long as is required by this method before extending their knowledge of the verb beyond the infinitive and past tense. For them the following suggestions will be useful.

(1) As far as the end of Lesson VIII nothing outside the scheme of Lessons I-VIII should be taken up.

(2) Attention is drawn to the summary of regular forms, pp. 32-35.

(3) After Lesson VIII, Pars. 123, 124 of Lesson XXXII may be learned and the future tense be practised with any verb marked A.

(4) After Lesson XIV, Par. 131 of Lesson XXXV may be learned and the present tense of any verb marked (131) be practised.

(5) After Lesson XXI, Par. 211 (gen. rule) of Lesson LII may be learned and the imperative of any verb marked (131) be practised. But the exact value of the imperative will be appreciated only after reading Lesson LI.

(6) It will tend to clearness and ultimate progress if the present tense of any other type than дѣ́лать be left severely alone till after Lesson XXXI.

(7) Certain Lessons, namely XLVII, XLVIII, XLIX, L, may be read at any time after Lesson XX, and the principles applied, though, of course, the exercises in these lessons cannot be done satisfactorily until everything that precedes them has been learned, for all that is assumed in them.

(8) The predicative form of every adjective that occurs in the lessons and is used in that form (see Lesson XLIX) will be found in the lists in Par. 237.

(9) The lesson on the Aspects (LI) may be read at any time, but its principles cannot be profitably applied till the present tense of all the main types has been mastered.

(10) Illustrations of the script and phonetic transcript of the Russian exercises will be found at pp. 190, 194. The student working without a teacher might find it profitable, after studying each lesson, to write out the transcript in ordinary Russian script, and compare his version with the original exercise.

### LESSON I<sup>1</sup>

1. There is no article in Russian.

2. There are two numbers, Singular and Plural.

3. Gender is not determined by natural sex, but names of males are generally Masculine and names of females are generally Feminine. Names of things or abstractions may be Masculine, Feminine, or Neuter.

As a rule the form of a noun determines its gender.

4. The typical masculine noun ends in the Nominative Singular in -Ъ, e.g.

сынъ [sin], a son, the son, son.

5. The nominative singular masculine of the attributive adjective ends in -biñ or -óñ, *e.g.* 

ста́рый мужи́къ [stárī muʒīk], the (an) old peasant. молодо́й оте́цъ [mʌlʌdoĭ ʌtéts], the (a) young father.

6. If the adjective ends in -ой, the termination is always accented. The termination -ый is not accented.

7. In the phrase *He is an old man*, the present tense of the verb "to be" is not used in Russian, so that

Онъ—ста́рый мужи́къ [on stárī muʒik] means He is an old peasant. Онъ—глу́ный человѣкъ [on głúpī tʃəłʌvɛ́k] means He is a stupid man.

8. The negative form of these phrases is :

Онъ—не ста́рый мужи́къ [on nə stárī muʒik], He is not an old peasant. Онъ—не глу́пый человѣ́къ [on nə gtúpī tʃətʌvɛ́k], He is not a stupid man.

The dash is often used to replace the present tense of "to be" understood.

<sup>1</sup> A word enclosed in round brackets ( ) need not be translated. The vocabulary of nouns and verbs in the first eight lessons has been deliberately restricted to a small number of words.

### LESSON II

#### §§ 9–11

#### VOCABULARY

дѣдъ [dɛd (t)], grandfather сынъ [sīn], son домъ [dom], house лѣсъ [lɛs], wood, forest хлѣбъ [xlɛp], bread, corn ма́льчикъ [má<sup>i</sup>ltʃik], boy человѣкъ [tʃəlʌvɛk], man оте́цъ [лtɛ́ts], falher нашъ [nɑʃ], our вашъ [vɑʃ], your нt [i], and a <sup>1</sup> [ɑ], but, and

сла́бый [słóbī], weak си́льный [słóbī], strong, powerful глу́пый [głúpī], stupid у́мный [úmnī], intelligent бѣлый [bɛ́tī], white чёрный [tʃórnī], black до́брый [dóbrī], good (kind) плохо́й [płʌxóĭ], bad ста́рый [stórī], old молодо́й [mʌłʌdóĭ], young пе [hɛ́, ne, nə], not

### EXERCISE

Translate :

 Ста́рый дѣдъ. (2) Нашъ оте́цъ. (3) Онъ—сла́бый ста́рый человѣ́къ. (4) Бѣлый хлѣ́бъ и чёрный хлѣ́бъ. (5) Вашъ сынъ си́льный молодо́й ма́льчикъ. (6) Чёрный лѣсъ. (7) Онъ—плохо́й ма́льчикъ. (8) Нашъ сынъ—глу́пый, а вашъ сынъ—у́мный ма́льчикъ. (9) Ста́рый домъ. (10) Нашъ дѣдъ—неглу́пый<sup>2</sup> человѣ́къ. Вашъ сынъ—умный мальчикъ.

### LESSON II

9. The past tense of Russian verbs is peculiar in this respect, that it agrees with the subject in gender and number, while it does not vary with the person, *i.e.* there is one form of the past tense which is always found with a masculine singular subject, whether that subject be of the first, second or third person, *e.g.* 

Я дѣлалъ [ja détat], I used to do; I did do, I was doing.

Ты<sup>3</sup> дѣлалъ [tī défʌt], thou didst use to do, thou didst, thou wast doing. Онъ дѣлалъ [on défʌt], he used to do, etc.

Нашъ сынъ дѣлалъ [na] sin détat], Our son used, etc.

10. This verb corresponds either to did do or made. It will be observed that this masculine past tense ends like the noun in - $\mathbf{b}$ .

11. The negative form is:

Я не д'блалъ [ja na détat], I did not do, or make.

<sup>1</sup> This word may often be translated by *and*, but it always has adversative force. <sup>2</sup> Instead of making the verb negative the Russian often makes the adjective

or adverb negative.

<sup>3</sup> Familiar second personal pronoun used only among intimates and children.

12. In interrogative sentences the particle  $\pi u$  is used, *e.g.* 

Дѣлаль ли онь? [dɛth li on ?], Did he do, or make? Was he doing? Ты ли дѣлаль? [tī li dɛ́th?], Didst thou do, etc.?

13. This particle is not required if there is in the sentence an interrogative word like who? what? how? when? e.g.

Что онъ дѣлалъ? [[to on détht?], What did he do? Кто дѣлалъ э́то? [xto détht éth?]) Who used to do this (or that)? or Кто э́то дѣлалъ? [xto éth détht?]) Who was doing this (or that)? Куда́ ты ходи́лъ? [kudó tī xhdīt?], Whither did you use to go? Како́въ былъ человѣкъ? [khkóf bīl tʃəlʌvɛ́k?], What like was the man?

i.e. What sort of a man was he? What manner of man was he?

### VOCABULARY

As the adverbs and pronouns given in this Vocabulary will recur again and again in succeeding lessons, it is not necessary to commit them all to memory before attempting Exercise II.

For explanation of figure or letter A with verbs in this and following vocabularies see Suggestions 3–5, p. 36.

былъ [bil], was, used to be TOTE [tot], that (TO, neuter form) жиль A [zit], lived, was living, used KTO? [xto], who? to live что? [t[to, [to], what? како́въ? [kakóf], of what sort? ѣлъ A [jɛł], ate, etc. спалъ A [spat], slept, etc. KAKE? [kak], how? дѣлалъ 131 A [dɛ́tʌt], did, made, etc. TAKE [tak], so зналъ 131 A [znaf], knew, etc. тако́й [tʌkóĭ], such, such a BOT'S [vot], there is ! there are ! see ! - ber I an. ходи́лъ A [xadít], used to go гдѣ [qdɛ, gdɛ], where (with verbs of игра́лъ 131 A [igrat], played пры́галъ 131 A [prígлt], jumped rest) куда́ [kudá], where, whither (with about verbs of motion) работалъ 131 A [rabotat], worked B5 [v, f], into perocounced with new low я [ja], I MÓH [mói], my, mine въ лѣсъ [vies], into the wood хорошо́ [xarajo], well - en hape ты [ti], thou, you (this pronoun is used only in familiar discourse) тво́й [tvóĭ], thy, thine пло́хо [plóxл], badly OHL [On], he, it 110 [no, n.], but eró [jəvó], him, it (direct object) мно́го [mnógл], much eró [jəvó], of him, his, its немно́го [úəmnóqл], (a) little этоть [état] (m.), this, that, that one лѣтомъ [lét.m], in summer (это, neuter form) зимо́й [zimóĭ], in winter

### EXERCISES

A. Translate:

(1) Вашъ дѣдъ былъ ста́рый человѣ́къ. (2) Зимо́й онъ рабо́талъ немно́го; онъ спалъ. (3) Я хорошо́ зналъ чёрный домъ (see Par. 16 (2)), гдѣ онъ жилъ зимо́й. (4) Нашъ оте́цъ былъ не тако́й сла́бый человѣ́къ. (5) Лѣ́томъ онъ ходи́лъ въ лѣсъ, гдѣ онъ мно́го рабо́талъ. (6) Его́ сынъ былъ у́мный ма́льчикъ. (7) Лѣ́томъ онъ игра́лъ н пры́галъ. (8) Но онъ былъ неглу́пый <sup>1</sup> ма́льчикъ. (9) Гдѣ онъ игра́лъ зимо́й? (10) Ты немно́го рабо́талъ зимо́й; ты не ходи́лъ въ лѣсъ. (11) Э́тотъ ма́льчикъ ѣлъ оѣ́лый хлѣбъ. (12) Ты хорошо́ зналъ нашъ домъ. (13) Ты его́ зналъ. (14) Мо́й молодо́й сынъ зналъ твой домъ. (15) Вотъ мой сынъ. (16) Воть онъ.

Мой молодой сынъ зналъ твой домъ.

B. Вопросы (=questions).—This rather mechanical exercise serves a twofold purpose : it affords practice in the interrogative forms and repeats the vocabulary and phrases of Exercise A.

(1) Кто быль ста́рый человѣ́къ?
(2) Что онъ дѣ́лалъ зимой?
(3) Ка́къ я зналъ домъ, гдѣ жилъ вашъ дѣ́дъ?
(4) Кто не́ былъ такой сла́бый?
(5) Куда́ онъ ходи́лъ?
(6) Когда́ онъ ходи́лъ въ лѣ́съ?
(7) Како́въ былъ его́ сынъ?
(8) Что онъ дѣ́лалъ?
(9) Что ѣлъ ма́льчикъ?
(10) Зналъ ли я твой домъ? (say, 'you knew it').

C. Translate into Russian:

(1) Our father was a strong young man. (2) He did not sleep much. (3) In winter my old grandfather slept but my father worked a great deal. (4) He worked and (*use conj.* a) his young son played. (5) In summer the boy used to go into the wood, where your grandfather lived. (6) Whither did the boy go? (Whither the boy went?) (7) Your intelligent son well knew my old house. (8) He was a young boy; summer and winter he played and jumped about. (9) Was he a stupid and bad man? (10) What did you eat? (*say here*, 'thou didst eat, *i.e.* atest'). (11) I ate the white bread. (12) What did the boy do in winter? (13) What was the man like? (14) He was a kind intelligent man.

<sup>1</sup> Form described in Par. 69 is also common.

### LESSON III

14. The genitive case of nouns in -ъ ends in -a, e.g.

другъ, дру́га [druk] [drúgл], friend. стари́къ, старика́ [stлiiki] [stлiiká], old man.

- (a) Some words preserve throughout the singular the accent of the nominative singular, like другъ. To this class belong all the nouns in Vocabulary I except оте́цъ.
- (b) Some words do not have the accent in the oblique cases on the same syllable as in the nominative. To this class belongs the word оте́цъ, отца́ [лtźts] [лtsú], father.

*Note.*—This word, like *many* other masculine nouns with e or o in the final syllable of the nominative singular, drops that vowel in all the other cases.

15. The dative case of nouns in -ъ ends in -y, e.g.

другъ, дру́гу [druk] [drúgu], friend. стари́къ, старику́ [stʌiik] [stʌiikú], old man. оте́цъ, отцу́ [ʌiɛ́ts] [ʌtsú], father.

- 16. (1) The accusative case (direct object of transitive verbs) of masculine names of animate beings has the same form as the genitive.
  - (2) The accusative case (direct object of transitive verbs) of masculine names of *inanimate things* has the same form as the *nominative*.
- 17. So there are these two forms of declension :

Animate		Inanimate		
nom.	другъ [druk]	домъ [dom]		
gen.	дру́га [drúgʌ]	до́ма [dómʌ]		
dat.	дрýгу [drúgu]	до́му [dómu]		
acc.	дру́га [drúgʌ]	домъ [dom]		

18. In the phrase въ лѣсъ, *into the wood*, лѣсъ is the accusa tive case after the preposition въ.

19. The genitive means 'of a thing or person.' It corresponds to our possessive case, *e.g.* 

садъ мужнка́ [sod (sot) muzikó], the garden of the peasant, the peasant's garden.

20. The dative means 'to a thing or person.' It is used after verbs of *giving*, *saying*, etc. to indicate the indirect object, *e.g.* 

Онь даль ма́льчнку хлѣбъ [on dot má<sup>i</sup>ltjiku xlɛp], He gave the boy the bread.

21. The genitive and dative of pronouns used in this lesson are :

(a) меня́ <sup>1</sup> [mənɑ́], of me	(b) мнѣ [mnɛ], to me,	from я
тебя́ <sup>1</sup> [təbá], of thee	тебѣ́ [təbɛ́], to thee,	ты
eró <sup>1</sup> [jəvó], of him, his	емý [jəmú], to him,	ОНЪ
ихъ <sup>1</sup> [jix], of them, their	имъ [jim], to them,	OIIÍ
кого́? <sup>1</sup> [kavó], of whom? wh	ose? ROMÝ? [kamú], to whom?	кто
ότοгο <sup>1</sup> [έtava], of this	э́тому [śtлmu], to this,	∫ э́тотъ \ э́то
τοró <sup>1</sup> [tʌvó], of that	томý [tлmú], to that,	тотъ
чего́? [tʃəvó], of what ?	чему́? [t∫əmú], to what ?	ЧТО

### VOCABULARY

бра́тъ, a <sup>2</sup> [brat], brother	говори́лъ A [gavaiít], spoke
вну́къ, a [vnuk], grandson	тепе́рь [təpéir], now
другъ, a [druk], friend	никогда́ [nikagdá], never
огоро́дъ, а [лдлго́t], kitchen-	тогда́ [tʌgdá], then
garden, orchard	тамъ [tam], there
садъ, a [sad, sat], garden, rehuld	здѣсь [zdes (s)], here
стари́къ, á [stлiík], an old man	о́чень [о́t∫әѝ], very =
мужи́къ, á [muzík], a peasant	что [tsto, sto], that (conjunction)
сы́ръ, а [sïr], cheese	по-русски [parúski], Russian, in
далъ [dut], gave	Russian
сказа́лъ [skʌzút], said, told	по-а́нглійски [pлanglíski or pлán-
показа́лъ [pakazat], showed	gliski], (in) English

Онъ пикогда́ не<sup>3</sup> говори́лъ по-ру́сски [on nikagdá nə gavai'af paraski], He never spoke Russian.

 $^1$  Are also accusatives. 5 roro and roró are used as the accusative only of animate beings.

<sup>2</sup> When, in the Vocabulary, the genitive termination is not accented, the accent falls throughout as in the nominative singular.

<sup>3</sup> Notice the double negative used in the Russian form for he never, etc. So with all negative adverbs and indefinite pronouns.

### EXERCISES

# A. Give the genitive, dative, and accusative of

сынь, хльбь, мальчикь, старикь, отець, я, онь, кто.

### B. Translate:

(1) Ма́льчикъ далъ старику́ тотъ чёрный хлѣбъ. (2) Твой до́брый оте́цъ показа́лъ миѣ твой садъ и огоро́дъ. (3) Вашъ внукъ миѣ сказа́лъ э́то. (4) Онъ меня́ не зналъ. (5) Я тебя́ не зналъ. (6) Его́ у́мный сыпъ показа́лъ тебѣ мой ста́рый домъ. (7) Я показа́лъ сы́ну бѣлый домъ бра́та. (8) Э́то—не бѣлый, а чёрный хлѣбъ. (9) Я далъ ему́ вашъ сыръ. (10) Онъ его́ ѣлъ. (11) Ихъ братъ говори́лъ хорошо́ по-ру́сски, но онъ говори́лъ тогда́ о́чень пло́хо по - а́нглійски. (12) Гдѣ вашъ оте́цъ? (13) Онъ тепе́рь здѣсь. (14) Лѣтомъ си́льный мужи́къ ходи́лъ въ лѣсъ; онъ тамъ рабо́талъ. (15) Твой внукъ показа́лъ миѣ огоро́дъ отца́. (16) Нашъ другъ былъ тогда́ молодо́й, а онъ тепе́рь<sup>0</sup>/ста́рый человѣ́къ. (17) Я хорошо́ «зналъ ста́рый домъ, гдѣ жилъ стари́къ. (18) Ты никогда́ не рабо́талъ.

### С. Вопросы:

(1) Кому́ ма́льчикъ далъ чёрный хлѣ́бъ? (2) Что онъ ему́ да́лъ? (3) Что мнѣ показа́лъ твой оте́цъ? (4) Что мнѣ сказа́лъ вашъ вну́къ? (5) Что тебѣ показа́лъ его́ сынъ? (6) Кому́ я показа́лъ домъ бра́та? (7) Что онъ ѣлъ? (8) Кто говори́лъ хорошо́ по-ру́сски? (9) Какъ онъ говори́лъ тогда́ по-а́шглійски? (10) Куда́ ходи́лъ лѣ́томъ ста́рый мужи́къ? (11) Что онъ тамъ дѣлалъ? (12) Что мнѣ показа́лъ твой внукъ?

- with

Куда ходилъ лютомъ старый мужикъ?

D. Translate into Russian :

(1) The brother's garden; the peasant's kitchen-garden; the father's house; to the old man's son; he is an intelligent boy; that is his white house: your black bread; did he know that? what did he do in summer? he used to go into the wood; I said to the boy's friend; I spoke English badly then.

(2) To him, to me, of thee, of them, to whom, of that, I showed him that.

(3) There he is; there is the old man; he was never there.

(4) He showed me your garden. Who was speaking? I did not know where he (was). Their son gave them your old house. To whom did he give it? He said that you (were) there.

### LESSON IV

22. The genitive is also used after many prepositions, e.g. y [u], at.

23. Y OTHA [ $u \wedge tsa$ ] means at the father's, i.e. at his house, at his place of business, in his possession, near him.

У меня́ [u inənd] means in my possession, at my house, etc.

24. (a) The form most frequently used to express our verb to have is a combination of the phrase in Par. 23 with the requisite tense of the verb "to be," e.g.

(1) У отца́ быль молодо́й сынь [u atsá bīt matadói sin], The father had a young son.

(2) У мужика́ былъ ста́рый домъ [u muzīká bīt stárī dom], The peasant had an old house.

(3) У него́ быль у́мный брать [u ùəvó bīł úmnī brat], He had an intelligent brother.

(4) У нихъ былъ хоро́шій хлѣ́бъ [u híx bīt xʌróʃī xlɛp], They had the good bread.

(b) To give the present tense of the phrases in (a) the verb is simply omitted, e.g.

У отца-молодо́й сынъ [u Atsa mAtAdoĭ sïn], The father has a young son.

(c) The usual interrogative form is :

Былъ ли у него́? etc. [bil li u nəvó], Was there to him? i.e. Had he?

Есть ли у него́ хлѣбъ? etc. [jest li u nəvó xlɛp ?], Is there to him, i.e. Has he the bread ?

25. In examples (3) and (4) of the last paragraph notice у него́ and у нихъ. The oblique cases of the third personal pronoun when governed by any preposition always have this н prefixed. We say у него́ [u iəvó], in his possession, etc., but у его́ отца́ [u jəvó Atsá], in his father's possession, because it is отца́, not cró, that is governed by the preposition.

### VOCABULARY

хоро́шій [хлró́jī], good (the most	одна́нды [лdnázdī], once
general equivalent) здоро́вый [zdʌróvī], healthy	разь [ruz, ros], once для [dla, dla], for
больной [bailnoi], ill, sick	безъ [bɛs, bəs], without genitive
ча́сто [tʃastʌ], often ссть [jest], there is, there are, there exist	y [u], at

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

(1) Для ма́льчнка. (2) Безъ старика́. (3) У дру́га. (4) У него́. (5) Для меня́; у нихъ; для тебя́. (6) Для кого́? (7) У кого́? (8) Безъ тебя́. (9) У отца́. (10) Для отца́. (11) Гдѣ жилъ до́брый ста́рый другъ отца́? (12) Что ему́ далъ твой оте́цъ? (13) Одна́жды онъ далъ человѣку хоро́шій бѣлый домъ. (14) Кому́ онъ сказа́лъ э́то? (15) Лѣ́томъ э́тотъ ма́льчикъ былъ ча́сто у мужика́. (16) Тогда́ вашъ у́мный другъ жилъ здѣсь. (17) Знмо́й сынъ тамъ рабо́талъ безъ отца́. (18) Ты хорошо́ зналъ э́то. (19) Братъ отца́ сказа́лъ имъ э́то. (20) Куда́ ма́льчикъ ча́сто ходи́лъ лѣ́томъ? (21) Мо́й молодо́й внукъ тепе́рь у мена́. (22) Кто былъ тогда́ у тебя́? (23) У мена́ здѣсь до́брый другъ. (24) У э́того мужика́ былъ чёрный хлѣ́бъ. (25) Сыръ не́ для теба́, а для нихъ. (26) Онъ никогда́ не нгра́лъ у мена́.

Безъ друга я никогда не ходилъ въ лъсъ.

B. Translate into Russian :

(1) The peasant's friend was a kind intelligent man. (2) To whom did he give [he gave] the good white bread? (3) That is for the father. (4) He lived then at the son's. (5) He is now without a friend. (6) The black bread is for their grandson. (7) In summer he lived at his father's. (8) The peasant's kind friend is not a powerful [strong] man. (9) Who gave him that? (10) To whom did he show your old house? (11) They have a sick son. (12) At their friend's. (13) At whose house? (14) Who is here? (15) When did he live with him? (16) He lived with me then. (17) He never lived with me. (18) There is his friend. (19) Have you a father? (20) Had he an old house?

### LESSON V

26.  $-\mathbf{b}$  is the hard termination for masculine nouns. But there are many masculine nouns ending in the nominative case in  $-\mathbf{b}$  or  $-\mathbf{i}$  with corresponding soft terminations in the other cases, *e.g.* 

HAR	D ENDINGS	Soft	Endings
nom.	оте́цъ [Atéts]	царь [tsɑir̀], czar	repóü [ġəróĭ], hero
gen.	отца́ [лtsá]	царя́ [tsʌiɑ́]	геро́я [ġərójʌ]
dat.	отцý [лtsý]	царю́ [tsʌŕú]	геро́ю [ġəróju]
ace.	отца́ [лtsá]	царя́ [tsʌrd]	геро́я [ġərójʌ]

(a) ь is always preceded by a consonant, й always by a vowel.

(b) As stated in Par. 16, names of inanimate things have the same form for accusative and nominative.

#### LESSON V

27. Instead of the nom. plur. and the acc. plur., the genitive singular<sup>1</sup> is used after the forms два [dva], two, три [tři], three, четы́ре [tíətirə], four, e.g.

два са́да [dva sódʌ], two gardens. четы́ре старика́ [tʃətïrə stʌriká], four old men. три царя́ [tři tsʌriá], three czars.

#### VOCABULARY

рабо́тникъ, а [rʌbótʰik], workman	ма́ленькій [málənki], small
оле́нь, я [лĺé <sup>i</sup> ǹ], stag	большо́й [bʌʲl̀∫о́ĭ], big
царь, я́ [tsú <sup>i</sup> r], czar	хра́брый [xrábrī], brave
сара́й, я [saráĭ], cart-shed	ро́бкій [rópki], timid
геро́й, я [ġərо́ĭ], hero	друго́й [drugóĭ], other
дворе́цъ, <sup>2</sup> рца́ [dvʌrɛ́ts, dvʌrtsɑ́],	то́лько [tó <sup>i</sup> lkʌ], only
palace	они́ [ли́ı], they (m. and n.)
оди́нъ [Adín], one, certain	по-францу́зски [pлfrantsúski],
бога́тый [bʌgɑ́tï], rich	French, in French
бѣ́дный [b́źdnī], poor	

### EXERCISES

 (1) Безъ героя.
 (2) Для старика́.
 (3) Два старика́.
 (4) У царя́.
 (5) Безъ оле́ня.
 (6) Три геро́я.
 (7) Большо́й сара́й.
 (8) Хра́брый геро́й.
 (9) Си́льный царь.
 (10) Здоро́вый ма́льчикъ.
 (11) Молодо́й сынъ царя́.
 (12) У тебя́ бога́тый другъ.

B. Translate:

A. Translate:

(1) Бѣ́дный мужи́къ зналъ геро́я. (2) Хра́брый геро́й—до́ брый человѣ́къ. (3) Зимо́й ста́рый рабо́тникъ не ча́сто ходи́лъ въ садъ. (4) Лѣ́томъ вашъ больно́й сынъ жилъ здѣсь. (5) Гдѣ онъ тепе́рь? (6) У отца́ три сы́на; вотъ они́! (7) У мужика́ тепе́рь о́чень ма́ленькій огоро́дъ безъ сара́я; онъ не бога́тый, но о́чень бѣ́дный человѣ́къ. (8) Разъ си́льный царь далъ геро́ю большо́й домъ. (9) У старика́ четы́ре вну́ка. (10) У него́ больно́й сынъ. (11) Оди́нъ сынъ царя́ говори́лъ хорошо́ пофранцу́зски и по-ру́сски, а друго́й говори́лъ то́лько по-ру́сски. (12) Я его́ никогда́ не зналъ. (13) Гдѣ жилъ большо́й оле́нь?

Другой сынь говориль только по-русски.

C. Translate into Russian:

(1) At the father's. (2) The ezar's friend. (3) Without the hero. (4) For the stag. (5) Two eart-sheds. (6) Three peasants. (7) Four boys.

<sup>1</sup> See Pars. 179, 180.

<sup>2</sup> Declined like orént.

§§ 28-32

(8) Three palaces. (9) Without whom ? (10) For mc. (11) At his house.
(12) Without him. (13) Without it. (14) The ezar had a great palace.
(15) He was never a timid boy. (16) Your friend spoke French, but very badly. (17) The stupid man did not often work ; he slept. (18) Where did the peasant's son use to go in winter ? (19) For that. (20) Without them.

### LESSON VI

28. In negative phrases the genitive of the object is used instead of the accusative, *e.g.* 

я зналъ домъ [ja znat dom], I knew the house.

я не зналъ дома [ja ne znat doms], I did not know the house.

29. The genitive is used also instead of the *nominative* in the negative forms corresponding to the examples given in Par. 24, e.g.

У меня́ нѣтъ хлѣба, нѣтъ сара́я [u mənd net xlɛ́bʌ, net sʌrdjʌ], I have no bread, no cart-shed.

This word нѣтъ represents

не есть [ne jest], not is. не суть [ne sú<sup>i</sup>t], not are.

30. The genitive is used after adverbs of quantity,<sup>1</sup> e.g. мно́го хлѣ́ба [mnо́gʌ xl̇́ɛ́bʌ], much bread (or corn). ма́ло лѣ́са [mótʌ l̇́ɛ́sʌ], little forest.

31. The forms given in Pars. 29–30 are really all examples of the partitive genitive (cf. the French forms je n'ai pas de maison, beaucoup de pain). This partitive genitive appears also in simple affirmative phrases without any adverb or measure of quantity, e.g.

Онъ имъ далъ хлѣба [on jim dot xlśbʌ]. He gave them bread, i.e. some bread.

Онь имъ далъ хлѣбъ [on jim dat xlɛp], He gave them the bread. Cf. French il leur donna du pain, il leur donna le pain.

32. The great majority of Russian verbs have the infinitive in -ть, *e.g.* быть [bit], рабо́тать [гльо́tлt]. From this infinitive is formed the masculine past tense by changing ть into лъ, *e.g.* 

> жить, жиль [ʒīt, ʒīt], to live, lived. спать, спаль [spa<sup>it</sup>, spa<sup>i</sup>], to sleep, slept. <sup>1</sup> See Voc. XL.

33. The infinitive is used in many common idioms corresponding to our English forms, *e.g.* 

y vac. LESSON VI

Онъ хотвлъ игра́ть [on xatét igráit], He wished to play. Я не могъ спать [ja йә mog spait], I could not sleep.

### VOCABULARY

овёсь, <sup>1</sup> вса́ [лу́о́s, лfsɑ́], oats	сѣять A [séjət], to sow
ячме́нь, я́ [jətímé <sup>i</sup> n, ó], barley	гоня́ть 131 A [gandit], to hunt
осёлъ, <sup>1</sup> сла́ [лі́sót, лstá], ass	понимать 131 А [panimáit], to
нътъ [net], no, there is not	understand
да, yes	купи́ть [kuṕit́], to buy
почему́? [pat]əmú], why?	хотъть A [xatéit], to wish
ма́ло (adv.) [mála], little	ѣсть (irreg.) A [jest], to eat
ско́лько [sko <sup>i</sup> lka], how much, how	быть [bīt], to be
many	жи́ть A [zīt], to live etc., see Par.
ничего́ (gen. of ничто́) [nitsəvó],	32 and Voeab. II
nothing	я мо́гъ [ja móg], I could
како́й [k.kói], what? what sort of? because - ПО Толич.	A Pene. sanolla
julcause - 170 modely.	The all anone Saltre
EXER	CISES

A. Give the genitive, dative and accusative of осёлъ, ячме́нь, мужи́къ, сара́й.

B. Translate :

He has much bread, he has no oats, no garden, no father, no friend, little barley, no ass, how much bread ? had he the oats ? have I any bread ?

C. Translate:

I did not buy bread, oats, barley, an ass, a house.

D. Translate:

(1) He could not
(2) He wished to

E. Translate :

 Четыре осла́. (2) Безъ ячменя́. (3) Для осла́. (4) Ослу́.
 Былъ тогда́ очень си́льный и бога́тый царь; у него́ былъ большо́й дворе́цъ. (6) У царя́ былъ другъ-геро́й.<sup>2</sup> (7) Царь далъ геро́ю два до́ма и больщо́й лъ́съ. (8) Лѣ́томъ онъ хотѣлъ гопи́ть оле́ня. (9) Бѣ́дный мужи́къ показа́лъ ему́ три оле́ня.

<sup>1</sup> Declined like orégre, note to Par. 14.

<sup>2</sup> Treat these two nouns as one compound noun or as a noun plus an adjective clause.

48

# LESSON VII

su - Sugern

(10) Ма́ленькій сынь хотѣ́ль ча́сто игра́ть, а его́ оте́ць не хотѣ́ль. (11) Онъ былъ небога́тый человѣ́нъ; у него́ ма́ло хлѣ́ба, но онъ сѣ́ялъ мно́го ячменя́ и овса́. (12) Зимо́й онъ не могъ рабо́тать. (13) Си́льный царь хотѣ́лъ купи́ть его́ ма́ленькій домъ. (14) У мужика́ то́лько два сы́на; оди́нъ сынъ мно́го рабо́талъ, друго́й никогда́ шичего́ не дѣ́лалъ, по онъ ѣлъ хоро́шій хлѣ́бъ у отца́. (15) Оте́цъ никогда́ не хотѣ́лъ дать ему́ хлѣ́ба. (16) Стари́къ далъ ослу́ мно́го овса́. (17) У него́ нѣтъ ячменя́. (18) Я могъ то́лько ма́ло понима́ть.

Отець никогда не хотълъ дать ему хлъба.

**F.** Вопросы :

(1) Како́й другъ былъ у царя́? (2) Что ему́ далъ царь?
(3) Ско́лько онъ ему́ далъ? (4) Когда́ геро́й хотѣ́лъ гоня́ть оле́ня? (5) Что ему́ показа́лъ мужи́къ? (6) Что хотѣ́лъ ча́сто дѣ́лать сынъ мужика́? (7) Мно́го ли овса́ у мужика́? (8) Когда́ мужи́къ ма́ло рабо́талъ? (9) Како́въ былъ оди́нъ сынъ? (10) А друго́й? (11) Почему́ оте́цъ не хотѣ́лъ дать э́тому сы́ну хлѣ́ба?
(12) Что стари́къ далъ ослу́?

# G. Translate :

(1) I did not wish to buy it. (2) The czar's young friend was hunting the stag. (3) Did he see the stag? (4) No. I do not know why he did not understand it. (5) What sort of a house did the man give him?

# LESSON VII

34. Neuter nouns end in -o or -e (-ë if accented) and are declined thus :

HARD FORM	Soft Fo	ORMS
nom. село́ [ṡəłó], village <sup>1</sup>	мо́ре [mó́rə], sea	питьё [pitjó], drink
gen. села́ [sətá]	мо́ря [то́гл]	питья́ [pitjá]
dat. ceлý [sətú]	мо́рю [móiu]	питыю [pitjú]
acc. ceлó [sətó]	мóре [mórə]	питьё [pitjó]

(a) Nominative singular ends in -o or -e, -ë (always accented).

(b) Genitive and dative have the same endings as the masculine nouns.

(c) Accusative has the same form as nominative.

This is true of all neuter substantives and adjectives.

<sup>1</sup> With a church.

35.	Adjectives	like	nouns	have	
-----	------------	------	-------	------	--

HARD ENDINGS	l {masc. бѣ́лый [b́ɛ́tī], white neut. бѣ́лое [b̀ɛ́tʌjə]
	2 {masc. больной [b $_{1}$ ilnói], sick, ill neut. больное [b $_{1}$ ilnójə]
Soft Endings	$3 \begin{cases} \text{masc. cúhiň [síňi], blue} \\ \text{neut. cúhec [síňəjə]} \end{cases}$

(a) If the stem ends in к, г, х, ж, ч, ш, щ, ій not ый must be written, e.g. ма́ленькій [mólənki], small.

Similarly we must write ee, not oe, when the o is not accented, after ж, ч, ш, щ, ц, *е.д.* 

xopómin, xopómee [xaró]i, xaró[əjə], good.

VOCABULARY taste ПАВУ БКусный [fkúsni], nice (to iasie) село́, á [sətó, á], village ки́слый [kístī], sour мópe, я [mórə, л], sea cúnin [šíni], blue (dauk) не́бо, a [ńє́bʌ, ʌ], sky, heaven MOII, MOË [mói, majó], my, mine яблоко, a [jábtaka, a], apple TBOÏI, TBOË [tvóĭ, tvajó], thy, thine зда́ніе, я [zdáňjə, л], building который, ое [katori, aja], which питьё, я́ [pitjó, á], drink ку́шанье, я [kú[лі́jə, л], food h нашъ, на́ше [na], ná[ə], our, ours цвѣтъ, a [tsvét, л], colour - Howey W вашъ, ва́ше [vɑ∫, vɑ́∫ə], your, yours пото́мъ [p.stóm], then, thereupon этотъ, это [état, éta], this, that вотъ почему́ [vot patjemú], that is TOTE, TO [tot, to], that why одно (neuter of одинъ) [Adno], one, спѣлый [spélī], ripe a certain

Уче́нье 1—свѣть, а неуче́нье 1—тьма́ [ut]énja—svét, л naut]énja imá], Learning is light, but ignorance is darkness. Exercises 20 & y Eagut blue

A. Translate:

(1) Вкусное яблоко. (2) Синій цвѣтъ неба. (3) Синее море. (4) Бѣлое небо. (5) Снѣлое яблоко. (6) Маленькое зданіе. (7) Хоро́ній сыръ и хоро́шее питьё. (8) Вотъ твоё спѣлое яблоко. (9) Наше хоро́шее ку́шанье. (10) Ки́слое питьё. (11)(12) Это зданіе-большой дворець, кото-Ваше большое село. рый далъ гербю сильный царь. (13) Маленький сынъ друга былъ здоровый мальчикъ; онъ тлъ это большое яблоко, которое ты миф даль. (14) Потомъ онъ хотълъ играть. (15) Мальчикъ играль и прыгаль; воть почему я пикогда не могь спать.

Потомъ онъ хотълъ играть.

<sup>1</sup> Also spelt -ie.

or

§§ 36-38

B. Translate into Russian :

(1) A ripe apple. (2) Tasty food and drink. (3) Blue sky. (4) For the village. (5) Without food and without drink. (6) Our little village. (7) My good food. (8) His sour drink. (9) My old village. (10) Your timid old father. (11) The colour of the apple. (12) What was the peasant's son eating ? A nice ripe apple. (13) At his father's. (14) At their house. (15) The blue sea. (16) That large building is not his house. (17) That is the czar's palace; his son used to live there in winter. (18) When did the man use to go [when the man went] to work ? (19) When did the little boy eat the good food ? (20) He never had food and drink [Hé OLITO].<sup>1</sup> (21) The great palace that used to be there. (22) That is why he worked little and played a great deal. (23) The poor man who did not know the friend's house. (24) Four villages. Two apples. Three heroes. Two colours.

C. Give the genitive, dative, and accusative of

кушанье, внукъ, садъ, яблоко, дворе́цъ, овёсъ, не́бо.

# LESSON VIII

## 36. The neuter singular of the past tense ends in -o, e.g. masc. онъ былъ [on bīł], he (it) was. neut. онó<sup>2</sup> бы́ло [ли́о bíł], it was.

37. Reflexive verbs are very numerous in Russian. Sometimes they may be rendered literally; sometimes they are employed where we should use the passive voice; sometimes they correspond to English neuter verbs; sometimes they do not admit of a literal translation at all.

38. нра́виться [nrávitsʌ], to be pleasing, is a common reflexive verb; the syllable -ся is a contraction for ссоя́ meaning self. The past tense is

masc. нра́вился [nrávilsʌ], was pleasing. neut. нра́вилось [nrávilʌs], was pleasing.

Note :

(a) The  $\mathbf{b}$  after the  $\pi$  is absent from the masculine form, (b) -C $\pi$  is written -C $\mathbf{b}$  after the vowel in the neuter.

The word is used thus:

Этотъ домъ ему правился [état dom jəmú nróvilsa], This (that) house was pleasing to him, i.e. he liked this house.

<sup>1</sup> Note the accentuation in не́ было.

<sup>2</sup> оно is not so frequently used as онъ; its place is often taken by это, ro, this, that.

#### LESSON VIII

And so 'I did not like the village' is 'The village did not please me,' i.e. Село́ мнѣ ненра́вилось [sətó miɛ nənróvitʌs], the thing or person liked being the subject of the Russian verb, while the name of the person who is pleased is in the dative case:

Это имъ ненра́вилось [éta jim nenrávitas], They did not like that.

39. The dative is governed by certain prepositions, *e.g.* къ (ко) [k, ko, kʌ], *towards*:

> къ отцу́ [katšú], towards the father. къ нимъ [knim], towards them, to them. ко мнѣ [ka miɛ], towards me, to me.

Note.—RO is used instead of K<sup>T</sup> before words beginning with a combination of consonants difficult to pronounce; K, M and H together would be rather awkward; the o is inserted after K.

#### VOCABULARY

кня́зь, я [kūaš], prince	нра́виться A [nrávitsʌ], to be pleas-
медвѣ́дь, я [mədvé <sup>i</sup> t], bear	ing
сего́дня [səvódňʌ], to-day, lit. of this	сожалѣ́ніе [sʌʒʌl̈́ènjə], regret
day	къ сожалѣ́нію [ksлʒлlé́nju], to one's
до́ма [dóms], at home (with verbs of	regret, unfortunately
rest)	въ лѣсъ [vlɛs], into the forest (acc.)
потому́ что [pлtлmúʃtл], because	въ лѣсу́ [vlasú], in the forest (Par. 46)
ви́дѣть A [v́íd̀ət̀], to see	въ садъ [fsot (d)], into the garden
ингдѣ́ [nigdɛ́], nowhere	въ саду́ [fsʌdú], in the garden

#### EXERCISES

A. Add the necessary terminations where they are lacking in the following phrases :

(1) Мо- оте́ц- тепе́рь о́чень ста́р- человѣк-. (2) Нашдо́бр- другъ. (3) Ва́ш- хоро́ш- ку́шань-. (4) Э́т- бѣ́л- хлѣ́бъ. (5) Его́ спѣ́л- я́блок-. (6) Мо- ки́сл- питьё. (7) Онъ ходи́лъ въ больш- лѣсъ. (8) Оно́ бы́л- въ саду́. (9) Я ходи́лъ къ мо́р-(10) Онъ ходи́лъ к- миѣ. (11) Э́т- плох- питьё. (12) Чёрнхлѣбъ. (13) Хоро́ш- овёсъ. (14) Ма́леньк- я́блоко. (15) Ма́леньк- осёлъ. (16) Къ отц-. (17) У отц-. (18) Для бра́т-. (19) У старик-. (20) Трн сел-. (21) Четы́р- сара́-. (22) У геро́-. (23) Наш- глу́п- ма́лекьк- сынъ. (24) Я ходи́лъ къ мужик-. (25) Э́то миѣ пра́вил-. (26) На́ше си́н- не́бо ему́ пра́вил-. (27) Безъ пить-. B. Translate :

(1) Си́ній цвѣть мо́ря и не́ба мнѣ о́чень нра́вился; большо́й лѣсъ миѣ нра́вился, но ва́ше ма́ленькое село́ миѣ о́чень ма́ло нра́вилось.
 (2) Сего́дня оди́нъ человѣкъ хотѣлъ ви́дѣть медвѣдя въ лѣсу́.
 (3) Киязь, другъ царя́, гоня́лъ медвѣдя.
 (4) Э́то ему́ сказа́лъ мужи́къ.
 (5) Пото́мъ я ви́дѣлъ э́того человѣка въ саду́ мужика́.
 (6) Къ сожалѣнію у мужика́ больно́й ма́ленькій сыпъ; сего́дия онъ былъ у э́того старика́, кото́рый въ саду́ рабо́талъ.
 (7) Вку́сное ку́шанье ему́ нра́вилось, потому́ что онъ хотѣлъ ѣсть.
 (8) Большо́е зда́ніе, кото́рое ты тамъ ви́дѣлъ,—дворе́цъ кня́зя.
 (9) Мо́й дру́гъ не до́ма тепе́рь.
 (10) Къ сожалѣ́нію я его́ отца́ нигдѣ пе могъ ви́дѣть; онъ шкогда́ не́ былъ <sup>1</sup> до́ма.

Большое зданіе, которое ты тамъ видълъ, — дворецъ царя.

С. Вопросы:

(1) Что тебѣ пра́вилось?
(2) Что тебѣ непра́вилось?
(3) Что хотѣ́лъ ви́дъть человѣ́къ?
(4) Когда́ онъ его́ хотѣ́лъ ви́дъ́ть?
(5) Гдѣ былъ медвѣ́дь?
(6) Како́въ у мужика́ сынъ?
(7) До́ма ли онъ сего́дня?
(8) Почему́ ты не могъ ви́дъ́ть его́ отца́?
(9) Кого́ ты не могъ ви́дъ́ть?

D. Translate into Russian :

(1) I wished to see my friend to-day, but unfortunately he was not at home; that is why I could not see him. (2) In summer he often used to go towards the sea, because he liked the blue sea. (3) The little village that I saw there, I did not like. (4) The intelligent boy gave the old man tasty food and drink. (5) Did he wish to see the little building that you [thou] showed me? (6) There is the great palace where the czar's friend lived ! (7) Why was the poor man sowing oats? (8) He gave a lot of oats to this ass. (9) Had he not a kind friend ? \*

\* Pars. 123, 124 may be studied at this point and the future tense be practised with any A verb.

### LESSON IX

40. The word ходи́лъ, past tense of ходи́ть, has been frequently used. It means 'one was in the way of going,' 'one was in the habit of going,' as when we say in English, 'When he was young, not every boy went to school.' If we wish to say that 'one was actually going,' as when we say in English, 'He was going along the street when that happened,' we must use the Russian verb

*masc.* онъ шёлъ [on sot], *neut.* оно́ шло [лио́ sto].

<sup>1</sup> Note the accentuation in не былъ.

41. Notice the following idioms illustrating the use of the infinitive:

Что дѣлать? [{to dɛ́tʌt], What is to be done?

Что мнѣ (емý) дѣ́лать? [ʃto miɛ (jəmú) dἑłʌt], What am I (is he) to do? Возмо́жно ли рабо́тать лѣ́томъ въ лѣсу́? [vʌzmóʒnʌ li rʌbótʌt lἑtʌm vləsú], Is it possible to work in the forest in summer?

— Нельзя́ работать зимою (-о́й) въ лъсу́ [nolżú глоо́тлі żimóju (о́ї) vlasú], It is impossible to work in the forest in winter.

42. Four cases of the noun have been given. But there are altogether six cases in Russian. (Only one or two nouns have a special form for the *Vocative*.) The remaining two are the *Instrumental* and *Prepositional*.

Their endings are identical for masculine and neuter nouns, viz.

HARD FORM	SOFT FORM
instr. омъ	емъ (ёмъ <i>if accented</i> )
prep. Ť	ъ

43. The complete declension in the singular of the five types of nouns is, therefore, as follows :

(The plurals are printed here, but as no plural forms will be used before Lesson XX., they need not be learned at this point.)

HARD FORMS						
	Masc.		Neut.			
	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.		
nom.	оте́цъ	отцы́	село́	сёла		
gen.	отца́	отцо́въ	села́	сёлъ		
dat.	отцу́	отца́мъ	селу́	сёламъ		
acc.	отца́	отцо́въ	село́	сёла		
i nstr.	отцо́мъ <sup>1</sup> [лtsóm]	отца́ми	село́мъ [sətóm]	сёлами		
prep.	отцѣ [atšé]	отца́хъ	селѣ́ [ṡəĺɛ́]	сёлахъ		
	SOFT FORMS					
	Masculines					
	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.		
nom.	царь	цари́	repóii	геро́н		
gen.	царя́	царе́й	геро́я	геро́евъ		
	царю́	царя́мъ	геро́ю	геро́ямъ		
acc.	царя́	царе́й	геро́я	геро́евъ		
instr.	царёмъ [tsлióm]	царя́ми	геро́емъ [ġərójəm]	геро́ямн		
prep.	цари [tsлié]	царя́хъ	repóڻ [ġərójə]	геро́яхъ		

<sup>1</sup> After ж, ч, ш, щ, щ, unaccented o never appears: its place is taken by e, e.g. съ това́рищемъ [staváři]t∫om], with the companion.

54

### LESSON IX

#### Neuter

	Sing.	Plur.
nom.	мо́ре	моря́
gen.	мо́ря	море́й <sup>1</sup>
dat.	мо́рю	моря́мъ
acc.	мо́ре	моря́
instr.	мо́ремъ [móiəm]	моря́ми
prep.	мóрѣ <sup>1</sup> [mór̀ə]	моря́хъ

(a) It must be remembered that masculine names of *inanimate things* have the same form in the accusative as in the nominative.

44. The instrumental case is used after certain prepositions, e.g.

съ ма́льчикомъ [smá<sup>i</sup>ltʃikʌm], with the boy со<sup>2</sup> мно́ю (мно́й) [sʌmnóju (mnо́i)], with me пе́редъ село́мъ [p̀ér̀ət s̀əł̀óm], before the village за столо́мъ<sup>3</sup> [zʌstʌł̀óm], behind the table

### VOCABULARY

това́рнщъ, a [tʌvóiiʃtʃ], companion до́микъ, a [dómik], little house мини́стръ [ministr], minister столъ, á [stol, st.lá], table коро́ль, á [kʌrôi], king рубль, á [rup, rublá], rouble ма́сло, a [móslʌ], butter окно́, á [ʌknó, ó], window кре́сло, a [kiśslʌ, ʌ], arm-chair стоя́ть A [st.jáit], to stand сто́ить A [stóit], to cost, be worth краси́вый [kr.sívī], beautiful некраси́вый [ǹekrʌsívī], not pretty, ugly

могу́чій [mʌgútʃi], powerful деревя́нный [dəiəvǎnĭ], wooden ка́менный [kánənĭ], of stone
со мнбю [sʌmnóju], with me
съ тобою (oй) [stʌbóju (boǐ)], with thee
съ нимъ [snim], with him, with it
съ ни́ми [sními], with them
съ э́тимъ [sétim], with thes
съ тъ́мъ [stɛm], with that (adj.or pron.)
съ къ́мъ? [skɛm], with whom ?
чъ́мъ? [tʃɛm], with what ?
обыкнове́нно [ʌbïknʌvɛ́ɛnʌ], usually

### Exercises

A. Give the dative, accusative, and instrumental of геро́й, дворе́цъ, рубль, ма́сло, сожалѣ́ніе.

B. Translate into Russian :

(1) Towards me, thee, him, that, whom, the table, the boy. (2) Into [requires the accusative] the garden, house, forest, village. (3) Behind me, thee, him (it), that, whom, the building. (4) With the father, czar, hero, sca, man, stag. (5) For me, them, thee, him (it), that, whom, the little house [one word].

<sup>1</sup> Nouns in -ie like зда́ніе have prep. sing. in -in and gen. pl. in -in.

<sup>2</sup> See note to ko in Par. 39.

<sup>3</sup> This is the Russian phrase for *at table*. With verbs of motion 3a and передъ require the accusative.

C. Translate :

(1) Могу́чій князь съ мини́стромъ. (2) Вку́сный хлѣ́бъ безъ ма́сла. (3) Спѣлое я́блоко ему́ иенра́вилось. (4) Его́ до́брый другъ жилъ за́ лѣсомъ.<sup>1</sup> (5) Одно́ кре́сло стоя́ло пе́редъ окно́мъ, а друго́е стоя́ло у стола́ (пе́редъ столо́мъ). (6) Э́тотъ столъ ие сто́илъ четы́ре рубля́. (7) Ма́ленькій ма́льчикъ игра́лъ съ това́рищемъ въ саду́. (8) Бѣдный сынъ стоя́лъ съ отцо́мъ пе́редъ э́тимъ окно́мъ. (9) Съ кѣмъ онъ шёлъ къ мо́рю? (10) У меня́ былъ тогда́ ка́менный до́микъ съ сара́емъ. (11) Ско́лько сто́ило э́то деревя́нное кре́сло? (12) У короля́ былъ краси́вый садъ.

#### Сколько стоило это деревянное кресло?

#### D. Translate into Russian :

(1) Why was the boy's companion standing [why stood, etc.] behind the arm-chair? (2) I saw him when he was going towards the house. (3) When did you see [thou sawest] the father with his son? (4) I told you [thee] that. (5) Was he going towards the window? (6) In summer I used often to go into that wood. (7) The boy's father is there now with (his) companion. (8) He was going towards him. (9) The peasant's son was never with me at table. (10) How much was that little house worth ? (11) The wooden table, that used to stand before the window, was worth only three roubles. (12) To-day I saw the boy's companion. (13) Why was he there to-day? (14) Did you [thou] see the little stone house behind the garden ? (15) No. I was never in the garden. (16) He used often to go towards the sea. (17) The great stone building that you saw there was not their palace. (18) Once he was going home with them. (19) (With) what did he usually do that? (20) Before whom was he standing ? (21) What is he to do? (22) He never saw the man; that is why he could not tell you where he (was). (23) It is impossible to speak with his friend. (24) Is it possible to work in the forest in winter?

### LESSON X

45. The Prepositional case is never found without a preposition : hence its name. Prepositions requiring this case are : o (written also объ and о́бо), на, въ, при, e.g.

Онъ говориять о до́мѣ [on gavaiít a dóinə], He was speaking of the house.

<sup>1</sup> Note the accentuation.

обо<sup>1</sup>миѣ, о тебѣ, о нёмъ, объ<sup>2</sup> э́томъ, о томъ [льдати́є, лі́оbє́, ли́о́м, лbétлm, лtóm], of, about, concerning me, thee, him, this, that.

на стояѣ [na stalé], on the table.

въ огоро́дѣ [vagaródə], in the kitchen-garden.

BO <sup>1</sup> MH<sup>\*</sup>b, B<sup>\*</sup> TEO<sup>\*</sup>b, B<sup>\*</sup> H<sup>\*</sup>EM<sup>\*</sup>b, B<sup>\*</sup> J<sup>\*</sup>OM<sup>\*</sup>b, B<sup>\*</sup> TOM<sup>\*</sup>b, V<sup>\*</sup>m<sup>\*</sup>b, H<sup>\*</sup>o<sup>\*</sup>b, V<sup>\*</sup>OM<sup>\*</sup>b, V<sup>\*</sup>b, V<sup>\*</sup>

при нёмъ [pri nom], in his entourage, in his presence.

46. A number of very common masculine nouns, *nearly* all monosyllabic, have a form in  $-\hat{y}$  following the prepositions Bb and Ha. Bb  $\pi \hat{b} c \hat{y}^3$  and Bb  $c a \pi \hat{y}$  have already been given in the Vocabulary to Lesson VIII. Such are

на полу́ [плрлі́ц́], on the floor. на берегу́ [плр̀аřэдú], on the shore. на верху́ [плр̀аřзú], on top. на лугу́ [плі́цдú], on the meadow. на мосту́ [плі́цдú], on the meadow. въ поду́ [vgлdú], in the bridge. въ году́ [vgлdú], in the year. въ цвѣту́ [ftsvətú], in bloom.

(a) The y is always accented in these phrases.

### VOCABULARY

вътздъ, a [vjɛst, zdл], entrance по́лъ, a [pot], floor берегъ, a [berak, ga], bank, shore ве́рхъ, a [verx], top part го́дъ, a [qod (t), d.], year лу́гъ, a [tuk], meadow мо́сть, a [most], bridge перо́, á [pəró], pen 0, Объ, обо [о, л, ль (лр), о́ьл], about, of, concerning въ (во) [v, f, v., vo], in Ha [ns, na], on при [pri], near, at, in the time of о нихъ [mix], about them о комъ? [...kóm], about whom ? о чёмъ? [.t[óm], about what? ду́мать 131 A [dúmst], to think <sup>1</sup> See note to ko in Par. 39.

гуля́ть 131 A [quldit], to go walking (for pleasure) ку́шать 131 A [kú[st], to eat посла́ть [pastá<sup>i</sup>t], to send стро́нть A [stróit], to build онъ пошёлъ [on pasot], he went (once) лежа́ть A [ləzáit], to lie, recline наконе́цъ [nsksiiɛ́ts], at last, in the endчтобы [[tobi], in order that то́же [tóʒə], also та́кже [tágzə], also при са́момъ вътэдъ [pri sóm.m vjézdə], near, at the very entrance зачѣ́мъ? [zʌt[ɛ́m], with what object? why?

<sup>2</sup> Used before vowels.

<sup>3</sup> Cf. въ лѣсь in Vocabulary to Lesson II.

#### EXERCISES

#### A. Translate into Russian :

(1) He was speaking of you [thee], him, me, that, this, the floor, the bridge, the shore, the garden, the forest, the window, the companion, the sea, the regret. (2) The pen was lying on the table, on the bridge, on the floor. (3) I was walking on the shore, in the garden, in the kitchen-garden, in the forest; he was with me [in my presence].

#### B. Translate :

(1) Οди́нъ си́льный ца́рь стро́илъ большо́й ка́менный дворе́цъ.
(2) Пе́редъ э́тимъ зда́ніемъ былъ о́чень краси́вый садъ.
(3) Но при са́момъ въѣздѣ въ садъ стоя́лъ ма́ленькій деревя́нный до́микъ.
(4) Э́то ненра́вилось царю́.
(5) Въ э́томъ до́микѣ жилъ бѣ́дный мужи́къ, а съ нимъ его́ оте́цъ.
(6) Лѣ́томъ царь ча́сто гуля́лъ съ мини́стромъ въ саду́.
(7) Разъ онъ говори́лъ съ това́рищемъ о томъ мужикѣ.
(8) Наконе́цъ царь посла́лъ мини́стра къ мужику́, что́бы онъ купи́лъ ста́рый до́микъ.
(9) Когда́ мини́стръ пошёлъ въ огоро́дъ, человѣ́къ не́ былъ до́ма; онъ рабо́талъ тогда́ въ лѣсу́.
(10) Стари́къ та́кже не́ былъ до́ма, а то́лько о́чень ма́ленькій сынъ мужика́ былъ за столо́мъ.
(11) Ку́шалъ чёрпый хлѣ́бъ съ ма́сломъ, а къ сожадѣ́нію тотъ ма́льчикъ не могъ сказа́ть мини́стру, гдѣ тогда́ былъ оте́цъ.
(12) Что дѣ́лать?

### С. Вопросы:

(1) Что стро́илъ царь?
(2) Что стоя́ло пе́редъ зда́ніемъ?
(3) Кто жилъ въ э́томъ до́микъ?
(4) Оди́нъ [alone, by himself] ли онъ тамъ жилъ?
(5) Гдъ гуля́лъ царь?
(6) Съ къ́мъ онъ гуля́лъ?
(7) О комъ онъ говори́лъ одна́жды?
(8) Куда́ царь посла́лъ мини́стра?
(9) Зачъ́мъ?
(10) Кого́ мини́сть ви́дълъ у мужика́?
(11) Почему́ мужи́къ не́ былъ до́ма?

#### D. Translate into Russian :

(1) The old man's wooden house used to stand at the very entrance to [BD with acc.] the king's beautiful stone palace. (2) The powerful king wished to buy that little house. (3) One day the king was walking with the minister and saw the peasant at work [saw how the peasant worked] in the garden. (4) The peasant saw the minister and sent his son to him. (5) When the king's minister was on the bridge, the peasant's son, who was not a stupid boy and spoke Russian very well, went towards him and said to him, "The little house was grandfather's [use y with genit.]. He never wished to give it to the king."

# LESSON XI

# LESSON XI

47. The pronouns that have been introduced in Lessons I to X are :

A. PERSONAL PRONOUNS				
	First	Second	Third	
nom.	я, І	ты, thou	онъ, оно́, he, it	оші, they <sup>1</sup>
gen.	меня́, of me	тебя́, etc.	(н)его́, etc.	(II) HXT, of them, their
dat.	мнѣ, etc.	тебѣ́	(н)ему́	(II)IIMTE, to them
ace.	меня́	тебя́	(н)его́	(н)ихъ, etc.
instr.	мно́ю (о́й)	тобою (ой)	(п)имъ	(н)и́ми
prep.	мпъ	тебѣ	нёмъ	ШИХЪ

B. Possessives

мо́н, моё, <i>my</i> , <i>mine</i>	нашъ, на́ше, our, ours
тво́й, твоё, thy, thine	вашъ, ва́ше, your, yours

For the third person there is no possessive : eró,<sup>2</sup> the genitive of OHD, is used as the equivalent of his or its; HXT, genitive plural of OHH, stands for their.

	C. DEMONSTRATIVE PRONO	UNS AND ADJECTIVES
	Masc. Neut.	Masc. Neut.
nom.	тотъ то, that	этоть это, this
gen.	τογό	этого
dat.	тому́	этому
acc.	тотъ то	этотъ это
	or toró	or э́того
instr.	т бмъ 🕯	э́тимъ
prep.	томъ	этомъ
	D. INTERROGATIVES	AND RELATIVES
	Masc.	Neut.
nom.	который	кото́рое, which, that; which?
acc.	который (inanimate)	кото́рое
	Singular and	l Plural
nom.	KTO? <sup>3</sup> who?	что? <sup>3</sup> what? which?
gen.	кого́	чего́
dat.	кому́	чему́
acc.	кого́	ЧТО
instr.	къмъ	чѣмъ
prep.	КОМЪ	чёмъ
<sup>1</sup> Fem. f	orm is ont. 2 S	See Lesson XXIX for use of свой.

<sup>3</sup> This word is also used as a relative.

ut ime I istophi 2 ac LESSON XI

	Masc.	Neut.
nom.	како́въ?	каково́? of what sort?
acc.	како́въ (inanimate)	каково́
nom.	како́й? (attrib. adj.)	какое? of what sort? which?
ace.	како́й (inanimate)	како́е

### E. INDEFINITE

никто́ [nixtó], no one, and ничто́ [nijtó], nothing, are declined like кто and что, e.g. in the genitive case they have the form никого́, ничего́ [nikʌvó, nitjəvó]. When compounded with prepositions the negative particle is separated from the pronoun by the preposition, e.g. ни съ къмъ [niském], ни о чёмъ [niʌtjóm], with no one, about nothing.

The forms ктó-то [xtó-tʌ], ктó-либо [xtó-libʌ], кто-нибу́дь [xtonibú<sup>i</sup>i], and чтó-то [ſtó-tʌ], чтó-либо [ʃtó-libʌ], что-нибу́дь [ʃto-nibú<sup>i</sup>t], standing for some one, any one and something, anything, are in very frequent use, but in this book the forms given in this paragraph (E) will be little used except никто and ничего.

/ Exercises

A. Supply the proper forms of

я, ты, онъ, это, кто, что, тотъ

after each of the prepositions

для, передъ, къ, на, о, съ.

B. Translate :

У меня́; безъ кого́?; о чёмъ?; за мно́ю; у тебя́; безъ него́; съ кѣмъ?; о нёмъ; въ тебѣ; съ тобо́ю; на чёмъ?; о ко́мъ онъ говори́лъ?; о чёмъ?; кому́ онъ э́то говори́лъ?; съ э́тимъ; къ э́тому; каково́ бы́ло э́то зда́ніе?; перо́, кото́рое лежа́ло тамъ; ма́ленькій домъ, кото́рый стоя́лъ при въѣ́здѣ; како́въ былъ его́ сынъ?; ты пошёлъкъ пему́; чѣмъ?; къ сожалѣ́нію; я никогда́ не сказа́лъ э́того. л никогда не сказалъ этого.

C. Translate into Russian :

<sup>A</sup> (1) The great bridge that you saw yesterday. (2) That black arm-chair that used to stand before the window. (3) Where was his palaee ? (4) What was on the floor ? (5) Who had a friend ? (6) Your oats. (7) His corn. (8) At their house. (9) Who told him that ? (10) What did he tell you [thee]? (11) For me. (12) Without him. (13) With you [thec]. (14) For him. (15) About me. (16) With what? [no preposition required : use instrumental]. (17) What was I speaking about ? (18) I did not know that. (19) He did not know you [thee]. (20) Our building; your companion; his table; that butter; my food; his drink. (21) Behind it. (22) I liked it. (23) You liked it. (24) He liked it. (25) He never saw it.

### ACCENTUATION

### NOUNS THAT HAVE OCCURRED IN LESSONS I-XI

48. Nouns that preserve throughout the singular the accent of the nominative, e.g. дидъ, дида; огоро́дъ, огоро́да.

дѣдъ	лѣсъ	оле́нь
сынъ	хлѣбъ	медвѣ́дь
внукъ	сыръ	пе́бо
братъ	огоро́дъ	я́блоко
человѣ́къ	садъ	кре́сло
ма́льчикъ	цвѣтъ	ма́сло
това́рищъ	мостъ	мо́ре
другъ	верхъ <sup>1</sup>	зда́ніе
министръ	годъ	сожалѣ́ніе
работникъ	въѣ́здъ	село́
домъ	бе́регъ	окно́
полъ	сара́й	питьё
до́микъ	геро́й	ку́шанье
лугъ	КНЯЗЬ	

The forms in -ý after въ ог на (see Par. 46) are exceptional.

49. Nouns which have the accent on the termination, e.g. стари́къ, старика́.

стари́къ	коро́ль
мужи́къ	царь
столъ	ячме́нь
оте́цъ	рубль
дворе́цъ	
овёсъ	
осёлъ	

50. Observe that no neuter nouns occur in the second list : in neuter nouns the accent does not change in the singular.

51. The PREPOSITIONS that have already occurred are :

with the genitive : безъ, у, для dative: KT (KO) accusative: Bb,2 Ha,2 3a3 instrumental: за,<sup>3</sup> съ (со), пе́редъ<sup>3</sup> (пе́редо) prepositional: 0,  $Bb^2$  (B0),  $Ha^2$  при

<sup>1</sup> Bepxómb [vorxóm] with the verb fixate means as the top, astride a horse, <sup>2</sup> See Lesson XV. mounted.

<sup>3</sup> With verbs of motion governs the accusative.

### LESSON XII

#### §§ 52-54

### LESSON XII

52. Feminine nouns end in

-а, е.д. ла́па [то́рл], paw -я, е.д. ня́ня [то́п́л], nurse -ь, е.д. ночь [notʃ], night

53. Nouns in -a and -я are declined thus:

	HARD FOR	M	SOFT FORM	
	Sing.	Plur.	Sing.	Plur.
nom.	<b>πάπα [</b> ἰάpʌ]	ла́пы	ня́ня [ňáůл]	ня́ни
gen.	ла́пы [łópï]	ла́пъ	ня́ни [ňóňi]	ня́нь
dat.	<b>ла́пъ́ [t</b> ɑ́p̀ə]	ла́памъ	ня́нѣ [ǹáǹə]	ня́нямъ
acc.		ла́пы	<b>ня́ню</b> [ňáň <b>u</b> ]	ня́нь
instr	{πάποϋ [ἰάρ∧ĭ] \πάποю [ἰάρ∧ju]	ла́пами	∫ня́ней [nɑ́nəĭ]	ня́нями
			(ня́нею [nánəju]	
prep.	<b>πάπѣ [ť</b> άṗə]	ла́пахъ	ня́нѣ [nánə]	ня́няхъ

*Note.*—The plurals need not be learned at this point, as no plural forms will be used before Lesson XX.

(a) After  $\kappa$ ,  $\Gamma$ , X,  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{H}$ ,  $\mathcal{II}$ ,  $\mathcal{II}$ ,  $\mathcal{II}$  the vowels  $\mathfrak{H}$ ,  $\mathfrak{H}$ ,  $\mathfrak{H}$  never appear; they are replaced by  $\mathfrak{H}$ , a, y, *e.g.* 

соба́ка [sʌbákʌ], a dog gen. соба́ки [sʌbáki]

(b) After ж, ч, ш, щ, ц, unaccented o never appears; it is replaced by e, e.g.

кóжа [kóʒʌ], *leather, hide* instr. кóжей (ею) [kóʒəĭ (əju)] пти́ца [pṫítsʌ], *bird* instr. пти́цей (ею) [pṫítšəĭ (əju)]

(c) For the declension of nouns in -iя see Россія in Voc. XXXIV. Dat. and prep. sing. in -iи; gen. pl. in -iй.

54. Some nouns accented on the termination draw back the accent in the accusative, e.g.

вода́ [vʌdú], water acc. во́ду [vódu]

### LESSON XIII

cloie-hidown

63

### VOCABULARY

да́ма, ы [dó́mʌ, ī], lady соба́ка, н [sʌbókʌ, i], dog ко́шка, н [sʌbókʌ, i], cat же́нщина, ы [ʒɛ́n]tʃinʌ, ī], woman служа́нка, н [słuʒánkʌ, i], servant сестра́, ы [sɨsətrá, ī], sister ба́бушка, н [bóbuʃkʌ, i], grandmother дѣвочка, н [dɛ́vʌtʃkʌ, i], little girl ня́ня, н [táňʌ, i], child's nurse ла́па, ы [tápʌ, ī], paw ко́жа, н [kóʒʌ, i], skin, leather

gebyunka - girl Exercise

ιμέя, μ [ʃéjʌ, ſéi], neck
вода́, ӹ [vʌdɑ́, ¹], water
пти́ца, ы [pṫítsʌ, ĩ], bird
она́ [ʌnɑ́], she
моя́ (fem.) [mʌjɑ́], my, mine
твоя́ (fem.) [tvʌjɑ́], thy, thine
eၷ́ (not an adjective : genitive of ohá)
[jəjö, jəjɑ́], of her, her, hers
на́ша ¹ [nɑ́ʃʌ], our, ours
ва́ша [vɑ́ʃʌ], your, yours
э́та; та [ἑtʌ, ta], this; that

Translate into Russian :

Without water, at the grandmother's, for the nurse, towards the lady, into the water, behind the servant, with the cat, in front of the dog, about the lady, in the water, on the neck, your dog, our eat, her servant, her father, she is our servant, the boy's nurse, the servant's son, his dog's neck, that lady, the colour of the bird, the grandmother's house, the girl's bread, for the woman, with the woman, she is my nurse, she is not his sister.

The little boy lived in that house with his grandmother. He was speaking of his sister. The nurse has two  $[\Pi B^*h, fem.]$  cats and a dog. What did he tell the lady [dat.] about her servant? I did not know the woman.

### LESSON XIII

55. Feminine adjectives end in  $-a\pi$  or  $-\pi\pi$ . The full form of the *nominative singular* of the adjective is therefore :

#### HARD FORM

М. бога́тый [bʌgótī] F. бога́тая [bʌgótʌjə] N. бога́тое [bʌgátʌjə], rich
 М. больно́й [bʌ<sup>i</sup>lnói] F. больна́я [bʌ<sup>i</sup>lnájʌ] N. больно́е [bʌ<sup>i</sup>lnójə], ill
 Sorr Form

M. си́ній [šíňi] F. си́няя [šíňəjə] N. си́нее [šíňəjə], blue

56. The complete nominative singular of оди́нъ is :

оди́нъ, одна́, одно́ [лdín, лdná, лdnó], one, a certain, alone.

<sup>1</sup> The complete declension of нашъ and the other possessives will be found in Pars. 104, 105.

#### VOCABULARY

кусо́къ,<sup>1</sup> ка́ [kusók, kuská], piece ведро́, á [v̀ədró], pail мя́со, a [másʌ], meat чи́стый [t∫ístī], clean гря́зный [gīáznī], dirty ру́сскій [rúski], Russian  а́нглійскій [ongliski or óngliski], English
 францу́зскій [frʌntsúski], French
 есть [jest], there is, there are
 есть ли? [jest li], is there? are there?

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate:

(1) У соба́ки кусо́къ мя́са. (2) Бѣлая ла́па ко́шки. (3) Ста́рая ня́ня́ дѣ́вочки. (4) У него́ бога́тая ба́бушка. (5) До́брая ру́сская да́ма съ дѣ́вочкой—въ саду́. (6) Зачѣ́мъ чёрпая ко́шка на столѣ́? (7) Она́ тепе́рь на полу́. (8) Я ви́дѣлъ да́му съ соба́кой въ лѣсу́. (9) Ма́ленькій ру́сскій ма́льчикъ игра́лъ съ ня́нею на мосту́. (10) У ко́шки краси́вая ше́я. (11) Сего́дня моя́ молода́я сестра́ на лугу́. (12) Что онъ сего́дня далъ соба́къ́? (13) Я не говори́лъ о соба́къ́. (14) Хоро́шій хлѣбъ безъ ма́сла и мя́са ненра́вился служа́нкѣ. (15) Гря́зная вода́ въ ведрѣ́; чи́стая вода́ въ саду́.

Грязная вода въ ведръ; чистая вода въ саду.

B. Translate:

(1) There is another dog behind the arm-chair. (2) The Russian peasant was eating a piece of bread and [say with] butter. (3) His son used to live in summer at his grandmother's. (4) I never knew her grandmother. (5) The young man went towards the lady; he was Russian but he spoke French and English very well. (6) I have one servant; she is my old nurse. (7) The woman's dirty house did not please him. (8) Did you see the dog's paw ? (9) I did not see his dog anywhere [1 nowhere not saw]. (10) There it is. (11) Why was your little sister standing in front of the house ? (12) She was playing with the eat, that is why she was in the garden. (13) It is possible to work in the house without a servant. (14) What is the woman to do ? (15) It was impossible to sleep, because the boy was playing with (his) brother and sister in the garden. (16) Has the boy two sisters ? [éCTЬ JHI y etc.].

<sup>1</sup> Declined like оте́ць: the o disappears in every case except the nominative singular.

#### LESSON XIV

### LESSON XIV

57. The feminine form of the past tense ends in -ла, e.g.

Она́ ду́мала, гони́ла, спала́, была́ [лиа́ dúmata, ganáta, spatá bītá], She was thinking (thought), hunted, slept, was.

58. The complete singular of the past tense is therefore

спалъ, спала́, спа́ло [spot, spata, spata]

думалъ, думала, думало [dúmat, dúmata, dúmata]

The accent does not always remain on the same syllable in all three genders. Wherever the termination is accented, the feminine form, and if necessary the neuter form, will be indicated.

59. The feminine form of онъ is она́ [ли́], *she*. The singular is declined thus:

nom.		011ά [Δ <b>n</b> ά]
gen.		(п)eя́ [jəjó, jəjá]
dat.		(п)е́й [jе́ĭ]
acc.		(н)её [jəjó]
instr.		(н)е́ю [jéju]
prep.	(0)	не́й [лп́е́ĭ]

As with the masculine and neuter forms, the oblique cases, when governed by prepositions, must have the H prefixed.

### VOCABULARY

ба́ба, ы [bábл], peasant-woman	стару́ха, н [stлrúxл], old woman
герои́ня, и [ġərлíhл], heroine	виу́чка, и [vnút]ka], granddaughter
цари́ца, ы [tsлřítsл], czarina	э́ту [étu] is the accusative of э́та, this
са́мка, и (оле́ня) [sómkл (лléínл)],	Ty [tu] is the accusative of Ta, that
hind, doe (female of stag)	мать [ma <sup>it</sup> ], mother
подруга, и [p.drúgs], female friend	могъ, могла́, могло́ [mog, magtá,
до́чка, и [dót∫kʌ], little daughter	mʌɡtó], could

Нѣтъ тако́го дружка́, какъ родна́я ма́тушка [ist tʌkóvʌ druʒká, kak rʌdnájʌ mátu[kʌ], There is no such good friend as one's own dear mother.

### EXERCISE

(1) Rewrite Exercises B and D of Lesson VIII, substituting feminine for masculine forms wherever that is possible.

(2) Rewrite Exercises B and D of Lesson X, treating them in the same fashion. Substitute подруга for мини́стръ.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Par. 131 may be learned at this point and the present tense be practised with any verb marked 131.

### LESSON XV

### LESSON XV

60. B' and Ha are used with either accusative or prepositional (cf. Vocab. VIII). In the simplest instances, the rule that decides which case is to be used, is that with either of these two words the accusative suggests motion towards; the prepositional does not. In less obvious idioms this principle is of doubtful utility.

Compare :

Она́ легла́ на́ полъ<sup>1</sup> [Aná lagtá ná pAt], She lay down on the floor (i.e. she performed an act involving motion),

with

Она́ лежа́ла на полу́ [And lezdta na patú], She was lying on the floor (i.e. she was occupying a certain position, no suggestion of motion being present).

Similarly:

(1) Она́ сѣла на стулъ (acc.) [лпа́ śє́lл nл stul], She sat down on the chair.

Она́ сидѣла на сту́ль́ (prep.) [and sidéta na stúla], She was sitting on the chair.

(2) Онъ пошёлъ (or вошёлъ, entered) въ садъ [on pasot (vasot) fsat], He went into the garden.

Онъ гуля́лъ въ саду́ [on gulot fsʌdú], He was walking in the garden (the motion was not from somewhere else into the garden).

In Онъ смотрѣ́лъ на игру́ (acc. feminine) [on smatiźł na igrú], He was looking at the game, the application of the principle can still be felt; the gaze was directed on to the game.

61. Some phrases :

на со́лнцѣ [пл sontsə] (prep. neut.), in the sun.

на у́лицъ́ [na úlitsə] (prep. fem.), in (on) the street.

на этомъ мѣстѣ [na étam inéstə] (prep. neut.), in that place.

на я́рмарку [пл jármarku] (acc. fem.), to the fair.

въ этомъ случат [vétam stút[aja], in that case.

въ лѣсу́ [vləsú], in the wood (cf. Par. 46).

62. The verb шёль has been employed already: its meaning was explained in Par. 40.

Note the following compounds of this verb:

Онъ вошёлъ [ou v.sot], went into, i.e. entered, is followed by the Οπά βοπιπά [ $\Delta n$ ά v $_{\Lambda}$ ]tá],  $\int preposition B<sub>J</sub>$  with the accusative, e.g. Ono βοπιπό [ $\Delta n$ ά v $_{\Lambda}$ ]tá],  $\int preposition B<sub>J</sub>$  with the accusative, e.g.

Она воніла́ въ домъ [лиа́ va [ta vdom].

<sup>1</sup> Notice the accentuation in this phrase.

LESSON XV 67

Онъ пришёлъ [on přijót], went, but in the direction of the speaker, i.e. came; generally followed by preposition 18ъ, e.g. Она пришла ко мить [ли́о při]íó kл můɛ].

Онъ прошёлъ [on prʌʃót], went through, i.e. traversed. Онъ нашёлъ [on nʌʃót], came upon, i.e. found. Онъ пошёлъ [on pʌʃót], went once (generally to some definite place). Онъ шёлъ ми́мо [on [ot inimʌ], was going past.

63. Compare with шёль and пришёль in Par. 62:

нёсь, несла́, несло́ [nos, nostá, nostá], carried, was carrying, and принёсь, принесла́, etc. [prinós, prinostá], brought.

(a) Observe that нёсь, like могь, has по л in the masculine. See also лёгь and спась in the following Vocabulary.

In Par. 239 is given a list of irregular verbs many of which show this feature.

### VOCABULARY

- сѣлъ [śɛł], he sat down (inf. сѣсть) лёгъ, легла́, легло́ [log, ləgłá,
- ləgtó], he lay down, i.c. he laid himself down
- сндѣ́лъ A [sidét], he was in a seat, he was sitting

лежа́лъ A [ləʒát], he was in a reclining position, i.e. he was lying смотрѣть A [sm.tŕé<sup>i</sup>t], to look (at) упа́лъ [upát], he fell

- спасъ, сла́, сло́ [spas, spastá, spastó], he etc. saved
- рѣка́, и́ (Par. 54) [reká], river
- посте́ль (nom. or acc.) (Par. 64) [pʌst́é<sup>i</sup>], bed
- мѣ́сто, а [ḿśstʌ], place
- неуже́ли [nəuzéli], can it be that? surely not?

#### Exercises

### A. Translate :

(1) Она́ пришла́ на я́рмарку. (2) Соба́ка старика́ лежа́ла на со́лнцѣ. (3) Чёрная ко́шка упа́ла въ рѣку́ [ог рѣку]. (4) Я ея́ нигдѣ́ не ви́дѣлъ, по э́тотъ ма́льчикъ её спасъ. (5) Она́ смотрѣ́ла на са́мку въ лѣсу́. (6) Онъ нёсъ ведро́ съ водо́ю. (7) Неуже́ли она́ спала́ на э́томъ мѣ́стѣ? (8) Въ э́томъ слу́чаѣ она́ ея́ не могла́ ви́дѣть. (9) Молода́я подру́га же́нщины прошла́ садъ и вошла́ въ лѣсъ. (10) Нельзя́ сказа́ть, гдѣ она́ тепе́рь. (11) Неуже́ли она́ упа́ла въ во́ду? (12) Вотъ она́!

Неужели она упала въ воду?

LESSON XVI

B. Translate into Russian:

(1) The poor peasant woman went into the house. (2) She never saw her in the house. (3) The czarina's daughter came to him. (4) The woman's friend went home with her. (5) The old man's granddaughter was going past the house [genit. after MMMO, which may be either an adverb or a preposition].
 (6) The poor old woman lay down on the bed. (7) She was lying on the floor. (8) The peasant woman's friend was at the fair (prep.). (9) Surely she did not bring it here [hither]? (10) It is not possible to sit on that chair.

C. Write sentences 4 and 6 of Ex. A in the feminine, and sentences 1, 7, 8, 9, 11 in the masculine.

### LESSON XVI

Same subjects as in Lesson XV.

# VOCABULARY

но́съ, a [nos], nose хвость, á [xvost], tail гла́зъ, a [qtas], eye молоко́, á [malakó], milk со́лнце, a [sontse], sun голова́, ы́ (Par. 54, acc. го́лову) [gAtAvá], head дра́ка [drákл], quarrel, fight кру́глый [krúglī], round ро́зовый [rózavi], pink зслёный [żəlóni], green ры́жій [ríʒī], brown, reddish дли́нный [dlínī], long сѣрый [sśrī], grey случилось [stutsitas], happened отогнать [Atagná<sup>i</sup>t], to drive away поступить [pastupit], to behave, to act

бро́сить [brósit], to throw убѣжа́ть [ybəzá<sup>it</sup>], to run away лить (лила́) A [lit (litá)], to pour пить (пила́) A [pit (pilá)], to drink стать [stá<sup>i</sup>t], to begin, to set about, to become сія́ть 131 A [sijáit], to shine какъ разъ [kak ras], just then, as it happened сюда́ [sudá], hither туда́ [tudá], thither снова [snóvл], anew, again вчера́ [ft[ərá], yesterday ме́жду (instr.) [mɛ́zdu], between TO, **UTO** [to [to], that which сщё [jəftf6], still, yet въ это время (neut.) [véta vréma], at that time, then

Она́ лила́ на ко́шку водо́й [ли́d litá n.kóʃku vʌdoĭ], She poured with water on to the cat, i.e. she poured water on the cat.

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

 Вчера́ добрый стари́къ сидъ́лъ здѣсь на э́томъ сту́лъ̀, кото́рый его́ внукъ принёсъ на бе́регъ. (2) Со́лнце ещё сія́ло.
 Онъ ви́дѣлъ, какъ тамъ лежа́ла сѣ́рая ко́шка. (4) Пото́мъ она́ ста́ла пить молоко́, кото́рое ей принесла́ а́шглі́йская дѣ́вочка. (5) Какъ разъ вошла́ въ садъ ры́жая соба́ка. (6) Пришла́ къ ко́шкѣ, хотѣ́ла отогна́ть её. (7) Не могла́. (8) Была́ дра́ка ме́жду соба́кой и ко́шкой. (9) Стари́къ смотрѣ́лъ на дра́ку. (10) Въ э́то вре́мя ста́рая ба́ба шла ми́мо. (11) Ви́дѣ́ла и <sup>1</sup> она́ то, что случи́лось. (12) Несла́ какъ разъ большо́е ведро́ съ водо́й и ста́ла лить водо́й на ко́шку и соба́ку. (13) Соба́ка убѣ̀жа́ла. (14) Ко́шка легла́ и сио́ва ста́ла спать па со́лнцѣ.

Кошка легла и снова стала спать на солнцъ.

В. Вопросы:

(1) Кто сидѣ́лъ на берсгу́ рѣки́? (2) Куда́ принёсъ его́ внукъ сту́лъ? (3) Кака́я была́ пого́да?<sup>2</sup> (4) Какова́ была́ ко́шка, кото́рая тамъ лежа́ла? (5) Како́й былъ у нея́ носъ? [pink] хвостъ? [long] глазъ? [green] (6) Кака́я была́ у нея́ голова́? [round]. (7) Что она́ ста́ла пить? (8) Кото́рое молоко́? (9) Что случи́лось какъ разъ? (10) Къ кому́ пришла́ соба́ка? (11) Что пото́мъ случи́лось? (12) На что смотрѣ́лъ стари́къ? (13) Какъ поступи́ла ста́рая ба́ба? (14) Что случи́лось съ [to, lit. with]собако́й? (15) А съ ко́шкой?

C. Rewrite Exercise A, substituting

стару́ха and вну́чка for стари́къ and вну́къ; мужи́къ for ба́ба; щено́къ, ка [ʃtʃənók, ʃtʃənká], *puppy*, for соба́ка; котёнокъ, ка [kʌiónʌk, kʌiónkʌ], kitten, for ко́шка.

D. Translate into Russian :

(1) I did not know what had happened yesterday. (2) It was fine weather [Ex. B 3] and she was sitting in the garden before the house. (3) Just then our little black puppy went into the garden and lay down in the sun. (4) The peasant-woman's stupid son say the log lying [how the dog lay] there and wished to drive it away. (5) He could not. (6) Then he behaved very badly. (7) He found a small bucket of [with] water that was standing behind the house. (8) He brought it, poured it on the puppy, and threw the puppy into the water; it was dirty water. (9) Then the young dog ran away and unfortunately it fell into the river. (10) But another boy came and saved it. (11) Then there was a scrimmage between the boy who (had) poured the water on the dog and the boy who (had) saved it. (12) The little-girl [*one word*] liked the cat's round head, its pink nose and green eye. (13) Surely she did not say that? (14) It is impossible to say what she used to do. (15) What is she to do now?

μ in this position means too, also.
 What sort of weather was it? (payóda).

# LESSON XVII

# LESSON XVII

64. Many feminine nouns end in -ь. They are declined thus: nom. дверь [dveir], door

nom. дверь [dvēir], door gen. двери [dvēir] dat. двери [dvēir] и асс. дверь [dvēir] instr. дверью [dvēir] prep. двери [dvēir]

Note.—(1) Nominative and accusative are identical.

(2) Genitive, dative, and prepositional are identical.

(3) Prepositional ends in -II.

65. мать and дочь are not declined like дверь (see Par. 86).

66. -ь is the one termination that, of itself, affords no exact indication of gender, for, as was seen in Par. 26, masculine nouns also have this ending. The feminines are in a majority.

#### VOCABULARY

тетра́дь, и [tətrá<sup>i</sup>t], copy-book ло́шадь, и [tóʃʌt], horse ночь, и [notʃ], night посте́ль, и [pʌstá́<sup>i</sup>t], bed о́сень, и [ósēn], autumn коню́шня, и [kʌńúʃīʌ], stable двѣ (fem. of два) [dvɛ], two тёнлый [tópłī], warm холо́дный [xʌlódnī], cold тёмный [tómnī], dark свѣтлый [svɛ́tlī], light

Sectorelawi- mas

Бѣдность (f.)—не порокъ [bє́dnast na parók], Poverty is no vice.

120 Hrs. - Le

#### EXERCISES

A. Indicate the meanings of the following prepositions and the case or cases they govern :

безъ, на, къ, передъ, въ, за, о, при.

Give one short sentence illustrating the meaning of each.

B. Indicate the meaning of the following nouns, indicate the gender of each by placing an adjective before each nominative, and give the dative and instrumental case of each noun :

царь, ба́ба, ведро́, ко́шка, това́рищъ, ми́со, виукъ, ночь, сара́й, подру́га, не́бо, рубль, дворе́цъ, оле́нь, мо́ре, кусо́къ, сожали̂ніе, са́мка, рѣка́, осёлъ, коню́шня.

C. Combine each of the nouns in B with gaa, gab or versipe.

# LESSON XVIII

### LESSON XVIII

67. The instrumental case, apart from its use after prepositions as explained in Par. 44, is also employed, as its name implies, to indicate the means by which, or instrument with which, an act is performed. Contrast

Она́ пришла́ съ да́мой [лпа́ přijtá sdamni], She came with, i.e. along with, the lady,

with

Она́ писа́ла перо́мъ, карандашо́мъ, мѣ́ломъ [лиɑ́ pisótʌ pəróm, kʌrʌndʌʃóm, mɛ́tʌm], She wrote with a pen, a pencil, chalk.

Крестья́нинъ паха́лъ coxóю [krestjánin paxáť saxóju], The peasant was ploughing with a plough.

68. The instrumental is also used in certain idioms expressing times and seasons, *e.g.* 

сего́дня у́тромъ [səvódna útram], this morning (to-day in the morning). вчера́ ве́черомъ [ftjərú vétjəram], yesterday, last evening. за́втра у́тромъ [zúftra útram], to-morrow morning. днёмъ [dňom], day, by day. но́чью [nótjju], by night. весно́й [vəsnóĭ], in spring. зимо́й [żimoĭ], in winter. о́сенью [ósəňju], in autumn. лѣтомъ [lɛ́tam], in summer.

69. The instrumental case is also used predicatively after the verb быть (and several other verbs, some of which are illustrated in Lesson XLVIII). This is the general form of the phrase when a change of state or a temporary condition is described, *e.g.* 

По сме́рти (prep.) отца́ онъ былъ (ог сталъ) царёмъ [рл smérti лtsá on bīt (stot) tsлŕóm], On, i.e. after, his father's death he was (became) czar.

OHá cπѣлалась повари́хою (οй) [and sdétatas pavaiíxaju (Δ)], She made herself, i.e. became, a cook.

Note.—If the complement of быть, сдѣлаться, to become, is an adjective, use the instrumental case (Par. 88) after the infinitive, and the predicative nominative (Par. 187) after any other form of the verb, e.g.

Она́ хотѣла быть бога́тою [ли́ хлі́є́tл bīt bagátaju], She wished to be rich.

Она́ была́ бѣдна́ [Aná bīťá bədná], She was poor.

# LESSON XVIII

11, Mill

#### VOCABULARY

весна́, ы́ [vəsná], spring лѣто, a [lɛ́tʌ], summer о́сень, н [о́зэп̀], autumn зима́, ы́ (acc. -y) [zimá], winter день, дня [deiň, dňa], day ýтро, a [útrл], morning ве́черъ, a [vet∫ər], evening пого́да, ы [pagóda], weather моро́зъ, a [marós], frost дере́вня, и [dəřévňa], village въдере́внѣ[vdəřévna], in the country крестья́нинъ, a [krastjanin], peasant по́ле, я [pólə], field жа́тва, ы [zátvл], harvest жи́то, a [zitʌ], grain серпъ, á [śɛrp], sickle коса́, ы́ [kasá], scythe coxá, и́ [sʌxá], Russian plough кийга, и [khíga], book шко́ла, ы [[kółʌ], school уро́къ, a [urók], lesson

да́же [dázə], even и́ли [íli], or отдыха́ть 131 A [Adïxá<sup>i</sup>t], to rest встрѣтить [fstřétit], to meet сказа́ть [skлzá<sup>i</sup>t], to tell, say разсказать [rasskazá<sup>i</sup>t], to relate она жила́ A [zīťa], she lived паха́ть A [paxá<sup>i</sup>t], to plough жать A [za<sup>i</sup>t], to reap вырастать 131 А[vïrAstá<sup>i</sup>t], to sprout, grow приготовля́ть 131 А [prigatavlá<sup>i</sup>t], to prepare жа́ркій [zárki], hot трудолюби́вый [trud.lubívi], workloving, i.e. industrious мо́крый [mókri], damp дурно́й [durnóĭ], bad почти́ [p.st/tí], nearly всегда́ [fsəgdá], always иногда́ [in.igdá], sometimes ужé [uzé], already

Всё то, что дѣлалось [fio to sto détatas], all that did itself, i.e. all that was done, took place.

Note.—cenó is a village with a church, дере́вня is a hamlet, a village without a church. blau mp nug 2 happen - Kocu ka typelen mpakimof Exercises

A. Translate :

(1) Вчера́ у́тромъ я встрѣ́тила подру́гу, кото́рая мнѣ разсказа́ла всё то, что дѣлалось, когда́ она́ жила́ въ дере́внѣ. (2) Была́ весно́й ещё холо́дная пого́да, но трудолюби́вый крестья́нинъ паха́лъ мо́крос по́ле сохо́ю, и сѣ́ялъ ячме́нь и овёсъ. (3) Днёмъ онъ рабо́талъ на лугу́ и́ли въ саду́; ве́черомъ онъ отдыха́лъ, а но́чью онъ спалъ. (4) Весно́й моя́ подру́га то́же ходи́ла въ шко́лу. (5) Ве́черомъ она́ приготовля́ла уро́къ. (6) Лѣтомъ была́ обыкнове́нно хоро́шая, тёплая, иногда́ жа́ркая пого́да, и ячме́нь уже́ выраста́лъ. (7) О́сенью была́ жа́тва. (8) Крестья́нинъ жалъ жи́то серпо́мъ и́ли косо́ю. (9) Зимо́й была́ почти́ всегда́ дурна́я пого́да и си́льный моро́зъ. (10) Зимо́й нельзя́ рабо́тать на дворѣ́ [out of doors].

Зимой нельзя работать на дворъ.

72

#### В. Вопросы:

(1) Чѣмъ паха́лъ крестья́нинъ? (2) А чѣмъ онъ жалъ жи́то? (3) Кака́л была́ о́сенью въ дере́внѣ пого́да? (4) Возмо́жно ли рабо́тать зимо́й на дворѣ́? (5) Почему́? (6) Когда́ дѣ́вочка приготовля́ла уро́къ?

# C. Translate into Russian :

(1) The girl's book was lying with her peneil on the table that stood before the window. (2) She has no [V HEH HETE] copy-book, and her pen and blackpencil are in school. (3) In spring the peasant was never at home; he was always ploughing or sowing, and often he was still working in field or meadow in the autumn. (4) Last night our young son lay down in [on to] bed, but this morning he was lying on the floor. (5) Surely he (had) not fallen on to the floor ? Yes, he was on the floor. (6) Yesterday morning, when I was walking on the meadow, I saw the two (little) girls; one was playing with the dog, the other was working. (7) In that year there was a hot spring, and a cold autumn. (8) In winter the boy usually went (Par. 40) to [into] school. (9) In summer the idle man used to lie in the sun ; he would never [never not wished to] work, because he always wished to sleep. (10) To whom did the little girl bring the nice ripe apple ? (11) What was the old man talking about this morning? (12) Who was standing before the door? (13) Whom did you see this morning? (14) With what did she usually do that? (15) I was not speaking of the rich man who became a peasant. (16) Last night I saw him giving [saw how he gave] oats to the horse. (17) He generally ploughed in spring when there was still bad weather; and in autumn, when there was often hot weather, the industrious peasant reaped barley that had grown up [grew up] in the summer. (18) Is it possible to reap or sow in winter? (19) Why did your old friend nearly always wish to work outside at night? (20) He could see all you [thou] showed him. (21) I never knew that you [thou] still reaped corn with a scythe, because I never lived in the country.

# LESSON XIX

70. Of the prepositions governing the genitive several have already been introduced. The most frequently used are :

безъ [bɛs, bəs], without близъ [blis], near вмѣсто [vméstʌ], instead of во́злѣ [vózlə], beside для [dlo, dlʌ], for до [do, dʌ], up to, till, before нзъ [iz, is], out of, from кро́м'ь [króinə], besides ми́мо [inímʌ], past отъ [ot, ʌt], from, away y [u], at, near E.q.:

74

безъ кни́ги [bəs khígi], without a book. блнзъ це́рквн [blis tšérkvi], near the church. вмѣсто пера́ [vinɛ́stʌ pərá], instead of a pen. во́злѣ две́ри [vóʒlə dv́éti], beside the door. для меня́ [dlʌ inəná], for me. до э́того дня́ [dʌ ἑtʌvʌ dňa], till this day. нзъ шкю́лы [is ʃkótī], from school. нзъ Россін [is rʌsíi], from Russia. кро́мѣ того́ [krómə tʌvó], besides that, in addition. мі́мо до́ма [mí́mʌ dómʌ], past the house. отъ дру́га [ʌt drúgʌ], from a friend. у васъ [u vás], with you, near you, in your possession, etc.

71. Observe :

Онъ былъ дома [on bīt dómʌ], He was at home (rest). Онъ пошёлъ домо́іі [on pʌʃót dʌmóĭ], He went home (motion). Она пришла домо́іі [ʌnó při[tá dʌmóĭ], She came home.

# VOCABULARY

ка́өедра, ы [kɑ́fədrʌ], teacher's desk	рисова́ть A [risʌvá <sup>i</sup> t], to draw
скаме́йка, и [skлméĭkл], bench	учи́ть A [utsit], to teach
бума́га, и [bumágл], paper	учи́ться A [utsits.], to teach one-
доска, и (асс. доску) [daska],	self, to be taught, i.e. to learn
board	but учить уро́къ [utsit urók], to
классная доска́ [kłásnajə daská],	learn a lesson
black-board (class-board)	спроси́ть [sprasit], to ask, to make
похвала́, ы́ [рлхvлtá], praise	an inquiry
учи́тельница, ы [utsítəlnitsл], lady-	спра́шивать 131 А [sprá jīvat], to
teacher	ask questions
учи́тель, я [ut∫íṫəl̀], teacher	отвѣча́ть 131 А [лtv̀ət∫á <sup>i</sup> t̀], to answer
учени́къ, а́ [ut∫əńik], pupil	кра́сный [krásnï], red
ученица, ы [utjənítsл], girl-pupil	лѣни́вый [lənívī], idle
це́рковь, <sup>1</sup> кви [tsérkaf], church	внима́тельный [vhimátəlnī], atten-
мѣлъ, a [mɛt], chalk	tive
вокза́ль, a [vakzat], railway-station	приле́жный [piilɛ́ʒnï], diligent
посъщать 131 A [p.səftfá <sup>i</sup> t], to	ста́ршій [stár∫ī], elder, eldest
visit, frequent	мла́дшій [mtútʃï], younger
(0)ко́нчить [(л)kónt∫ií], to finish	суро́вый [suróvi], severe
читать 131 A [tʃitá <sup>i</sup> t], to read	отку́да [.tkúdʌ], whence

<sup>1</sup> As in kycóks or oréks the vowel in the second syllable disappears in the oblique cases.

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

(1) Мой старшій сынь уже кончиль школу. (2) Но когда я быль въ дере́внь, сго мла́дшій брать посыда́ль сщё ма́ленькое учи́лище,<sup>1</sup> кото́рое стоя́ло близъ вокза́ла. (3) Разъ онъ пришёлъ домой изъ школы. (4) Его встрѣтилъ его маленький товарищъ. (5) Спросиль его, «Что ты сегодня утромъ дѣлалъ въ шко́лѣ?» (6) Прилежный ученикъ показалъ ему книгу и тетрадь, разсказа́ль всё то, что дѣлалось обыкнове́нно, и сказа́ль, что безъ книги и тетради нельзя учиться. (7) Кромъ книги былъ у него чёрный каранда́шъ. (8) Иногда ста́ршій ученнікъ писа́лъ перо́мъ вмѣсто карандаша́. (9) Кро́мѣ того́ онъ писа́лъ на бума́гѣ. (10) Кла́ссная доска́ стоя́ла во́злѣ ка́оедры учи́теля и передъ окномъ. (11) Трудолюбивый учитель часто писалъ мѣломъ на доскѣ. (12) Лѣни́вый учени́къ всегда́ сидѣ́лъ на скаме́йкѣ близъ ка́оедры. (13) Суро́вый ста́рый учи́тель далъ уро́къ сего́дня у́тромъ. (14) Онъ мно́го спра́шивалъ, по, къ сожалѣнію, только одинь внимательный ученикъ хотѣлъ отвѣча́ть. (15) Этотъ мальчикъ получилъ отъ учителя похвалу.

Этотъ мальчикъ получилъ отъ учителя похвалу.

B. Rewrite Exercise A in the feminine, as far as the sense will admit of that. (Use подруга in place of това́рищъ.)

C. Complete the following :

кромѣ эт-, безъ това́рищ-, безъ ня́н-, съ учи́тельниц-, съ учи́тел-, при цари́ц-, до дворц-, вмѣсто ко́ж-, къ сестр-, для стару́х-, въ рѣк- [in], въ рѣк- [into], на стол-, на лу́г-, во́злѣ две́р-, отъ человѣк-, изъ це́ркв-, при цар-.

D. Вопросы:

(1) Отку́да пришёлъ вашъ сынъ? (2) Куда́ онъ пришёлъ? (3) Что его́ спроси́лъ това́рищъ? (4) Что онъ показа́лъ това́рищу? (5) Что онъ всё разсказа́лъ? (6) Гдѣ сидѣ́лъ обыкнове́нио учи́тель? (7) Тамъ ли та́кже сидѣ́лъ учени́къ? (8) Гдѣ стоя́ла кла́ссная доска́? (9) У кого́ мно́го мѣ́ла? (10) Чѣ́мъ учи́тель писа́лъ на доскѣ́? (11) На чёмъ писа́лъ учени́къ? (12) Кто отвѣ́ча́лъ, когда́ учи́тель спра́шивалъ?

<sup>1</sup> учи́лище, а [ut∫ílі∫t∫ə]=шко́ла.

E. Translate into Russian:

A warm spring; a cold summer; the cat's green eye; its pink nose; its black tail; its two paws; ripe corn; good barley; blue chalk; a red pencil; a lazy boy; she is a kind teacher; he is a good teacher; he told you that; I told her that; she never spoke French well; I related everything to him; a lot of paper; a little oats for the ass; he has no oats for the horse; how much bread? two palaces; three heroes; once I asked him; he used to be always putting questions; he usually went to school, when he lived with his grandfather; this morning he was going past the house; he went to school yesterday; she was at home; she went home; what is his sister to do? surely he has not left school yet? was it possible to save [CHaCTM] the dog that fell into the river? it is impossible to answer [Ha with acc.] this question.

# F. Translate into Russian :

(1) Once in the spring my little sister came home in the evening. (2) She showed me a pretty red pencil which the lady-teacher had given her. (3) She always used to answer when I questioned (her), and on that occasion she related everything to me, when I asked her what happened in school. (4) I (had) bought a lot of paper. (5) I gave it to her, so that she might draw or write on it [so that she drew, see Ex. X B 8]. (6) But that paper did not please her. (7) She read very well, because she was a diligent little pupil. (8) At that time she studied in the school that used to stand beyond the meadow. (9) Her young brother could not yet read. (10) He was always a lazy boy; that is why he could not read. (11) Surely he was not always playing out of doors ?

# THE PLURAL OF NOUNS

## 72. MASCULINE AND FEMININE NOUNS

HARD FORM

Nominative plural ends in -ы, e.g.

дѣдъ, дѣ́ды [dɛd (t), dɛ́dī], grandfather. ла́па, ла́пы [tápʌ, tápī], paw.

SOFT FORM

Nominative plural ends in -II, e.g.

царь, цари́ [tso<sup>i</sup>r, tsʌrí], czar. дверь, две́ри [dve<sup>i</sup>r, dvéri], door.

(a) If the stem ends in г, к, х, ж, ч, ш, щ, the termination is always -и, e.g.

каранда́шь, карандаши́ [karandá], karandaíi], pencil.

73.

NEUTER NOUNS

HARD FORM

Nominative plural ends in -a; e.g.

мѣсто, мѣста́ [mésta, məstá], place.

Soft Form

Nominative plural ends in  $-\pi$ ; e.g.

мо́ре, моря́ [mórə, maiá], sea.

(a) If the stem ends in г, к, х, ж, ч, ш, щ, the termination is always -a; e.g.

учи́лище, учи́лища [utʃiliʃtʃə, ytʃiliʃtʃʌ], school.

74. In all neuter nouns and adjectives, and in masculine and feminine forms denoting inanimate things, the accusative plural has the same form as the nominative plural.

75. The accent frequently changes in the plural and there are many other irregularities among nouns in frequent use. A list is given here of the nouns that have occurred in Lessons I-XIX. The list is, of course, chiefly for reference, but it is recommended that the list be learned gradually group by group and every new noun as it occurs placed in the proper group.

76. Nouns that have occurred in Lessons I-XIX

The nominative and genitive singular, nominative plural, and occasionally (in brackets) the genitive plural are given.

The genitive plurals will not be used before Lesson XXXVI.

77.

MASCULINE NOUNS

I

дѣ́дъ, дѣ́да, дѣ́ды, grandfather

вну́къ, а, и, grandson ма́льчикъ, а, и, boy мини́стръ, а, ы, minister до́микъ, а, и, little house това́рищъ, а, и, companion рабо́тникъ, а, и, workman вокза́лъ, а, ы, railway station огоро́дъ, а, ы, kitchen garden въ́вздъ, а, ы, entrance мѣ́лъ, а, chalk моро́зъ, а, ы, frost свѣтъ, а, ы, light, world уро́къ, а, н, lesson норо́къ, а, н, vice

Most polysyllabic masculine nouns not accented in the nominative singular on the last syllable, especially nouns in ецъ, объ, окъ, усъ, do not change the accent in the oblique cases.

# $\mathbf{2}$

# столъ, стола́, столы́, table

серпъ, а́, ы́, sickle	мужи́къ, а́, и́, peasant
хвостъ, á, ы, tail	учени́къ, а́, и́, pupil
дворъ, а́, ы́, court, yard	каранда́шъ, а́, и́, pencil
стари́къ, á, ú, old man	

Most polysyllabic masculine nouns accented in the nominative singular on the last syllable and many monosyllabic nouns have the accent on the termination in the oblique cases.

3		
оте́цъ, отца́,	отцы́, father	
дворе́ць, рца́, ы́, <i>palace</i> овёсь, вса́, ы́, <i>oats</i> осёль, сла́, ы́, <i>ass</i>	купе́ць, пца́, ú, merchant кусо́къ, ска́, ú, piece дружо́къ, ка́, ú, dear friend	
4		
са́дъ, са́да,	сады́, garden	
ио́лъ, а, ы́, floor но́съ, а, ы́, nose ра́зъ, а, ы́, a time	мо́стъ, а, ы́, bridge ве́рхъ, а, ы́, top, upper part сы́ръ, а, ы́, cheese	
Ę	j	
сара́й, сара́я,	сара́и, cartshed	
геро́й, я, и, hero	слу́чай, я, и, occasion, opportunity	
6		
царь, царя́,	, цари́, <i>czar</i>	
коро́ль, я́, и́, king ру́бль, я́, и́, rouble день, дия, дии, day	ячме́нь, я́, и́, barley оле́нь, <sup>1</sup> я, и, stag медвѣ́дь, <sup>1</sup> я, н, bear	
7		
гла́зъ, гла́за, глаза́ (ъ), <i>еуе</i>		
до́мъ, а, а́ (овъ), house лв́съ, а, а́ (овъ), forest	лу́гъ, а, а́ (овъ), meadow вс́чсръ, а, а́ (овъ), evening	

бе́регъ, а, а́ (овъ), bank, shore

<sup>1</sup> Notice the accentuation of оле́нь and медвѣдь.

#### § 77

### 8

con

хлѣбъ, хлѣба, хлѣба́, bread, loaves, """хлѣбы, съсо цвѣтъ, цвѣта, цвѣта́, colour """цвѣты́, flower го́дь, го́да, года́, <sub>]</sub> year (rare) го́ды, <sup>]</sup> year учи́тель, учи́теля, учителя́, (rare) учи́тели, <sup>]</sup> teacher

9

сы́нь, сы́на, сыновья́ (ве́й), son дру́гь, дру́га, друзья́ (зе́й), friend кня́зь, кня́зя, князья́ (зе́й), prince бра́ть, бра́та, бра́тья (ьевь), brother сту́ль, сту́ла, сту́лья (ьевь), chair

## 10

# Young of animals

ребёнокъ, ребёнка, ребя́та [r̀əbónʌk], child щено́къ, нка́, ня́та, рирру котёнокъ, нка, тя́та, kitten

(Cf. Par. 229.)

#### 11

Names of classes of people and of many nationalities крестья́нинъ, крестья́нина, крестья́не, a peasant

(Cf. Par. 230.)

#### 12

человѣкъ, человѣка, лю́ди (е́й), man, people

## 78.

# FEMININE NOUNS

#### 1

# Accent fixed

# ба́ба, ба́бы, ба́бы, peasant woman

бума́га, и, и, <i>paper</i>	дѣ́вочка, и, и (екъ), little girl
ба́бушка, и, и (екъ), grandmother	жа́тва, ы, ы, harvest
вну́чка, н, и (екъ), granddaughter	женщина, ы, ы, woman
герои́ня, и, и (ь), heroine	ка́ведра, ы, ы, teacher's desk
да́ма, ы, ы, lady	кийга, и, и, <i>book</i>
дере́вия, и, и (е́нь), village, hamlet	ко́жа, и, и, leather
до́чка, и, и (екъ), little daughter	коню́шня, и, и, stable
дра́ка, и, и, quarrel	кошка, и, и (екъ), cat

ла́па, ы, ы, paw ма́тушка, н, и (екъ), mother ня́ня, и, и (ь), child's nurse повари́ха, н, н, cook пого́да, ы, weather подру́га, н, н, female friend похвала́, ы́, ы́, praise пти́ца, ы, ы, bird са́мка, н, н (окъ), female (of animals) скаме́йка, н, н (екъ), bench, seat служа́нка, н, н (окъ), servant соба́ка, н, н, dog стару́ха, н, н, old woman тьма, ы, gloom, darkness учени́ца, ы, ы, schoolgirl учи́тельница, ы, ы, lady teacher цари́ца, ы, ы, czarina ше́я, н, н (й), neck ико́ла, ы, ы, school

 $\mathbf{2}$ 

Singular—terminatio	on accented; plural—stem accented
игра́, ы́, -́ы, game	коса́, ы́, -ы, scythe
сестра́, ы́, ∺ы (ёръ), sister	весна́, ы́, ∺ы (ёнъ), spring (season)
coxá, и́, ∸н, plough	

The last four may also have acc. sing. accented on stem.

#### 3

Termination accented except in accusative singular and nominative plural

вода́, ы́, -́у, -́ы, water	зима́, ы́, -́у, -́ы, winter
голова́, ы́, – – у, – –ы (first syllable),	доска́, и́, -́у or -ý, -́и, board
head	рѣка́, и́, -y or -ý, -н, river

The difference in accentuation distinguishes in these words and in the words in Group 2 the genitive singular from the nominative plural.

4

две́рь, <sup>1</sup> две́ри, две́ри (е́й), door	посте́ль, и, и, bed-
но́чь, <sup>1</sup> и, и (е́й), night	о́сень, и, и, <i>autumn</i>
ло́шадь, <sup>1</sup> и, и (е́й), horse	тетра́дь, и, и, exercise-book
сме́рть, <sup>1</sup> н, н (е́й), death	бѣдность, н, poverty
це́рковь, <sup>1</sup> квн, и (е́й), church	

79.

# NEUTER NOUNS

#### 1

# Draw back accent in plural

ведро́, ведра́, вёдра (еръ), pail окно́, окна́, о́кна (конъ), window село́, села́, cёла, village

<sup>1</sup> Termination accented in oblique cases of plural.

#### LESSON XX

Move accent forward in plural

ма́сло, ма́сла, масла́ (селъ), butter мѣсто, a, á, place лѣто, a, á, summer, years по́ле, по́ля, поля́ (éй), field

ýтро, a, á, morning MÁCO, a, plur. rare, meat жи́то, a, plur. rare, grain мо́ре, я, я́ (е́й), sea

The transposition of accent in neuter nouns is very general.

### 3

Do not change the accent

молоко́, а́, а́, milk питьё, я́, я́ (е́й), drink кресло, а, а (селъ), arm-chair кушанье, я, я (ій), food уче́нье,1 -я, я, learning со́лнце, а, а (нецъ), sun учи́лище, a, a, school неуче́нье,<sup>1</sup> я, я, ignorance, illiteracy зда́ніе, я, я (ій), building сожалѣ́ніе, я, я (ііі), pity 54

иблоко, а, иблоки, apple

#### 6

небо, неба, небеса́ (е́съ), sky, heaven

перо, а, перья (ьевъ), реп

время, ени, ена, time (Lesson LIII)

# LESSON XX

80. The plural of the past tense of any verb ends in -JII. The complete form of the past tense is therefore :

#### Singular

я думаль, думала (думало), thought ты ¦пошёлъ, пошла́ (пошло́), went онъ, она́, оно́ могъ, могла́ (могло́), could

Plural

мы [mï], we вы [vï], you они́ (m. and n.) [ʌńı], они́ (f.) [ʌńɛ], they могли́ [mʌgl͡f]

<sup>1</sup> Also spelt -ie.

Note.—(a) The pronoun BM and the possessive BAIII'S are often, especially in correspondence, written with a capital.

(b) Adverbial past participle (invariable):

ду́мавъ ог ду́мавши, поше́дши, мо́гши, having thought, gone, been able.

Adjectival past participle active (declined like an adjective) : ду́мавшій, поше́дшій, мо́гшій, one who has thought, gone, been able.

Adjectival past participle passive (declined like an adjective): (за)ду́манный, something that has been thought.

These forms are given only in order that the student may be able to recognize them in reading : they will not often appear in Part I of this book.

81. мо́н [mʌí], тво́н [tvʌí], на́ши [nújī], Ва́ши [vújī] are the plurals for my, thy, our, your or mine, thine, ours, yours. ихъ [jix] = of them, their, theirs. э́ти [éti] and тѣ [tɛ] are the plurals of э́тотъ and тотъ.

82. Nominative Plural of the Adjective

		HARD FORM	
	Masc.	Fem.	Neut.
sing.	бѣлый	бѣлая	бѣлое, white
plur.	бѣ́лые [b́ɛ́tījə]	бѣ́лыя [bɛ́tījə],	бѣ́лыя [bɛ́tījə]
sing.	молодо́й	молода́я	молодое, young
			]молоды́я [mʌtʌdījə]
Prairi	ano ano familia de la compañía de la	un	vi
		Soft Form	
	2.0	71	37 .

 Masc.
 Fem.
 Neut.

 sing.
 кра́йній
 кра́йняя
 кра́йнее, extreme, last, least

 plur.
 кра́йніе [króĭňijə]
 кра́йнія [króĭňijə]
 кра́йнія [króĭňijə]

That is, the endings are, in the masculine plural, -ые or -ie, and in the feminine and neuter plural, -ыя or -iя.

83. Remember that ы can never stand after г, к, х, ж, ч, ш, щ : the plural of ру́сскій іs ру́сскіе, ія [rúskijə].

The difference between LIE and LIM and that between ie and im exist only in writing, as, in ordinary discourse, there is no appreciable distinction to the ear. 84. The accusative of masculine and feminine plural adjectives qualifying names of inanimate things has the same form as the nominative.

All neuter accusatives of nouns and adjectives have the same form as the nominative.

85. Before taking up Lesson XXI, at least the regular nominative plurals should be learned. These and most of the others will be impressed on the memory with very little effort by reading over the Russian examples in Lessons I to XIX, taking them according to the following scheme.

Re-read the Exercises, substituting, as far as the sense admits of *it*, plural for singular subjects. Omit Oди́нъ, etc. (The word óóa, óóъ́, óóa [óbʌ, óbə, óbʌ], meaning both, is a word that suggests itself now and then, but óõa<sup>1</sup> takes the genitive singular like  $ДB\dot{a}$ .)

(a) Learn masculine groups 1, 2, 3, 4, 12.

Ex. I A, Nos. 1, 2, 3, 7, 10.

- Ex. II A (omit Nos. 6, 14, 15, 16).
- Ex. III B (omit Nos. 6, 8, 11, and 16).
- Ex. IV A, Nos. 13, 14, 15, 18, 20, 21, 24, 25.
- (b) Learn masculine groups 5 and 6. Ex. V B, Nos. 1, 2, 3, 8, 12, 13.
- (c) Learn masculine groups 7 and 9.
  - Ex. VI E, Nos. 5–13.
- (d) Learn masculine group 8, and neuters 2–6. Ex. VII A.

(e) Learn masculine groups 7, 8, 9 again and the remaining groups of neuter nouns.

Exx. VIII B, IX C, X B.

(f) Learn masculine groups 10 and 11 and the rule for the formation of feminine plurals (groups 1–3).

Ex. XIII A, Nos. 1–12, Ex. XV A, and Ex. XVI A.

(g) Learn feminines, group 4.

Exx. XVIII A, XIX A.

 $\begin{pmatrix} HAM \mathbf{b} = to \ us \\ BAM \mathbf{b} = to \ you \end{pmatrix}$ .

<sup>1</sup> See Par. 176, d.

# LESSON XXI

# PLURALS AND PRONOUNS

# VOCABULARY

прика́зчикъ, а, н [přikóst∫ik],	ключъ, а́, и́ [klut∫], key
shop-assistant, clerk	сухо́й [suxóĭ], dry
земля́, и́, -ю, -п [żəmlá], earth, land	я́ркій [járki], bright
овца́, ы́, -ы [Aftsá], sheep	серди́тый [sərdíti], angry, violent
коро́ва, ы, ы [kлróvл], cow	ещё разъ [jəstsó ras], still a time,
трава́, ы́, -ы [trʌvó], grass	i.e. once more
ку́хня, н, н [kúxňл], kitchen	тому́ наза́дъ [tamú nazát], to that
комната, ы, ы [komnata], room	back, i.e. ago
ýлица, ы, ы [úlitsл], street	три го́да тому́ наза́дъ [tri gódʌ
замо́къ, мка́, мки́ [zʌmók], lock	tamú nazát], three years ago
трудъ, а́, ы́ [trud (t)], trouble, diffi-	давны́мъ-давно́ [dʌvnïm-dʌvnó],
culty	long ago

#### EXERCISES

A. Write the following sentences with all nominatives in the plural :

(1) Прика́зчикъ пришёль къ дру́гу. (2) Коро́ва и овца́ у экс́енцины. (3) Вну́чка гуля́ла съ ба́бушкой. (4) Я ему́ далъ кни́гу сестры́. (5) Учи́тель говори́лъ о тетра́ди. (6) Свётлая у́лица мнѣ о́чень нра́вилась. (7) Мо́края трава́ на лугу́. (8) Суха́я земля́ ему́ ненра́вилась. (9) Онъ стро́илъ деревя́нный домъ пе́редъ дворцо́мъ. (10) Сестра́ отца́ была́ тамъ. (11) Мо́й това́рищъ купи́лъ большо́й замо́къ съ ключо́мъ. (12) Ты пришёлъ къ отцу́. (13) Ста́рая служа́нка принесла́ ма́ленькое ведро́ съ водо́й. (14) Учи́тельница сндѣла на мосту́. (15) Онъ туда́ пошёлъ безъ ма́льчика. (16) Чёрная ло́шадь ѣла траву́. (17) Бѣлая соба́ка стоя́ла пе́редъ ло́шадью. (18) Киязь ви́дѣлъ я́ркій свъ́тъ въ ко́мнатъ. (19) У старика́ свѣ́тлый до́микъ, ма́ленькій садъ, большо́й лугъ, бѣ́лый осёлъ, чёрная овца́. (20) Учени́ца прошла́ шко́лу.

#### Ученица прошла школу.

B. Substitute for the words in italics in Ex. A the proper form of the 3rd personal pronoun.

#### LESSON XXII

#### §§ 86-87

C. Translate into Russian :

(1) Did the diligent pupils enter [into] the school? (2) Why were they sitting on the floor? (3) The young men did not come to [KD] the prince. (4) Surely they did not go home? (5) They came to that man. (6) The old women went through the room. (7) Why was the lazy cook not working in the kitchen? (8) Once more the industrious peasant-women went into the forest. (9) We never used to come home in the evening. (10) Surely you were not always out of doors? (11) The little girl was going home when she saw a bright light. (12) Why was the angry teacher always asking questions? (13) That happened here long ago. (14) They arrived [came] here [hither] two years ago. (15) The hard-working lady-teacher asked once more but the idle pupils never answered anything [never nothing not answered]. (16) Could they understand that without difficulty? (17) They sat down on the wooden chairs. (18) They were lying in bed. (19) We were sitting at the window.\*

\* Par. 211 may be studied at this point and the imperative be practised with any verb marked 131.

# LESSON XXII

#### 86. DECLENSION OF MATE AND DOVE Singular Plural MATE [ma<sup>i</sup>t], mother матери [mátəri] nom. ма́тери [mátəři] marepén [materéi] gen. dat. Márepu [mátəri] матеря́мъ [mateiúm] acc. мать [mait] матере́й [m.stəřéi] матеря́ми (рьми́) [mstəránii (rmí)] матерью [mátərju] instr. Márepu [mátəri] матеря́хъ [m.təŕdx] prep.

The declension of дочь [dots], daughter, is exactly similar.

87. The preposition  $\Pi O$  is used with the dative case; <sup>1</sup> it means along, on, according to, over.

Some illustrations :

но-мні [рлті́́є], ог по моєму́ [рлті́јәтú], according to me, as far as I am concerned, in my opinion. To user for the protocol по нему́ [рлі́әтú], in his opinion. No ezo fulletettufo

по кра́йней мъ́ръ́ [рл krú́nəĭ mérə], according to the least measure, at least. Она́ шла по у́лицъ́ [лná (ta рл úlitээ], She was going along the street.

Она бродила по городу, по льсу [and bradita pa goradu, polesu], She wandered about the town, the forest.

In nó n'hcy note the accent. no ropogy may be similarly accented.

<sup>1</sup> In quite different senses it is used with the accusative or prepositional, *e.g.* no cмépru in Par. 69. Cf. also Par. 183.

letter - mucando LESSON XXII

#### VOCABULARY

- мѣра, ы, ы [mśrʌ], measure
- лѣстница, ы, ы [lésnitsa], stairs, flight of stairs

онъ сдѣлалъ [on sdétat], did (once)

открыль [Atkrif], opened

- онъ подня́лся [on padiiótsa], raised himself, i.e. went up
- Она поднялась по лѣстницѣ [and padnatos pa lésnitise]. She raised herself by the stairs, i.e. went up the stairs

онъ узна́лъ [on uznáť], he recognized, he got to know

- снача́ла [snatsáta], at first, to begin with
- самъ, а́, о́, са́ми [som, sʌmó, sʌmó, sámi], self (emphatic)
- поэтому [paétamu], so, therefore, for that reason
- Хорошо, что онъ это сказалъ [xaraló, [to on éta skazút]. It is good, nice, a good thing, that he said that

Повторе́ніе—мать уче́нья [paftarénjə—mo<sup>i</sup>t ut[énja], Repetition is the mother of learning.

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate:

(1) Же́нщина пошла́ по у́лицѣ съ до́черью. (2) Наконе́цъ она́ пришла къ двери. (3) Старая мать открыла сама дверь и вошла. (4) Сначала она прошла кухню и двъ комнаты. (5) Потомъ бълная женщина поднялась по лъстницъ и узнала дверь. (6) Два года тому назадъ она очень хорошо знала эту дверь. (7) Ho женшина не хотѣла сама́ откры́ть. (8) Поэ́тому она́ дала́ до́чери ключь оть компаты. (9) Дочь безь труда открыла и онъ ещё разъ вошли.

Дочь безъ труда открыла и онъ ещё разъ вошли.

B. Rewrite the sentences in A making the subjects plural.

С. Вопросы:

(1) Съ къмъ дочь ношла по у́лицъ? (2) Куда́ онъ наконе́цъ пришли? (3) Что случилось? (4) Кто открылъ дверь, мать или дочь? (5) Что случилось потомъ? (6) Какую комнату онѣ сначала прошли? (7) Какъ онѣ поднялись? (8) Что онѣ (9) Когда́ онѣ́ о́чень хорошо́ знали эту дверь? (10) узнали? Кому мать дала ключъ? Какой ключъ? (11) Чъмъ дочь открыла дверь?

D. Translate :

(1) Yesterday morning two (little) girls were walking along the street. (2) I walked along the street. (3) The old man's sons went into the peasant's garden. (4) The young women lived in the house that used to stand beyond

§ 87

the village. (5) His young companions opened the doors. (6) At first the lazy pupils thought that the flowers (were) not in the room. (7) The lady-teachers were not at home. (8) The diligent pupils were writing with pencil on paper. (9) It is a good thing that the two boys went up [verb plural] the stairs. (10) I could not see him anywhere. (11) I saw the old benches in the room. (12) Surely the little girls did not wish to play with that woman's daughter ? (13) At last the mother came and opened the door. (14) She wished to go for a walk with (her) mother. (15) We learned that the old servants (were) in the kitchen. (16) At least one old peasant woman went in. (17) She passed through the room and entered the kitchen, where the grandmother was sitting. (18) Beautiful, clean, bright villages. (19) In the evening we saw the old woman once more. (20) They were walking on the bank of the stream and were playing with the nurse. (21) That happened three years ago. (22) In his opinion the room is a very dark (one). (23) The kind intelligent boys saved the girl from [H35] the water.

# LESSON XXIII

#### 88.

prep.

#### Declension of Adjectives

#### HARD FORMS

#### (a) Stem accented

#### Singular

		Singular	
	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
nom.	ста́рый [stárī]	ста́рое [stárʌjə]	ста́рая [stárʌjə], old
gen.	стараго	[stárava]	ста́рой [stáraĭ]
dat.	ста́рому	/ [stáramu]	ста́рой [stáraĭ]
acc.	gen. or nom.	nom.	ста́рую [stúruju]
instr.	ста́рым	ь [stárīm]	ста́рой (0ю) [stáraĭ (aju)]
prep.	ста́ромт	[stárʌm]	ста́рой [stárлĭ]
		Plural	
	Masc.	Neut. 6.1	_ Fem.
nom.	ста́рые [starījə]	ста́рыя [stárijə	Fem. ] ста́ры́я [stárïjə]
gen.		ста́рыхъ [stárix	x]
dat.		ста́рымъ [stárin	n]
acc.	gen. or nom.	nom.	gen. or nom.
instr.		ста́рыми [stórīti	ini]

The complete declension of the plural is printed here for convenience: the oblique cases will not be employed before Lesson XXX.

ста́рыхъ [stárix]

§ 88

# LESSON XXIII

# (b) Termination accented

#### Singular

	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
nom.	просто́й [prʌstóĭ]	просто́е [prʌstójə]	проста́я [prʌstájʌ], simple
gen.	просто́го	[prastóva]	просто́й [prʌstóĭ]
dat.	просто́му	[prʌstómu]	просто́й [prʌstóĭ]

and so on, in all forms corresponding to (a) above.

Note.-(1) Except in the nominative and accusative the masculine and neuter forms are identical.

(2) In the feminine singular the gen. dat. instr. and prep. are alike.

(3) In (b) the masc. nom. sing. and the feminine gen. dat. instr. and prep. are alike.

### VOCABULARY

твёрдый [tvórdī], hard (opp. of soft) тру́дный [trúdnī], difficult тяжёлый [təʒótī], heavy жёлтый [zóttī], yellow язы́нт, á, ú [jəzik], tongue, language зна́къ, а, и [znak], sign купе́цъ, пца́, ы́ [kupɛ́ts], merchant мужчи́на,<sup>1</sup>ы, ы (masc.) [muʃtʃinʌ], man (not a woman).

#### EXERCISES

A. Decline in the singular and nominative plural :

жёлтый каранда́шъ, краси́вая дѣ́вочка, холо́дная ночь, ста́рый осёлъ, чёрная ло́шадь, тёплое лѣ́то.

# B. Give the (1) genitive singular, (2) instrumental, and (3) nominative plural of the Russian equivalent for :

Bad weather, a large pail, a difficult tongue, the hard sign, a young boy, yellow oats, a siek peasant-woman, long lesson, cold day, rich merchant, damp grass, red sun, green grass, brown horse, long nose, grey eat, brave hero, the rich woman, old book, the long garden, the old house, intelligent man, this woman and that man.

<sup>1</sup> человѣкъ can have the wider sense of person.

# LESSON XXIV

# 89. DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES (continued)

	0,	Soft Form	
	Reserver	Singular	
	Mase.	Neut.	Fem.
nom.	pánniñ [ráni]	ра́инее [rɑ́ǹəjə]	ра́нняя [rúnəjə], early
gen.	ра́нняго	) [ráňəva]	pánneii [ránði]
dat.	ра́ннему	y [ránəmu]	ра́нней [го́пэĭ]
acc.	nom. or gen.	nom.	ра́ннюю [ráňuju]
instr.	ра́нним	ъ [ránim]	ра́нней (ею) [rɑ́ǹəĭ (əju)]
prep.	ра́нием	ь [ráiəm]	ра́нней [га́п̀әĭ]
Plural			
nom.	ра́нніе [ránəjə]	pánnin [ránəjə]	ра́ннія [rɑ́nəjə]
gen.		ра́ннихъ [rúnix]	
dat.		ра́ннимъ [ránim	1]
ace.		nom. or gen.	
instr.		ра́нними [ráihin	i]
prep.		ра́ннихъ [ránix]	

90. That is to say the declension of ра́нній is identical with that of ста́рый, the soft vowels replacing the hard vowels throughout,

i	correspon	nding to	ы preceding й or a vowel
п	"	,,	ы in all other positions
я	>>	"	a
e	"	"	unaccented o
ю	>>	>>	У

# VOCABULARY

по́здній [pózni], late	дома́шній [dʌmɑ́∫ni], tame, domestic
пере́дняя [ṕəřédňəjə] (a feminine	живо́тное [ʒïvótnajə] (a neuter ad-
adjective in form and deelined	jective in form and declined as
as such), entrance-hall	such), an animal

#### Exercises

- A. Decline in singular and nominative plural : си́нее мо́ре, по́здняя весна́, дома́шнее живо́тное, ра́нняя о́сень.
- B. Give (1) genitive singular, (2) prepositional singular, (3) nominative plural of the Russian equivalent for :

tame bird, green sea, red door, white paper, warm spring, heavy board, cold day, black cat, clean water, large bed, dark entrance-hall, late summer. early autúmn.

# LESSON XXV

# 91. DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES (continued)

In the writing of adjectives, as in every part of Russian orthography, the general rules must be observed, that

ы, я, ю never appear after г, к, х, ж, ч, ш, щ; they are replaced

by и (or i before vowels and half-vowels), a, y;

я, ю, never appear after ц; they are replaced by a, y;

unaccented o is replaced by e atter ж, ч, ш, щ, ц.

In words like ди́кій [díki], wild, and горя́чій [gʌrátʃi], hot, these rules must be carefully observed.

92.	Adject	TIVES IN Γ, Κ,	х
		Singular	
	Masc.	Neut.	Fem.
nom.	ди́к <i>ій</i> [díki] ди	íkoe [díkajə]	ди́кая [díkʌjə], wild
gen.	ди́ка́го [díl	kava]	ди́кой [díkaĭ]
dat.	ди́кому [dí	[kAmu]	ди́кой [díkaĭ]
acc.	nom. or gen.	nom.	ди́кую [díkuju]
instr.	ди́кимъ [dí	kim]	ди́кой (ою) [díkaĭ (aju)]
prep.	ди́комъ [dí	kam]	ди́кой [díkaĭ]
nom.	диние [díkijə] ди	Plural íĸíя [díkijə]	ди́кія [díkijə]
gen.		ди́кихъ [díkix	]
etc., и	replacing ы.		

e

# LESSON XXVI

93. The terminations in which the type ди́кій differs from the type ста́рый are printed in italics in Par. 92.

Vo	CA	BU	LA	RY
----	----	----	----	----

вели́кій [vəĺíki],<sup>1</sup> great лёгкій [lóxki], light, easy мя́гкій [máxki], soft широ́кій [ʃïróki], broad ýзкій [úski], narrow

#### EXERCISES

A. Decline in singular and nominative plural :

жа́ркое у́тро, мя́гкій знакъ, вели́кій царь, лёгкій уро́къ, ди́кое живо́тное, широ́кая скаме́йка, у́зкій столъ.

B. Translate into Russian :

soft hands, bright suns, broad streets, narrow rooms, easy lessons, hot [жа́ркій] days.

C. Give the proper forms in the singular of the examples in Ex. B

(1)	with the	prep.	0
(2)	>>	,,	для
(3)	>>	"	КЪ

# LESSON XXVI

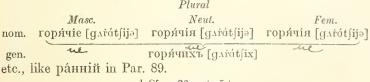
#### 94. DECLENSION OF ADJECTIVES (continued)

ADJECTIVES IN Ж, Ч, Ш, Щ

Singular

Masc. Neut. Fem. nom. горя́чій[gʌiʿatʃi] горя́чее[gʌiʿatʃəjə] горя́чая[gʌiʿatʃəjə], hot

gen.	ropávazo [gaiátjeva]	горя́чей [gʌiˈátʃəĭ]
dat.	горя́чему [gařátʃəmu]	горя́чей [gaiútʃəĭ]
acc.	nom. or acc. nom.	горя́ч <i>ую</i> [gʌr̀át∫uju]
instr.	горя́чимъ [gʌiˈɑ́tʃim]	горя́чей (ею) [gʌŕɑ́tʃəǐ (eju)]
prep.	горя́чемъ [gar̀át∫əm]	горя́чей [gařát∫əĭ]



<sup>1</sup> Cf. p. 26, note 5 to к.

§§ 93-94

-

#### LESSON XXVII

95. The type горя́чій is very similar to the type ра́нній, from which it differs only in the terminations printed in italics in Par. 94: я and ю never follow ж, ч, ш, щ.

#### VOCABULARY

сча́стіе, я [stʃɑ́stjə], happiness	несча́стіе, я [nəstʃastjə], unhappi-
су́пъ, а, ы [sup], soup	ness, misfortune

#### EXERCISES

#### A. Decline :

#### хорошая погода, горячій супъ.

B. Translate into Russian:

much ripe corn; how much clean water? he was speaking of the hard sign and not of the soft sign; little warm water; (it is) cold weather to-day; with the black horse; of the blue chalk; in the dark room; about the easy lesson; a late summer; to a difficult language; with a yellow pencil; on the wooden table; of the old black arm-chair; without the poor man; behind the dark forest; into the old school; about a difficult language; on to the wild animals; I was speaking of your great misfortune and of her happiness; he saw a tame bird; about the rich merchant; into the deep water; towards the bright light; there are our black horses; there is her poor mother; his intelligent sons.

# LESSON XXVII

96. Certain irregular past tense forms,<sup>1</sup> *e.g.* нёсь, *carried*, and могь, *could*, *was able*, have been already employed (see Par. 63). Two verbs in frequent use having masculine past tense without the usual л are :

онъ у́меръ [úmər], he died.

онъ вёзъ [vos], he carried in a vehicle, conveyed.

In all such verbs the other forms of the past tense are regular in appearance :

умерла́, у́мерло, у́мерли [uǹərlɑ́, úǹərlʌ, úǹərli] везла́, везло́, везли́ [vəzlɑ́, vəzlɑ́, vəzlí]

(a) The past participles (cf. Par. 80, note b) of these and the verbs dealt with in Par. 97 are :

<sup>1</sup> See list of several such forms in Par. 239.

Adverbial past participle : уме́рши, вёзши, ходи́въ, ше́дши, ѣхавъ.

Adjectival past participle : уме́ршій, вёзшій, ходи́вшій, ше́дшій, ѣхавшій.

97. The verbs ходи́ль (*inf*. ходи́ть) and шёлъ (*inf*. штти́) both mean he went. The distinction between them was explained in Par. 40. But both these verbs always mean to go on foot, to go but not in a conveyance. If the word go means to travel by any kind of vehicle, not on one's own legs, then the word that replaces шёлъ is (онъ) ѣхалъ [jɛ́xʌt], e.g.:

Онь шёль ми́мо [on sot míms], He was walking (walked) past.

Онь тхаль ми́мо [on jɛ́xʌt mímʌ], He was driving (drove) past.

And just as we have

Онъ пришёлъ (пѣшко́мъ) [on pii]ót pojkóm], Ile arrived (on foot), so

Опъ прівхаль [on přijéx.d] means He arrived (in a conveyance). прівхать верхо́мъ [přijéx.d vərxóm], to come riding.

The prefix **npu** in these words evidently corresponds to the English *near*, *up*, *up* to. In the second example it is written **npi** because **i**, *not* **u**, is the regular form of this vowel when it precedes a vowel.

Similarly we form compounds of бхать corresponding to all the other compounds of итти (*infin.* of шёлъ) given in Par. 62 :

вътать [véxлi]; протхать [prajéxai]; натать [najéxai], to drive up, come together; потать [pajéxai].

98. The preposition *from* is sometimes troublesome to translate. Notice these examples :

Геро́й получи́ль дворе́ць оть цари́ [ġəróĭ patut]ít dvaréts at tsarú], The hero received a palace from the czar.

Мать умерла́ отъ холе́ры [ma<sup>i</sup>t umerlá At xalérī], The mother died from (of) cholera.

Онъ прівхаль изъ другого города [on prijéxat iz drugova gorada]. He arrived from (out of) another town.

Кольцо́ сдвлано<sup>1</sup> изъ зо́лота [ka<sup>i</sup>]tsó sdelana iz zólata], The ring is made from (of, out of) gold.

<sup>1</sup> Neuter predicative (Par. 187) of passive past participle сдбланный. The active past participle of this verb is сдблавший (cf. Par. 80, a).

#### LESSON XXVII

Сь того́ дня онъ никогда́ не́ быль тамъ [stavó dùa on nìkagdá nébīl tam], From (since) that day he was never there.

Note.  $C_{\mathcal{D}}$  (co) = from, is used with the genitive :

Онь сняль кни́гу со стола́ [on shat khígu sastatá], He took the book from (off) the table.

#### VOCABULARY

го́родъ, a, á [górлt], town вдругъ [vdruk], suddenly паро́дъ, a, ы [narot], people отвёзь [ Atvóz (s)], conveyed away я́рмарка, и, и [jórmʌrkʌ], fair оста́ться [AstaitsA], to remain, be left холе́ра, ы [xʌlɛ́rʌ], cholera пла́кать A [ptákat], to weep жена, ы, чы [зәпа], wife заболѣть [zabalé<sup>i</sup>t], to fall ill больница, ы, ы [bailnitsa], hospital Значить [znat[it], that means, that is болѣзнь, и, и [balézn], disease to sau ужа́сный [uzásni], terrible мно́го наро́ду<sup>1</sup> [mnóqa naródu], сейча́сь [set[as], immediately, lit. many folks, many people this hour

Ему́ то́лько три го́да [jəmú tóilka tři goda], He is only three.

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

(1) Въ одно́мъ го́родѣ была́ и́рмарка. (2) Въ э́то вре́мя была́ холе́ра. (3) Мно́го наро́ду у́мерло<sup>2</sup> отъ э́той ужа́сной болѣ́зни. (4) Пріѣ́халъ на э́ту и́рмарку оди́нъ купе́цъ изъ друго́го го́рода съ жено́й и молодо́й до́чкой. (5) Дѣ́вочкѣ бы́ло то́лько четы́рс го́да. (6) Вдругъ оте́цъ и мать заболѣ́ли. (7) Сейча́съ отвезли́ въ больни́цу больно́го отца́ съ бѣ́дной ма́терью. (8) Зна́читъ, оста́лась ма́ленькая дѣ́вочка одна́. (9) Пла́кала, бѣ́дная, пла́кала.<sup>3</sup>

Значить, осталась маленькая дъвочка одна.

В. Вопросы :

(1) Γητό σωπά ήρмαρκα? (2) Καικά ποστόσμο σωπά στο στο βρέμμ? (3) Чτο γκέ επιγμήποεь? (4) Οτъ κακόπ σοπόσμαι ομή

' This form in -y is a partitive genitive found in certain phrases after measures, weights, adverbs of quantity. Cf. vánna váto (Voc. XLIII).

<sup>2</sup> Note the neuter singular verb, the subject having the force of a singular collective.

<sup>3</sup> In English, too, we make use of this simple device of repetition, in order to deepen the impression of intensity: *she wept and wept*.

#### § 99–100

ýмерли? (5) Съ къмъ пріѣхалъ купе́цъ? (6) Ско́лько дочкѣ лѣтъ [years]? (7) Что случи́лось, когда́ купе́цъ съ жено́й пріѣхали<sup>1</sup>? (8) Куда́ сейча́съ отвезли́ отца́ и мать? (9) Что случи́лось съ [happened to] до́чкой?

C. Translate into Russian :

(1) They usually lived in one small room. (2) In the winter my poor father died of that illness. (3) At that time a great many people were walking along the street. (4) The rich merehants drove up when we were standing before their door. (5) The cold streets of the big town did not please me. (6) His young son was then only two years old. (7) When did her old mother turn ill? (8) The sick boy was in the other building, but I did not know then who (had) carried him away there [thither]. (9) Why were they left alone in that great dark house? (10) She received that book from my father.

# LESSON XXVIII

99. The preposition  $\mu_0$  governs the genitive and means to, up to, till, before, e.g.

до этого дня [do (dA) étava dha], up to, till, before that day.

до Рождества́ [dʌ rʌʒdəs(t)vá], till Christmas.

до войны́ [da vaĭn<sup>†</sup>], before the war.

до Рождества́ Христо́ва<sup>2</sup> [da razdostvá xiistóva], up to, i.e. before the birth of Christ, B.C.

отъ начала до конца [At nAtfatA dA kantsa], from beginning to end.

до э́того ма́ленькаго до́ма [da étava málonkava dóma], up to that little house.

100. The preposition npo is used with the accusative; it means about, of, concerning, e.g.

Я узналь про Ваше несчастие [ja uznát pra váfe hestfósije], I got to know, learned, of your misfortune.

Мы разсказа́ли про войну́ [mī rʌsskʌzdli prʌ vʌǐnú], We told of the war.

That is,  $\pi po$  with the accusative has the same value as o with the prepositional.

<sup>1</sup> Notice this plural form, where, in English, the singular would be used.

<sup>2</sup> Genitive of XphcróBb, a, o, ы, an adjective found only in this short form.

101. The 3rd plural of the verb used without a subject expressed has the force of the indefinite *they* or *people*, e.g.

говори́ли [длvлřÎli], They were speaking, they were saying. сказа́ли [skлzúli], They said, it was said.

102. (a) This indefinite 3rd plural is often the most convenient idiom to use in translating our passive, e.g.

Мнѣ сказа́ли [miɛ skʌzdli], They told me, i.e. I was told.

Не пуска́ли е́я [ńє puskáli jəjó], They did not admit her, i.e. she was not admitted.

(b) The passive may often be rendered by the Russian reflexive verb, e.g.

Это сдблалось [éts sdétstas], That was done, that took place.

103. The reflexive pronoun for *self* referring to any subject is declined thus:

gen.	ceбя́ [səbá]
dat.	ceft [səbɛ́]
acc.	себя́ [səbá]
instr.	собо́ю [sabóju]
prep.	ceft [səbé]

# VOCABULARY

- сирота́, ы́, о́ты [sirʌtó], orphan
- сиро́тка, и, и [širótkʌ], little orphan
- война́, ы́, во́йны [vʌĭná], war
- семья́, и́, –и [səmjá], family
- Рождество́, á [rʌʒdəs(t)vó], Christmas
- нача́ло, а, а [natsáta], beginning
- го́ре, я, я́ [gó́rə], grief, sorrow

CBÓII [svól], one's own

- чужо́й [tjuzól], strange, not one's own
- цѣ́лый [tśśłī], whole, entire
- счастли́вый [stfas(t)lívi], happy
- несча́стный [nəstʃás(t)nï], unhappy, unfortunate
- TARE H [tak i], and so too
- пуска́ть 131 A [puská<sup>i</sup>t], to let, admit

- нска́ть (with genit. or acc.) A [iská<sup>it</sup>], to seek
- задýмать [zʌdúmʌtɨ], to conceive a plan
- рѣши́ть [iəjît], to make up one's mind, resolve, solve
- броди́ть A [brʌdít], to wander about
- взялъ, ла́ [vżał, vżsłá], he took (once)
- взять къ себѣ [vża<sup>i</sup>t ksəbɛ́], to take to oneself, to adopt
- дошёль, шла́, ó [dʌʃót, ʃtá, ó], went up to, reached
- отчего́? [лtjəvó] stands for отъ чего́? from what? i.e. from what cause? and is a common equivalent for why?

#### EXERCISES

# A. Translate :

(1) Наконецъ она задумала искать отца и мать. (2) Пошла она по городу. (3) Бродила цилый день и только къ вечеру дошла́ она́ до большо́й больницы. (4) Но въ больницу ея́ не пускали. (5) Бхалъ мимо дѣвочки богатый купецъ. (6) Опа разсказала ему про своё 1 горе. (7) Добрый человъкъ вощёлъ въ больницу узнать про отца и мать несчастной дбвочки. (8) Тамъ ему сказали, что они уже умерли. (9) И ръшилъ добрый купецъ взять спротку къ себъ. (10) Такъ и сдълалъ. (11) Стала жить песчастная спрота́ въ чужо́й семь в какъ въ свое́й.<sup>2</sup>

# Тамъ ему сказали, что они уже умерли.

B. Rewrite Ex. A, making the subject of each sentence plural.

С. Вопросы:

(1) Что она́ рѣшила сдѣлать? (2) Сколько времени [of time] она бродила по городу? (3) Когда она дошла до больницы? (4) Могла́ ли она́ ви́дѣть отца́ и мать? (5) Отчего́ нѣтъ? (6) Кто пріѣхаль вь это время? (7) Про что ма́ленькая дъвочка ему разсказала? (8) Каковъ былъ этотъ купецъ? (9) Что опъ узналь въ большицъ? (10) Что онъ ръщилъ сдѣлать пото́мъ? (11) Сдѣлалъ ли онъ это въ са́момъ дѣлѣ? [in very deed, cf. при са́момъ вътэдъ in Ex. X].

**D.** Translate into Russian :

(1) Surely she did not wish to wander all day about the street ? (2) We took it into our heads [conceived the plan] to remain in the garden all [BCIO] night [acc. sing.]. (3) They said he never reached the white house in which the old woman lived. (4) From the beginning of the year till Christmas he was left alone in that large house. (5) Why did they not let the boy into those beautiful rooms? (6) What did you learn about the poor man's unhappy son? (7) It was well that I was not told about that. (8) The rich man (had) already died in the great hospital. (9) I learned that only last night. (10) The young men were standing in front of that large window. (11) The kind Russian ladies who arrived to-day adopted the little orphan. (12) She was walking past the little house.

<sup>1</sup> About her (own) grief. <sup>2</sup> In her (own) family. The distinction between ей and свой is made clear in the next Lesson, Par. 109.

# LESSON XXIX

# LESSON XXIX

DECLENSIONS OF POSSESSIVES, DEMONSTRATIVES, ETC. 104. MÓЙ, TBÓЙ, CBÓЙ, my, thy, one's own.

		singular		rturat
	M.	N.	F.	M. N. F.
n.	сво́й [svóĭ]	своё [svлjó]	своя́ [svʌjá]	cboú [svaí]
g.	своего́	[svajəvó]	свое́й [svʌjéĭ]	CBΟΙΊΧЪ [svʌíx]
d.	своему́	[sv <sub>1</sub> jəmú]	свое́й [svʌjéĭ]	свои́мъ [svлím]
a.	nom. or gen.	nom.	свою́ [svajú]	свои́ [svлí], -и́хъ [svлíx]
i.	своимт	[sv1ím]	свое́й (е́ю) [svʌjéi (éju)]	СВОИ́МИ [svʌími]
р.	своёмъ	[sv.jóm]	свое́й [svʌjéĭ]	свои́хъ [svʌíx]
	1.4. 1		A state of the second the state	

мо́й and тво́й are declined in exactly the same way.

105. нашъ, на́ша, на́ше, на́ши, our, ours, and вашъ, ва́ша, ва́ше, ва́ши, your, yours, are declined exactly like the words in Par. 104, except that the termination is never accented, e.g. на́шего, на́шей, на́шихъ are the genitives.

106. The following pronouns and adjectives are also declined like свой:

чей [tʃéi], чья [tʃjū], чьё [tʃjū], чьп [tʃji], whose? (stem чь, e.g. acc. sing. чьего́, чью, чьё), е.д. О чьей кни́гъ́ Вы говори́ли? [лtʃjéi kuíġ) vĩ gлvлídĺi], Whose book were you talking about?

ceii [šéī], cii [šijá], cië [šijá], cii [šijí], this (stem c, e.g. gen. sing. ceró, ceii; acc. fem. сю or ciió). This word is idiomatic in a few set phrases and is otherwise little used, e.g. сего́дня [šəvódňл], of this day, i.e. to-day; ciió мину́ту [šijú minútu], this minute, i.e. at once.

весь [ves], вся [fsa], всё [fso], всѣ [fsɛ], all (stem вс, e.g. gen. sing. всего́. ѣ replaces н, e.g. instr. sing. всѣмъ, gen. plur. всѣхъ), e.g. всё это [fso ἑtʌ], all that; для всѣхъ насъ [dlʌ fsɛx nas], for us all.

107. э́тоть [étʌt], this, is declined fully thus:

		Singular		Plural
	Musc.	Neut.	Fem.	M. N. F.
nom.	э́тотъ	это	э́та [ɛ́tʌ]	э́тн [éti]
gen.	ότοι	10	ότοй [έτ <sub>λ</sub> ĭ]	э́тихъ [étix]
dat.	ÓTOM	лу	э́той [étaĭ]	etc.
acc.	gen. or	nom.	э́ту [étu]	
instr.	э́тш	чъ	ότοü [έt.sĭ]	
prep.	ýto:	МЪ	ότοй [έtai]	

(a) TOTL, that, is similar in declension but takes 1; everywhere instead of II and always accentuates the final syllable, e.g. gen. sing. TOTÓ [ $t_{\Lambda}v\delta$ ].

**э́тоть** corresponds to either 'this' or 'that.' тоть means 'that.' When both words occur in a sentence э́тоть means 'this' and тоть means 'that.'

(b) оди́нъ, одна́, одно́, with plural одни́ (-и́хъ) for masc. and neut. and однѣ́ (-ѣ́хъ) for feminine, is declined like э́тотъ, but the accent always falls on the final syllable, e.g. gen. sing. одного́ [ʌdnʌvó], одно́й [ʌdnóĭ].

(c) The emphatic pronoun самъ, сама́, само́, са́мн, self, has genitive самого́, -о́й, -ого́, -и́хъ, and is otherwise declined like оди́нъ, одна́, -ио́, -ии́.<sup>1</sup> (One form only for all genders in plural.)

108. The words его́ [jəvó], е́я́ [jəjó], ихъ [ix, jix], are the genitive forms of онъ, оно́, она́, они́ and онъ́, but, as has been learned by this time, they do duty for the possessives of the 3rd person with the meanings *his*, *her*, *its*, *their*.

109. The distinction in use between the possessives Móñ, TBóñ, Hallib, Ballib, CFÓ, CÁ, HXB, and the word CBÓЙ, CBOÁ, CBOÉ, CBOÍ, must be carefully observed. The latter always refers to the subject of the clause and may refer to a subject singular or plural, of first, second, or third person, and may accordingly at different times require to be translated by any one of our possessive adjectives, *e.g.* 

Я видѣлъ сго́ сы́на [ja vídet jevó sín.], I saw his son.

Я ви́дѣлъ своего́ сы́на [ja vidət svajəvó sina], I saw my (own) son. Онъ ви́дѣлъ моего́ сы́на [on vidət majəvó sina], He saw my son.

Онъ ви́дѣлъ своего́ сы́на [on vidot sv.jovó sín.], Ие saw his (own) son. Онъ ви́дѣлъ его́ сы́на [on vidot jovó sín.], Не saw his (another man's) son.

Ohá Βήμβλα eró (ch) china [And videla jevó (jejó) sina], She saw his or her (another person's) son.

Она́ ви́дъла своего́ сы́на [and vídela svajevó sîna], She saw her (own) son.

<sup>1</sup> In the fem. acc. singular there is an alternative form camoë [samajó].

#### VOCABULARY

тётка, и, и [iótkʌ], aunt	пра́вда, ы [próvdʌ], truth
дя́дя, и, и ог ья́ [dáda], uncle	го́лосъ, а, а́ [gółʌs], voice
племя́нникъ, а, и [plamánik],	кольцо́, а́, -a [kʌ <sup>i</sup> ltsó], ring
nephew	зо́лото, a [zół̀лtʌ], gold
племя́нница, ы, ы [plamónitsa],	гро́мкій [grómki], loud
niece	золото́й [zʌtʌtóĭ], of gold
рука́, и́, –и [ruká], acc. ру́ку,	крѣ́пкій [kŕźpki], <i>firm</i>
hand or arm	дрожа́щій <sup>2</sup> [drʌʒɑ́ʃtʃi], trembling
па́лецъ, <sup>1</sup> па́льца, ы [palets,	слышать A [stifnt], to hear
páiltsʌ], finger	ну́жно [núʒnʌ], it is necessary

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

(1) Вы стро́или сво́й домъ. (2) Хорошо́, что я хотѣ́лъ купи́ть Вашъ домъ. (3) Онъ рабо́талъ въ своёмъ саду́. (4) Неуже́ли онъ сюда́ пріѣ́халъ изъ того́ го́рода? (5) Мы э́то получи́ли отъ своего́ отца́. (6) Ва́ша коро́ва броди́ла весь день по э́тому лу́гу. (7) Че́й гро́мкій го́лосъ мы такъ ча́сто слы́шали? (8) Всѣ э́ти ди́кія живо́тныя ѣ́ли то́лько одну́ овцу́. (9) Ну́жно бы́ло ихъ друзья́мъ сказа́ть всё то, что мы уже́ четы́ре го́да зна́ли. (10) Возмо́жно ли бы́ло ви́дѣть то, что Вы дѣ́лали въ свое́й ко́мнатѣ? (11) Всѣ на́ши друзья́ бы́ли тогда́ здѣсь. (12) Чьему́ сы́ну Вы да́ли ста́рую свою́ кни́гу? (13) Чье́й до́чери вы разсказа́ли всё то, что случи́лось? (14) Неуже́ли э́то пра́вда? (15) По сча́стію я не зналъ э́того го́рода.

B. Translate into Russian :

(1) My aunt is the sister of my father or mother, or my uncle's wife; I am her nephew. (2) My uncle is the brother of my father or of my mother; I am his nephew. (3) My niece is the daughter of my brother or sister; I am her uncle and my wife [remember the my wife is the subject of an independent statement] is her aunt. (4) I heard his trembling voice. (5) He gave me his trembling hand. (6) The little boy was playing with his finger. (7) His firm hand was lying on the table. (8) In a trembling voice [instr. without preposition] he was reading my book. (9) Whose book was he reading ? (10) I saw a gold ring on your finger. (11) Her ring was of (Par. 98) gold. (12) Can it be [is it possible] that he slept in his room ? [ambiguous in English].

<sup>1</sup> This word is declined like oright, but as the  $\pi$  in the nominative is soft, the  $\mu$  appears in the other cases to indicate that the  $\pi$  is still soft.

<sup>2</sup> In form a present participle active.

# LESSON XXX

110. The dative, instrumental, and prepositional plural of nouns have one set of endings throughout, viz. :

#### HARD FORM

a	dat. plur. instr. ,, prep. ,,	амъ, амп, ахъ,	e.g.	стола́мъ [stałám], tables стола́ми [stałámi] стола́хъ [stałáx]	
			Soft	Form	
	dat. plur. instr. ,, prep. ,,	ямъ, ями, яхъ,	e.g.	ня́нямъ [ňáňəm], nurses пя́нями [ňáňəm̀i] пя́няхъ [ňáňəx]	

111. Exceptional Forms in Instrumental Plural.—Feminine nouns belonging to group 4 in Par. 78 often end in ьми, e.g. лошадьми́ [lʌʃʌdmí], horses.

> мать has матерьми́ [motərmií] (see Par. 86) дочь "дочерьми́ [dʌtʃərmií]

112. Note that those words marked <sup>1</sup> in group 4 in Par. 78 have the accent on the termination in the oblique cases of the plural, *e.g.* nom. sing. ло́шадь [toʃʌti] but dat. plur. лошадя́мъ [tʌʃʌddm] nom. plur. ло́шади [toʃʌdi] instr. plur. лошадьми́ [tʌʃʌddií] prep. plur. лошадя́хъ [tʌʃʌddix]

113. The corresponding case-endings for adjectives are :

HARD FORM							
dat. plur.	ымъ,	e.g.	кра́снымъ [krósnīm̀], red, beautiful				
instr. "	ыми,		кра́сными [krósnīnii]				
prep. "	ыхъ,		кра́сныхъ [krósnīx]				
Soft Form							
dat. plur.	имъ,	e.g.	ра́ннимъ [róùim], early				
instr. "	ими,		ра́нними [róùiùi]				
prep. "	ихъ,		ра́ниихъ [róùix]				

114. In connexion with the terminations given in Pars. 110 and 113 remember the universal rules of Russian orthography :

я	must	never	appear											•
ы	>>	> >	3.9	29	Γ,	к,	х,	ж,	ч,	ш,	щ:	WI	ite II	

# VOCABULARY

портно́й (an adj. in form) [partnoĭ],
tailor
коро́ткій [karótki], short
до́лгій [dótgi], long (more generally
of time)

высо́кій [vïsóki], high глубо́кій [gtubóki], deep ни́зкіи [níski], low (not high) ти́хій [tíxi], low (not loud)

### EXERCISES

A. Decline in the singular and plural (omitting the genitive plural) :

добрый купецъ, молодой племя́нникъ, хоро́шее кольцо, тру́дный язы́къ, широ́кая у́лица, моя́ чёрная соба́ка, у́зкая ко́мната, на́ша глубо́кая рѣка́, ея́ дрожа́щій го́лосъ, его́ крѣ́пкій па́лецъ, его́ друга́я дочь.

B. Translate into Russian :

(1) He was speaking about the long days. (2) Into all the long, broad rooms. (3) Towards these low doors. (4) For my rich old uncle. (5) Into the deep rivers. (6) About all the loud voices. (7) With [C5] whose gold rings? (8) From the nephew of that poor tailor. (9) Along  $[\Pi 0]$  our narrow streets. (10) On the long tables. (11) Between your kind old aunts. (12) On to these short bridges. (13) Before their low doors. (14) The boys fell into the deep water but a brave man saved them. (15) About our damp fields. (16) Towards that high place.

# LESSON XXXI

Notice the following idioms :

115.

Что это за перо? [[to  $\pm x$  pero], What is that for a pen? i.e. What kind of pen is that? What is there to know about that pen?

Каки́мъ о́бразомъ? [kʌkím óbrʌzʌm], By what means? How?

116.

Мнѣ легко́ (ну́жно) э́то дѣ́лать [mhɛ ləxkó (núʒnʌ) ɛ́tʌ dɛ́tʌi], It is easy (necessary) for me to do that.

Ему́ тру́дно говори́ть по-ру́сски [jomú trúdna gavaříť parúski], It is difficult for him to speak Russian.

Мив (намъ) прія́тно слы́шать э́то [mhɛ (nam) přijátna slijat šta], It is pleasant for me (us) to hear that.

Éй непрія́тно смотрѣть на э́ту нгру́ [jéi həpřijátna smatřéi na étu igrú], She does not like to look at that game. Cf. Par. 189, 2.

# VOCABULARY

па́рень, рня, и [pár̀əň], lad	стара́ться 131 А [staráitsa], to strive,
ря́дъ, а, ы́ (въряду́, among)[iat (d)],	lry
row, rank	скрывать 131 A [skrïváit], to keep
крова́ть, и, и [krʌvá <sup>i</sup> t], bed, bedstead	concealed
чу́вство, а, а [t∫úfstvл], feeling	скрыть [skrit], to conceal
кра́сный [krásnī], red	очеви́дно [Atfovídna], evidently
покраснѣть [pakrasnéii], to blush	ря́домъ съ [rádam s] (with instr.),
блѣдный [blɛ́dnï], pale	alongside, close beside (lit. in one
поблѣднѣть [pʌblədnéit], to turn	row with)
pale	машина́льно [m.s ʃinú <sup>i</sup> ln.s], absently,
замѣ́тить [zʌmétit], to notice	mechanically, instinctively

# Exercises

A. Translate :

(1) Одна молодая же́нщина, кото́рая сидѣла одпажды ри́домъ съ свое́й <sup>1</sup> ста́рой тёткой, и машшиа́льно игра́ла па́льцами ей<sup>2</sup> руки́, замѣтила золото́е кольцо́ на па́льцѣ тётки. (2) Она́ спроси́ла, «Тётка, что э́то за кольцо́?» (3) Ста́рая да́ма покраснѣла, пото́мъ поблѣднѣла, и сказа́ла накопе́цъ дрожа́щимъ го́лосомъ, «Миѣ непрія́тно объ э́томъ говори́ть.» (4) Очеви́дно она́ стара́лась скрыть отъ племя́нницы свой <sup>3</sup> чу́вства.

Очевидно она старалась скрыть отъ племянницы свои чувства.

B. Rewrite the passage A, substituting a small boy for the young woman, an uncle for an aunt, and make the old uncle answer in a firm voice.

С. Вопросы:

(1) Γ<u>μ</u><sup>\*</sup> си<u>μ</u><sup>\*</sup> си<u>μ</u> 
D. Translate into Russian :

The rich merchant's beautiful wife drove up to [K5] the door. (2) At last the door was opened [see Par. 102, a] and she entered [into] the hospital.
 (3) First she passed through a dark entrance-hall, then she entered a large

- <sup>1</sup> **cBoéii referring** to the subject молода́я же́нщина.
- <sup>2</sup> en does not refer to the subject, but to the other person, the aunt.
- <sup>3</sup> cBoú referring to the subject in this sentence, ouá.

bright room, where (there) were clean white beds on which <sup>1</sup> lay the sick men. (4) She entered another room, passed one bed and came up to [Ex. XXVIII, A, 3] the bed which she was seeking. (5) There she found her son, the unhappy boy whom she had adopted two years ago. (6) He had been a strong, healthy lad then. (7) But suddenly he had fallen [*past tense*] ill with that dreadful disease. (8) There he (was) now a poor weak man. (9) His pale fingers were playing absently with the yellow papers that were lying on the bed before him. (10) The mother sat down on the chair that stood beside the wooden bed. (11) It was evidently difficult for her to conceal her feelings. (12) But she could say in a firm voice, "What papers are these ?"

# Nouns that have occurred for the First Time in Exercises XXI-XXXI

The numbering of the groups corresponds to that used in the list given in Pars. 77, 78, 79.

117.	Masculine	Nouns <sup>2</sup>			
	1				
зна́къ, и, и, sign	1	племя́нникъ, а, и, nephew			
су́пъ, а, ы, soup	1	прика́зчикъ, а, н, shop-assistant			
наро́дъ, а, ы, people					
	2				
трудъ, а́, ы́, trouble, diffic язы́къ, а́, и́, tongue	ulty 1	ключъ, а́, и́, key			
	3				
купе́цъ, пца́, пцы́, merch замо́къ, мка́, и́, lock	iant 1	па́лецъ, льца, льцы, finger (see note to Voc. XXIX)			
	4				
ра́зъ, а, ы́ (ъ), time, occas	sion I	о́ядъ, а, ы́ (на ряду́, in a row, at the same time), row, rank			
	6				
па́рень, рня, и (ей), (реа	usant) lad				
	7				
го́лосъ, а, а́, voice	I	о́родъ, a, á, town			
Feminine in Form					
	13				

ди́ди, и, и (ей) ог ьи́ (ье́въ), uncle мужчи́на, ы, ы, тап

<sup>1</sup> который is declined exactly like any other adjective in -ый.

<sup>2</sup> портной, tailor, is in form an adjective.

104

## PLURALS

#### 105

#### 118.

## FEMININE NOUNS

#### Ŧ.

больни́ца, ы, ы, hospital	пра́вда, ы, truth
комната, ы, ы, гоот	сиротка, и, и (окъ), little orphan
корова, ы, ы, сом	тётка, н, н (окъ), aunt
ку́хня, н, и (онъ or онь), kitchen	ýлица, ы, ы, street
лѣстница, ы, ы, stairs	холе́ра, ы, ы, <i>cholera</i>
мѣ́ра, ы, ы, measure	я́рмарка, и, и (окъ), fair
племя́нница, ы, ы, niece	
9	2
	йрмарка, н, н (окъ), <i>fair</i>

война́, ы́, -ы, war жена́, ы́, чы, wife

трава́, ы́, -ы, grass

#### 3

овца́, ы́, -ы (ецъ), sheep сирота́, ы́, о́ты, orphan земля́, и́, -ю, -и (е́ль), earth, land рука́, н́, -у, -н, hand, arm

The first two may have the accent drawn back one syllable in the accusative singular, e.q. CHPÓTY.

Note-семья, и, -и (ей), family, has the accent on the stem only in the nom. plur. 4

6

#### болѣзнь, и, и (ей), sickness, disease кровать, и, и (ей), bed, bedstead 5ма́ть, ери, ери (е́й), mother до́чь, ери, ери (е́й), daughter

пере́дияя (fem. adj.), hall, lobby

119. NEUTER NOUNS<sup>1</sup> 1 кольцо, а, -а (лецъ), ring 2 го́ре, я, я́ (éй), grief, sorrow 3 чу́вство, а, а, feeling пача́ло, a, a, beginning Рождество́, а́, а́, *Christmas* зо́лото, a, gold <sup>1</sup> животное, animal, is in form an adjective.

100	VERIOD, A	22 170 171		
	3 (cont.)			
несча́стіе, я, я (ій), и misfortune		, я (ій), happiness e, я, я, repetition		
120. Prepositions	THAT HAVE OCCURRED	IN LESSONS I–XXXI		
With gen.: безъ, близъ, вмѣсто, во́злѣ, для, до, нзъ, кро́мѣ, ми́мо, отъ, у. dat.: къ (ко), по. accus.: про, за, въ (во), на.				
instr.: ме́жду, за,	съ (со), ря́домъ съ, пе́ во), при, по (Par. 69).	редъ.		
VERBS THAT	HAVE OCCURRED IN LES	ssons I–XXXI		
121.	A (see Par. 206)			
I A (cf. Lesson XXXV)	IA $a, b, c,$	II A 1, 2, 3		
(1) выраста́ть	(a) (cf. Lesson XLII)	1 (cf. Lesson XXXVII)		
(по)гоня́ть	(по)везти́	* (по)говори́ть		
(по)гуля́ть	(по)жить	(по)лежа́ть		
(по)ду́мать	(по)итти́ <sup>2</sup> (inf. of шёлъ)	) (по)сидѣть		
(с)дѣлать	(по)нести́ (inf. of нёсъ)	(по)спа́ть		
(с)дѣлаться	(b) (cf. Lesson XLIII)	(по)стоя́ть		
(у)зна́ть	(по)ли́ть	2 (cf. Lesson XXXVIII)		
(съ)игра́ть <sup>1</sup>	(вы́)пить	(у)ви́дѣть		
(по)ку́шать	(с)жать	(по)нра́виться		
(1) отвѣча́ть	(c) (cf. Lesson XLIV)	(у)слышать		
(1) отдыха́ть		(2) сто́ить		
(1) понимать	(по)ѣ́хать	(по)стро́ить		
(1) посѣща́ть	(по)нска́ть	3 (cf. Lesson XXXIX)		
(1) приготовля́ть	(вс)паха́ть (на)писа́ть	(по)броди́ть		
(1) пры́гать	(Ha)IIIICalb	(no)oliomnt		

(на)учи́ть (по)работать (с)мочь (inf. of могъ) (на)учи́ться [fut. is cmorý] (за)сія́ть (по)сѣять (Par. 168 a) (2) ходи́ть (1) скрывать (1) спрашивать (по)стара́ться (по)чита́ть (за)болѣть (simple verb = to be ill) (по) всть, to eat, is ir-(за)хотѣть (irreg., (на)рисова́ть regular (Par. 220) Par. 222) (Par. 225) <sup>2</sup> Contracted to noiirú. <sup>1</sup> ън must be written ы.

(за)пла́кать

(1) пускать

(по)смотрѣть

## VERBS, B

107

11

(1) замѣтить

(1) случи́ться

(1) спросить

(1) получить

(1) ко́нчить

(1) убѣжа́ть

(1) поступи́ть

(1) встрѣтить

(1) отогна́ть(1) случи́ться

(1) купи́ть

(1) бросить

(1) рѣши́ть

122.

І покраснѣ́ть поблѣднѣ́ть заболѣ́ть <sup>1</sup> заду́мать сдѣлать узна́ть

B (see Par. 206) Ia, b, c\* взять (1) отвезти́ (1) принести́ пойти (пошёль) \* притти́ (пришёлъ) \* пройти́ \* найти́ \* войти́ \* пойти́ (1) послать (1) упа́сть (упа́лъ) (1) спасть (спасъ) \* сказа́ть (1) показа́ть (Par. 232) (1) разсказа́ть (Par. 232) откры́ть (Par. 232) (1) скрыть (Par. 232) (1) подня́ться (1) снять (1) прітхать (1) лечь (лёгъ) (1) сѣсть (сѣлъ) (1) стать остаться (1) умереть

(1) дать (далъ) is irregular (Par. 231) бы́ть is irregular (Page 34) noѣлъ is irregular (see Par. 220)

<sup>1</sup> See note to Voc. LIII.

# LESSON XXXII

## THE FUTURE TENSE

123. The future tense of the verb быть is :

я бу́ду [búdu], I shall be ты бу́депь [búdəʃ], thou wilt be, etc. <sup>Онъ</sup> она́ оно́ мы бу́детъ [búdət] вы бу́деть [búdəm] вы бу́дете [búdətə] <sup>Они́</sup> они́ они́

124. The future tense of any verb in the groups marked A (Par. 121) is composed by simply adding to the forms given in the preceding paragraph the infinitive of the verb, e.g.

Она́ бу́деть рисова́ть [лиа́ búdət risлva<sup>it</sup>], she will draw. Вы бу́дете стара́ться [vī búdətə stara<sup>it</sup>sa], you will try.

Note.—No verb under B (Par. 122) can have a future of this form. This is most important (cf. Par. 204).

#### VOCABULARY

пра́вильно [právilnʌ], correctly	я́сно [jásnл], clearly
пра́во [práv.], really	пре́жде (prep. with gen. or adv.)
пра́вда [prúvdл], truth, the truth is	[piézdə], before, formerly
ско́ро [skórл], quickly, soon	по́слѣ (prep. with gen. or adv.)
ме́дленно [niédlənʌ], slowly	[póslə], after, afterwards
по́здно [póz(d)nл], late	по-иѣме́цки [рлѝәи́ɛ́tski], in
по́зже [ро́зэ], later	German
ра́но [ránʌ], early	по-италья́нски [paitaljánski], in
ра́ньше [rá <sup>i</sup> ńfə], earlier, sooner	Italian
гора́здо бо́льше [garázda bóiljə],	можеть-быть [mozət-bit], may be,
fur more	perhaps

Никто инчего не понима́ль [nixto nitfevo ne panimát], No one understood anything.

A. Translate :

(1) Пра́вда, я э́того не зналъ. (2) Ра́но и́ли по́здно я всё бу́ду знать. (3) Тогда́ онъ говори́лъ но-ру́сски, но о́чень ме́дленно. (4) Ско́ро онъ бу́детъ говори́ть я́сно и пра́вильно. (5) Онъ пришёлъ по́здно, а она́ пришла́ гора́здо по́зже. (6) Никто́ э́того никогда́ не бу́детъ понима́ть. (7) Мо́жетъ-быть, онъ меня́ никогда́ не понима́лъ. (8) Она́ то́лько о́чень немно́го говори́ла по-нѣме́цки и по-италья́нски. (9) Пре́жде они́ то́лько немно́го чита́ли, но въ шко́лѣ имъ ну́жно бу́детъ гора́здо бо́льше чита́ть. (10) Хорошо́, что опѣ́ то́лько по́зже [not till later] бу́дутъ отвѣча́ть.

B. Translate into Russian :

(1) Why will the boys be taught at home? (2) Will they not learn far more at school? (3) She will never answer quickly and clearly. (4) It is impossible to say when the industrious workmen will rest. (5) It is well that he will not eat all his bread till later [say: will eat only later]. (6) No one will write anything. (7) The corn will be growing up in spring. (8) From whose friend will she try to conceal her feelings? (9) Sooner or later these old men will be working in the fields. (10) All the diligent school-girls will learn their lessons. (11) The one girl will lie on this bed, the other will sit on that chair.

## LESSON XXXIII

125. The complete plurals of the 1st and 2nd personal pronouns are :

nom.	мы [mi], <i>we</i>	вы [vï], <i>you</i>
gen.	насъ [nos], of us, etc.	васъ [vos], of you, etc.
dat.	намъ [nom]	вамъ [vam]
acc.	насъ [nos]	васъ [vas]
instr.	на́ми [námi]	ва́ми [vámi]
prep.	насъ [nas]	васъ [vas]

126. The plural of the 3rd personal pronoun is :

	Masc. and Neut.	Fem.
nom.	они́ [mí]	онѣ [л'nέ], they
gen.	(н)нхъ [	(j)ix], of them, etc.
dat.	(н)нмъ [	
acc.	(п)нхъ [	(j)ix]
instr.	(II)IIMII [	[(j)ími]
prep.	нихъ [пі	ix]

Most of these forms have already been introduced.

## LESSON XXXIV

§§ 127-128

127.

# надъ [nud], over, above, подъ [pod], beneath, below,

are both used with the instrumental. Accompanying verbs of motion подъ governs the accusative.

#### Exercises

Translate into Russian :

A. About them, on to them, behind us, over them, over me, between them, between us and you, with you, up to them, under us, with you, for them, towards them, according to them, towards you, about you, before them, in them, beside them, under them, over you, in his presence, in their presence.

B. (1) We saw them all. (2) They answered us. (3) You heard it. (4) What were you doing there? (5) We shall speak of you. (6) They will ask them questions. (7) When shall we eat them? (8) They never let us (in). (9) Are you speaking of our tame animals? (10) The white sheep were lying under the old bridge. (11) I saw this bright light above them. (12) We shall look for it later. (13) He will know it far better to-morrow. (14) Who found the black cow that fell into the deep water ? (15) She will never do that again. (16) They heard nothing. (17) He was sitting under the old chair. (18) He never spoke to us. (19) Whose pupil was trying to read? (20) Have you (got) those books I gave you yesterday?

### LESSON XXXIV

128. Time phrases :

кото́рый часъ тене́рь? [kʌtórĭ tʃas iəjéír], what time is it now?
въ кото́ромъ часу́? [fkʌtórʌm tʃʌsú], at what time ? at what o'clock?
въ два часа́ [vdva tʃʌsú], at two o'clock.
въ ра́ннемъ часу́ [vráñam tʃʌsú], at an early hour.
въ воскресе́нье [vvʌskiəšéñjə], on Sunday.
въ бтомъ году́ [vétʌm gʌdú], in this (or that) year.
въ бу́дущемъ <sup>1</sup> году́ [vbúduʃtʃəm gʌdú], next year.
въ пасто́лщее <sup>1</sup> вре́мя [vnʌstʌjáʃtʃəjə vřéňʌ], at the present time.
на друго́й день [nʌ drugóǐ de<sup>i</sup>n], on the following day.
къ ве́черу [kvétʃərʌŋ], of an evening.
прѣ́дка [vɨtʌs], rarely, seldom.

<sup>1</sup> These words are participles.

110

## LESSON XXXIV

объ́дъ, а, ы [лbét], dinner за́втракъ, а, н [zúftrak], breakиностранецъ, нца, ы fast ча́съ, а, ы́ [t[as] (after 2, 3, 4, gen. англича́нинъ, a [onglit[ónin], pl. sing. [t[Asá]), hour понедѣльникъ, а, и [рли́әdéilnik], Englishman Monday мнѣ́ніе, я, я [miléujə], opinion воскресе́нье, я, я (евъ) [vaskiaśéujə], Sunday ing about, never mind дѣло, a, á [dɛ́tʌ], business, affair BÓBCE [vófsə], at all рожь, ржи [rof], rye éсли [jésli], if пшени́ца, ы [p[ənitsa], wheat но́вый [nóvi], new Россія, и (и, ю, ей, и) [гляіјл], текущій [təkú[t]i], current Russia бýдущій [búdust(i], future въ Poccíu [vr.iśii], in Russia Фра́нція, и (и, ю, ей, и)[frántšijл], actual France про́шлый [pró[tī], past, last во Фра́нціи [vafrántšii], in France А́нглія [ánglijʌ], England Ита́лія [itálijʌ], Italy awan

#### EXERCISES

#### A. Translate :

(1) Прежде маленькая ученица только немпого училась, а въ бу́дущемъ году́ она́ гора́здо бо́льше бу́детъ учи́ться. (2) Почему она будеть скрывать отъ меня свой мнѣнія? (3) Нельзя знать, что за́втра бу́деть. (4) Въ воскресснье опи бу́дуть имъ шисать. (5) Если Вы всегда днёмъ и ночью будсте работать, Вы будете болѣть. (6) Пра́вда, я никогда́ объ этомъ не думалъ. (7) Никто никогда не будстъ пускать такого маленькаго мальчика въ нащу комнату. (8) Въ будущемъ году эти богатые иностранцы будуть строить громадный новый дворець на берегу рѣки. (9) До Рождества́ мы будемъ учиться дома. (10) На другой день мы говорияли съ Вашимъ другомъ. (11) Весной прилежный крестьянинъ будетъ съять ячмень и овёсъ, а осенью рожь и пшени́ну. (12) Почему́ англича́не никогда́ не хотѣли говори́ть съ ними? (13) Въ которомъ часу́ Вы принили домо́й? (14) Онъ пришёлъ на другой день. (15) Они вовсе не понимали всего этого.

Германія [фэгтаніјл], Germany

stránəts], stranger, foreigner

англичанс, анъ [anglit[ána],

ничего́ [nit [əvó], it's not worth speak-

- настоящій [nastajústfi], present,

грома́дный [gr.madni], enormous

онъ ушёлъ [on usót], he went

В. Вопросы:

(1) Что ученица прежде дѣлала? (2) Что она бу́деть дѣлать?
(3) Чего́ нельзя́ знать? (4) Когда́ они́ бу́дутъ имъ писа́ть?
(5) О чёмъ онъ никогда́ не ду́малъ? [Онъ никогда́ не ду́малъ о то́мъ, что, about the fact that, etc.] (6) Кого́ никогда́ не бу́дутъ пуска́ть? (7) Кто и гдѣ бу́дутъ стро́нть дворе́цъ? (8) Како́й дворе́цъ они́ бу́дутъ стро́нть? (9) До кото́раго дня мы бу́демъ учи́ться? (10) Что крестья́не бу́дутъ сѣять весно́й?

C. Translate into Russian:

(1) To-morrow we shall speak about all that with the Russian merchants who arrived here last Sunday. (2) We shall all work by night and amuse ourselves by day [say гуля́ть и игра́ть]. (3) After dinner we shall sleep in your bed. (4) It was not easy to speak with your poor friends, as [Takb Kakb] they came very late. (5) Their younger daughter will speak with you at an early hour on Monday. (6) How much will that breakfast cost? (7) Next year we shall be in Russia and perhaps we shall live there till Christmas. (8) She was never in France before; last year she was in Germany and this year she will be in England. (9) Why will the old peasant-woman pour the clean water on the already damp ground ? (10) Next day the peasant's friends arrived early from the town, but the old man (had) arrived still earlier along with us, and his wife arrived only a little later. (11) We shall write to them in the current year about this business. (12) At what time did they go in ? (13) They found him here at four o'clock. (14) Why did the silly boy not eat this black bread ? (15) Never mind, he will eat it to-morrow. (16) Wheat was sown last year and rye will be sown this year. (17) Englishmen will not always speak Russian badly. (18) They rarely spoke Russian well. (19) If you always speak [fut.] so fast, no one will ever understand what you are trying to say. (20) After Sunday we shall be living with our old friend.

## LESSON XXXV

### THE PRESENT TENSE

129. Up to this point only the infinitive, future, and past tense of the verb have been used. The PRESENT TENSE is not quite so simple in form as the past tense, and in many verbs it is not so simply derived from the infinitive; in fact two verbs may be in the infinitive very similar, and in the present tense quite different in appearance. Russian verbs are usually classified according to the form of the present tense. 130. All verbs, excluding a very few irregulars, have in the present tense one of the two following sets of endings :

*Note.* (a) Cf. the endings learned in Par. 123. (b) The variety of possible stem-forms is considerable.

131. All the verbs under I A in Par. 121 form the present tense by substituting the endings I in Par. 130 for the Tb of the infinitive, so that we have:

	(1)	(2)	(3)
я	ду́маю [dúmʌju], think	гуля́ю [guláju],	стара́юсь [stлrójus], try
	01001010	walk	
	ду́маешь [dúmʌjə∫]	<b>гуля́сшь [gul</b> ájə∫]	стара́ешься [stʌrújə∫sʌ]
ОНЪ			
она	Ду́маетъ [dúmʌjət]	гуля́етъ [gulɑ́jət]	стара́ется [starájətsa]
оно	ду́маетъ [dúmajət]		
мы	ду́маемъ [dúmʌjəm]	гуля́емъ [gulɑ́jəm]	стара́емся [stʌrɑ́jəmsʌ]
		гуля́ете [gulájətə]	стара́етесь [starájətəs]
они	ду́мають [dúm.jut]	гуля́ють [gulájut]	стара́ются [starójutsa]
опф.	Jay maior b [dumAjut]	i yamor b [guid]ut]	crapatoren [statu]utsa]

These are not three distinct types; they are merely three examples. Verbs in Ҍть belong chiefly to this class.

(a) The present participles of verbs of this type have the following forms :

Adverbial present participle (invariable) :

ду́мая, гуля́я, стара́ясь (pres. stem plus я), while thinking, walking, trying;

 Adjectival present participle active (declined as an adjective): ду́мающій, гуля́ющій, стара́ющійся (formed from 3rd plur. pres. tense), one who is thinking, walking, trying.
 (b) Compare Par. 80 (b). 132. Note carefully the spelling of the present tense of the reflexive verb :

сь in 1st sing. and 2nd plur. (i.e. after vowels).

ся in all other cases.

Before reflexive сь, ся, in all parts of the verb ь is preserved but ъ is omitted.

#### VOCABULARY

зажигать [zazigóit], to light, set on ла́мпа, ы, ы [tompa], lamp пища, и, и [pift[л], food fire жела́ть [zətá<sup>i</sup>t], to wish, desire тро́гать [trógst], to touch слушать [stufat], to listen продолжать [pradatzáit], to conупотребля́ть [upAtrabláit], to use tinue рѣша́ть [rejoit], to solve, resolve открыва́ть [Atkrïvó<sup>i</sup>t], to open закрыва́ть [zʌkrïvá<sup>i</sup>t], to shut VMETE [uniéit], to understand, to know полагать [patagáit], to suppose, how to have an opinion внимательно [vnimátəlna], attenпоживать [pazivá<sup>i</sup>t], to live, to dwell, tively to be (of health)

All verbs in this vocabulary belong to class I A.

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate:

 (1) Я внима́тельно слу́шаю всё то, что Вы чита́ете. (2) Они́ всегда́ дѣлаютъ, какъ жела́ютъ. (3) Почему́ Вы продолжа́ете говори́ть объ э́томъ? (4) Что намъ сдѣлать [to do now, once, on this occasion]? Они́ скрыва́ютъ отъ насъ всё то, что они́ ду́маютъ.
 (5) Она́ хорошо́ умѣетъ приготовля́ть э́то мя́со. (6) Всегда́ ли рапо зажига́ютъ ла́мпу? (7) Я ду́маю, что она́ не слу́шаетъ.
 (8) Въ Россі́и и въ Герма́ній рожь употребля́ютъ въ пи́щу [as food]. (9) Какъ Вы полага́сте? (10) Неуже́ли онъ уже́ учи́лъ уро́къ? (11) Не полага́етъ ли онъ, что ея́ учени́цы по́зже бу́дутъ учи́ться? (12) Хорошо́, что мы ра́ньше не пришли́ сюда́.
 (13) Какъ Вы пожива́сте? [How are you?]

B. Write sentences 1-3, 5, 6, 8, 9, 11 in the past and future.

C. Translate into Russian:

They wish; they conceal; we think; you know; do you know?
 what do you know?
 They touch.
 We solve them all.
 They are preparing that meat.
 We are opening this book.
 They shut it.
 I am listening to all that [ncë το, что] you are reading.
 He supposes that they will speak to them.
 It is done [дъ́латься] here.
 We are trying

§§ 133–137

to teach; they will learn. (11) Do they always [Всегда́ ли они́] do that ? (12) She fell ill. (13) She showed them all that. (14) Who generally opened this door? (15) Did she not give them good food and drink? (16) Does he not understand what [that which] you said? (17) We use meat as food. (18) She ean [*i.e.* knows how to] speak distinctly and quickly. (19) Will he not [не бу́детъ ли] touch this thing? (20) He asks them how they are.

## LESSON XXXVI

GENITIVE PLURAL OF MASCULINE NOUNS AND OF ADJECTIVES

133. Nouns in -ъ have genitive plural in
 -овъ, *e.g.* столъ, столо́въ [stʌtóf]
 or -евъ, *e.g.* па́лецъ, па́льцевъ [pá<sup>i</sup>]tsəf], after ц when the termination is not accented.

134. The most notable exceptions that have occurred, apart from words dealt with in Par. 136 (b), are :

глазъ, <i>еуе</i> ,	which	has g	gen. pl.	глазъ.
разъ, <i>time</i> ,	,,	,,		разъ.
англича́нин	ъ,,		,,	англича́иъ [ɑnglit∫án].
крестья́нин	ъ,,	۰,	,,,	

135. Nouns in -й have the genitive plural in -евъ, *e.g.* слу́чай, слу́чаевъ [stút[лjəf] (Group 5, Par. 77).

136. (a) All nouns in -ь, both masculines and feminines, have the genitive plural in -éй, e.g.

царь, царе́й [tsʌré́i]. посте́ль, посте́лей [pʌstéləĭ].

(Masc. nouns, Group 6, Pars. 77 and 117.)

(Fem. nouns, Groups 4 and 5, Pars. 78 and 118.)

(б) All nouns in -жъ, -чъ, -шъ, -щъ, have the genitive plural in -éй, e.g.

ножъ, ноже́й [no], пл<sub>5</sub>е́i], knife.

137. The genitive plural ending of adjectives is for all genders -ыхъ in the hard form, *e.g.* 

краси́вый, краси́выхъ [krašívix], beautiful.

and -ихъ in the soft form, and after г, к, х, ж, ч, ш, щ, e.g. послѣдній, послѣднихъ [pʌslédnix], latter, last. мла́дшій, мла́дшихъ [młót(īx], younger.

138. The *genitive singular* of the noun must be employed after два, три, четы́ре, these words being nominative or accusative.<sup>1</sup>

With numerals, after 4, in the nominative or accusative case the *genitive plural* of the noun is used.

Examples : два рубля́ [dva rublá], two roubles.

де́сять рубле́й [désət rubléĭ], ten roubles.

въ во́семь часо́въ [vvós∂m t∫лsóf], at eight o'clock.

Notice the usage with compound numerals :

два́дцать оди́нь рубль [dvátsat adin rup] (nom. sing.), twenty-one roubles;

два́дцать два рубля́ (gen. sing.), twenty-two roubles;

and so with 23 and 24, but

два́дцать пять рубле́й [dvátsлt pa<sup>i</sup>t rubléĭ] (gen. plur.), twenty-five roubles, etc. etc.

#### VOCABULARY

учи́лищный [ut[ili[nï], school, of ýжинъ, а, ы [úzīn] supper дворъ, á, ы́ [dvor], yard, court the school солда́ть, а, ы (ъ) [saldát], soldier вся́кій [fsáki], every зада́ча, и, и  $[z_{A}dat], problem,$ ка́ждый [kázdī], each послъ́дній [paslédni], latter, last exercise безпреста́нно [bəsprəstana], incesпять [pa<sup>i</sup>t], five шесть [[est], six santly, continually семь [sem], seven вмѣстѣ съ [vméstəs], together with во́семь [vósəm], eight игра́ть въ солда́ты[igrá<sup>i</sup>t fsʌldátī], це́вять [dévət], nine to play at soldiers де́сять [désət], ten заниматьса IA [zлůimáitsл], to два́дцать [dváts.t], twenty occupy oneself, to be occupied BCC [fso], all, always такъ какъ [tak kak], as (conj.) миѣ нужно [můɛ núʒnʌ], to me 1100 [ib.], for (conj.) necessary, i.e. I must, I need to

#### EXERCISES

Λ.	Give the genitive	plural	of:			
	ма́льчикъ, осёлъ	, глазъ	[irreg.], repóii,	дверь,	па́лецъ,	мать.

B. Translate into Russian :
3 boys, 5 boys, 20 boys, 21 boys, 22 boys, 26 boys.

<sup>1</sup> Read Pars. 179, 180 at this point.

116

C. Translate into Russian:

past all the red houses; beside these black tables; for those tame animals; from the other houses; from my kind aunts; out of the narrow, dark entrancehalls; from those Russian towns; till a late day; that is done in our house of an evening; we are trying to answer; they are ill [60.7btb]; what are their sons reading ?

D. Translate :

(1) Что дѣлаетъ тепе́рь Вашъ молодо́й сынъ? (2) Пра́во не зна́ю, но я полага́ю, что опъ тепе́рь вмѣстѣ со свои́мъ бра́томъ въ учи́лищѣ. (3) Онъ, мо́жетъ-быть, со всѣми други́ми ма́леньними ма́льчиками игра́етъ на учи́лищномъ дворѣ въ солда́ты, такъ какъ, въ настоя́щее вре́мя, вся́кій человѣкъ занима́ется войно́ю, да́же ма́ленькіе ду́маютъ то́лько о пе́й. (4) Ка́ждый ве́черъ, когда́ зажига́ютъ ла́мпу, ихъ мла́дшій сынъ всегда́ ря́домъ съ ста́ршими сёстрами у стола́. (5) Тро́гаетъ, открыва́етъ, закрыва́етъ кни́ги и тетра́ди. (6) Всё внима́тельно слу́шаетъ то, что чита́ютъ его́ бра́тья и сёстры. (7) Обыкнове́нно послѣ́дніе до у́жина приготовля́ютъ уро́ки и рѣша́ютъ зада́чи, а опъ всегда́ жела́етъ узна́ть, что дѣлается. (8) Безпреста́нно спра́шиваетъ, но сёстры о́чень ча́сто ис отвѣча́ютъ на его́ вопро́сы.

E. As far as the sense admits of it, write the sentences in Ex. D in the past tense and future.

## LESSON XXXVII

## PRESENT TENSE OF TYPE II A

139. Verbs in group II A in Par. 121 have in the present tense the second set of endings given in Par. 130, *e.g.* 

	(1)	(2)	(3)
я	говорю́ [длулі́ц], speak	стро́ю [stróju], build	учу́ <sup>1</sup> [ut∫ú], <i>teach</i>
ты	говори́шь [gлvлří∫]	стро́ишь [strói∫]	ýчишь [út∫i∫]
ОНЪ			
она́	-говори́тъ [gavaiít]	стро́нтъ [stróit]	у́читъ [út∫it]
мы	говори́мъ [даvагі́m]	стро́нмъ [stróim]	у́чимъ [út∫im]
вы	говори́те [длулі́і́і́е]	стро́ите [stroita]	у́чите [út∫it́ə]
они́	<mark>}говоря́ть [gavaiát]</mark>	стро́ятъ [strójət]	ýчатъ <sup>1</sup> [út∫лt]
UH D	<b>)</b>		

<sup>1</sup> ю and я never appear after г, к, х, ж, ч, ш, щ, ц.

## LESSON XXXVII

(a) Types (1), (2), (3) differ only in accentuation.

(b) The participles of verbs of these types have the following forms:

Adverbial participle present:

говоря́, стро́я, уча́ <sup>1</sup> (pres. stem + я), while speaking, building, teaching.

Adjectival participle present active :

говоря́щій, стро́ящій, уча́щій<sup>1</sup> [from 3rd plural pres.], one that is speaking, etc.

Adjectival participle present passive:

——, стро́нмый, учи́мый [from 1st plur. pres.], one that is being built, taught.

Adverbial participle past:

говори́въ, стро́ивъ, учи́въ [from past tense], having spoken, built, taught.

Adjectival participle past active :

говори́вшій, стро́ившій, учи́вшій [from past tense], one who has spoken, built, taught.

Adjectival participle past passive:

говорённый, (по)стро́енный, учённый [у ог ю of pres. tense changed into енный], one that has been spoken, built, taught (=learned).

(c) Compare Par. 80 (b), 96 (a), 131 (a).

140. There is very frequently a change in the form of the stem. In verbs of the 2nd conjugation such a change in the present tense appears as a rule only in the 1st singular.

141.	Present	TENSE OF	F TYPE II A 1	
сижу́ [	o be sitting [šiʒú] ь [šidí∫], etc.		висѣ́ть, to hang, to be hangin вишу́ [viʃú] виси́шь [višíʃ], ete.	g
сажус.	i [sadítsa], <i>to sit do</i> ь [sazús] ься [sadíʃsa, sódi		спать, <i>to sleep</i> сплю <sup>2</sup> [splu] спишь [sp̀i∫], et <b>c.</b>	

<sup>1</sup> 10 and 11 never appear after r, H, X, H, H, H, H, H.

<sup>2</sup> л is inserted after б, в, м, н before ю.

стоя́ть, to stand стою́ [stʌjú] стоя́шь [stʌíʃ], etc. принадлсжа́ть, to belong принадлежу́ [přinʌdləʒú] принадлежи́шь [přinʌdləʒíʃ], etc.

142. (1) In сидѣ́ть and сади́ться the д changes to ж in the 1st singular present tense. This is characteristic of verbs ending in -дить and -дѣть.

(2) In висѣ́ть the c changes into ш in the 1st singular present tense. This is characteristic of verbs in -сить and -сѣть.

143. Observe carefully the difference in meaning between лежа́ть, to be lying down (a verb of rest) and ложи́ться, to lay oneself down, i.e. to lie down. Cf. сидѣть and сади́ться (Par. 60).

Note ложиться спать [tazitsa spait], to go to bed.

144. In English we say, 'What is he doing?' 'I think he is reading,' and the Russian «Что онъ дѣлаеть?» «Полага́ю, что онъ чита́еть » exactly corresponds.

If the second sentence is reported in the past, it becomes, 'She thought he *was* reading,' but in Russian the verb in the subordinate class must still be present, *e.g.* 

Она думала, что онъ читаетъ.

So: Я сказа́ль ему́, что его́ мать сиди́ть у окна́, I told him that his mother was sitting at the window.

### VOCABULARY

- ВÓЛКЪ, А, И (ÓВЪ, termination accented throughout oblique cases of plural) [vołk], wolf
- левъ, льва, львы [lɛv (lɛf), lva, lvī], *lion*

а́исть, а, ы [áist], stork

- жура́вль, я́, и́ [zuráf, zuravlá], crane
- Звѣ́рь, я, п (е́й, я́мъ, etc.) [zv̀e<sup>i</sup>r], wild beast
- дѣ́вушка, и, и (екъ) [d́évu∫kʌ], girl (growing up)

карти́на, ы, ы [kartína], picture

- лиса́, ы́, ы́ (лиси́ца, ы, ы) (use 2nd word in oblique cases) [lisá, lisítsʌ], fox
- свинья́, и́, ∸и (termination accented in oblique cases of plural) [svinjá], pig

- де́рево, а, а́ ог дере́вья (вьевъ) [dérəvʌ], tree
- ike [3e], for, indeed, often suggests an antithesis

стѣна́, ы́, -у, -ы [stəná], wall

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

 Ді́вушки сидя́ть у окна́. (2) Она́ сидѣ́ла на сту́лѣ у окна́; она́ сѣ́ла на стуль. (3) Дпёмь львы и всѣ другія зве́ри спять въ лѣсу́. (4) Лиса́ стои́ть за э́тимъ де́ревомъ. (5) А́исты и журавли́ стоя́ть на мосту́. (6) Мы во́все не понима́емъ, почему́ ея́ краси́выя карти́ны вися́ть на стѣна́хъ э́той тёмной ко́мнаты.
 (7) Мы полага́емъ, что тѣ сви́ньи принадлежа́тъ бѣ́дному крестья́нину; ему́ же принадлежи́тъ э́та бѣ́лая ло́шадь. (8) Э́ти францу́зскіе солда́ты ложа́тся на́земь (=на зе́млю); они́ лежа́ть на мо́крой землѣ́.

- B. Write Exercise A in the past and future, as far as the sense admits of that. Omit sentence (2).
- C. Translate into Russian:

(1) He asks whose picture is hanging on this wall. (2) Our old dog is not sleeping. (3) She told me that the lazy girls were lying in bed. (4) They lie down on the bed. (5) They lay down on the bed. (6) They always went to bed at nine o'clock. (7) Why are you always speaking either [ $11\pi$ ] of lions [o with prepositional] and other wild beasts or of tame animals that belong to poor peasants? (8) To whom does this black pencil belong? (9) I never go to bed at night; I sit at the table and work all night, and then I sleep till dinner. (10) That is why they went upstairs [HaBépXb]. (11) On whose chair are you sitting? (12) She always sits on my chair.

## LESSON XXXVIII

145. PRESENT TENSE OF TYPE II A 2 (Par. 139)

ви́дѣть, to see	слы́шать, <i>to hear</i>
ви́жу <sup>1</sup> [v́íʒu]	слы́шу [sᠯî∫u]
ви́днињ [v́ídì∫], ete.	слы́шишь [sᠯî∫īʃ], etc.
стро́ить, to build	нра́виться, to be pleasing
стро́ю [stróju]	нра́влюсь <sup>2</sup> [nrávlus]
стро́ишь [strói∫], etc.	нра́вишься [nrávi∫sʌ], etc.
сто́нть, to cost	по́мнить [pómůiṫ], <i>to remember</i>
сто́ю [stóju]	по́мню <sup>3</sup> [pómůu]
сто́ншь [stói∫], etc.	по́мнишь [pómůi∫], etc.
<sup>1</sup> Cf. Par. 142 (1). <sup>2</sup> л	inserted after б, в, м, п before ю.
<sup>3</sup> Governs the <i>genitive</i> or takes o	with the <i>prepositional</i> .

146. Do not confuse сто́ить with стоя́ть. Note the difference in accentuation.

He сто́итъ [nə stóit], It is not worth while.

«Поко́рно благодарю́ вась.» «Не сто́нть.» [pakórna błagadaiú (II A 1) vos. no stóit], 'I thank you very sincerely (lit. devotedly).' 'Do not mention it.'

Ему́ сто́нтъ то́лько намъ показа́ть па́спортъ [jəmú stóit tó<sup>i</sup>]k<sub>A</sub> nom p<sub>A</sub>k<sub>A</sub>zá<sup>i</sup>t pá∫p<sub>A</sub>rt], He only needs (it costs him only) to show us his passport.

147. помнить is often used reflexively and impersonally, e.g.

Вамъ помнится, можетъ-быть [vam pomniitsa, mozot-bit], You remember, perhaps.

148.

Numerals 11-19

оди́ннадцать [Adinatsat]	11
двѣна́дцать [dvənútsʌt]	12
трина́дцать [trinótsʌt]	13
четы́рнадцать [tʃətírnʌtsʌt]	14
пятна́дцать [pətnátsʌt]	15
шестна́дцать [ʃəstnútsʌt]	16
семна́дцать [səmnáts.t]	17
восемна́дцать [vʌsəmnátsʌt]	18
девятна́дцать [dəvətnatsлt]	19

These numerals mean some unit added on to ten, диать being contracted from де́сять.

Except 11 and 14 all have the accent on Há.

Carefully observe the spelling, e.g. the final e of четы́ре and the **b** of пять etc. are dropped.

### VOCABULARY

помѣщикъ, а, и [pлméʃtʃik], land-	ду́бъ, а, ы́ [dup], oak
owner	столо́вая (fem. adj.) [stлtóvлjə],
рису́нокъ, ика, нки [risún.k],	dining-room
sketch, drawing	мы́шь, и, и (е́й) [mï∫], mouse
уса́дьба, ы, ы (дебъ) [usá <sup>i</sup> dbʌ],	благодари́ть IIA1 [bł.g.d.rít],
estate	to thank
спа́льня, и, и (енъ) [spá <sup>i</sup> lnʌ],	поко́рный [pakórnï], submissive,
bedroom	humble

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

(1) Ви́дите ли Вы этоть грома́дный домъ? (2) Полага́ю, что онь принадлежить этому помѣщику. (3) Тѣ картины имъ вовсе ненравятся. (4) Мнъ очень нравится эта маленькая собака. (5) Свиньи стоять подъ дубомъ. (6) Сколько стоитъ та уса́дьба? (7) Не сто́итъ ду́мать объ э́томъ. (8) Мнѣ по́мнится, что Ваши друзья никогда не были у меня. (9) Онъ меня покорно благодарить, но право не стоить. (10) Вотъ почему мой дядя новый сарай строить. (11) Нельзя слышать въ столовой его дрожащаго голоса. (12) Я никогда не слышалъ. что она его нашла на лугу. (13) Тринадцать мальчиковъ на училищномъ дворъ.

B. Write Exercise A in the past tense.

C. Translate into Russian :

(1) All that belongs to that rich old man that used to live in the village. (2) He said he never heard or saw anything. (3) Don't you remember the old wooden table that used to stand in the dining-room ? (4) Yes, I remember it. (5) I don't at all understand why he always goes to bed so early. (6) Surely you know that I have no sketches here. (7) How many bedrooms are there in this immense house? (8) I supposed there were at least four large bedrooms. (9) Then I think the house is costing too [CINILIKONID] much. (10) I do not like these little pictures. (11)<sup>1</sup> Fifteen men, nineteen men, three tall men, six tall men, twenty-four tall men. [Note that with numerals the genitive plural of **YEJOB** BRB is like the nominative singular.] (12) Eleven rich merchants, five long fingers, three grey mice, fourteen lazy pupils, four old teachers, five heavy keys. (13) 'Thank you ; I did not know about that.' ' Don't mention it.'

## LESSON XXXIX

<sup>2</sup> Cf. Par. 142 (1).

149.	Present	Tense	$\mathbf{OF}$	Type	II A 3 (Par. 139)
xo	ди́ть, <sup>2</sup> to go			ку	ри́ть [kuŕit́], to smoke
	χοжý [xazú]			1	курю́ [kuřú]
	хо́дншь [xód	i∫], etc.		·	ку́ришь [kúři∫], etc.
бр	оди́ть, <sup>2</sup> to wa	nder			оби́ть [lubit], to love
	брожу́ [brazi				люблю́ <sup>3</sup> [lublú]
	бродншь [br	ódif], etc	•		лю́бишь [lúbi∫], etc.

бро́дншь [bródif], etc.

<sup>1</sup> Read Pars. 179, 180.

<sup>3</sup> л inserted after в, в, м, п before ю.

смотрѣ́ть, to look at смотрю́ [smʌtrú] смо́тришь [smóti		держа́ть [dərʒú <sup>i</sup> t], <i>to hold</i> держý [dərʒú] де́ржишь [dérʒĭʃ], etc.	
служи́ть [stuʒît], <i>ta</i> служу́ [stuʒú] слу́жншь [stúʒĭ∫]			
150.	NUMER	ALS 30-100	
TDÉMMATE [titest]	30	CANE TROGETS [Samdast]	70

три́дцать [třítsлt]	30	се́мьдесять [sémdəsət]	70
со́рокъ [sórлk]	40	во́семьдесять [vósəmdəsət]	80
пятьдеся́ть [pədəsát]	50	девяно́сто [dəvənósta]	90
шестьдеся́тъ [ʃəsdəsdt]	60	сто [sto]	100

Distinguish these numerals carefully from the *-teens*. Here we are dealing with multiples : '5 *tens*,' etc. Notice that the accent does not always fall on the corresponding syllable. Again observe the spelling ( $\mathbf{b}$  or  $\mathbf{b}$ ): TPMAHATE alone is contracted, and the  $\mathbf{b}$  in 50-80 is to be thought of as the genitive plural ending of  $\mathbf{д}$ éсять. The form for ninety has never been properly explained, while со́рокь is the middle part of the Greek word for 40 ( $\tau \epsilon \sigma \sigma a \rho \alpha \kappa \sigma \tau \sigma$ ).

### VOCABULARY

чино́вникъ, а, и [t∫inóvnik], official	доброта́, ы [dʌbrʌtá], goodness
ста́роста, ы, ы (m.) [stúrasta],	ве́щь, и, и [v́é∫t∫], thing, affair
village elder	правдивость, и [pravdívast], up-
стана́нъ, а, ы [stлkán], glass	rightness
ска́зка, и, и [skáskл] tale, fairy-tale	жильё, я, –я [ʒïljó], dwelling
ба́сня, и, и (енъ) [básha], fable	на примѣ́ръ [na přimér], for
сига́ра, ы, ы [sigórл], cigar	example
папиро́са, ы, ы [рлр́іго́ял], cigarette	скро́мный [skrómnï], modest
тру́бка, и, и (окъ) [trúpkл], pipe	сли́шкомъ [slíjk.m], too much, too
Я люблю́ его́ за скромность	(acc.) [ja lublú jevó za skrómnast],
I like him for his modesty.	

служить трубною (instr.) [stuzit trúpkaju], to serve as a pipe.

учи́ть (II A 3) паизу́сть [utʃit nʌizúst], to learn by heart.

Любо́вью міръ де́ржится [lubóvu mir dérʒītsʌ], The world is maintained by love.

Доброе дѣло само́ себя́ хва́литъ [dobraje dɛ́ta samó sebá xválit], A good deed needs no praise (praises itself).

Трудъ ко́рмитъ, а лѣнь по́ртитъ [trut kórmit A lein pórtit], By labour we live, but sloth leads to ruin (work feeds, sloth spoils).

### EXERCISES

A. Translate:

 Обыкнове́нно мы хо́димъ домо́й въ де́вять часо́въ. (2)
 Сыновья́ купца́ бро́дятъ по го́роду. (3) Э́тотъ деревя́нный сара́й слу́житъ больно́му старику́ жильёмъ. (4) Онъ ку́ритъ гря́зную тру́бку; сига́ры и папиро́сы сто́ятъ сли́шкомъ мно́го.
 (5) Мы лю́бимъ Ва́шихъ друзе́й за ихъ доброту́ и правди́вость.
 (6) Благодарю́ васъ за краси́вую кни́гу, кото́рую Вы мнѣ да́ли.
 (7) Нельзя́ узна́ть, что онъ де́ржитъ руко́ю (въ рукѣ́). (8) Э́то пре́жде служи́ло дворцо́мъ. (9) Приле́жные ученики́ у́чатъ уро́ки наизу́сть. (10) Ста́роста и девяно́сто шесть крестья́нъ стоя́тъ пе́редъ до́момъ чино́вника.

B. Substitute past and future for the present tenses in Ex. A.

C. Translate into Russian :

(1) Wild animals are wandering about [IIO with dat.] the forest. (2) It is possible to find out [get to know] all that. (3) What are you holding in your hand? (4) They said they liked the Russian fairy-tales, but that the fables were not so pleasing to them. (5) I thought they were always smoking bad cigars. (6) What are you looking at? [on to what, etc.]. (7) They sent us five glasses of water and a little black bread. (8) Fifty cigarettes are not worth two roubles. (9) Why could he not show me the new books he had bought? (10) Do you learn this lesson by heart? (11) 15 industrious men, 55 poor men, 46 red pencils, 87 stone houses.

## LESSON XL

#### GENITIVE PLURAL OF FEMININE NOUNS

- 151. Nouns in -a have the genitive plural in -ъ, *e.g.* ко́мната, ко́мпатъ [kómnʌt], *room*.
- 152. (1) Nouns in -я have the genitive plural in -ь, e.g. и́ия, иянь [ǹo<sup>i</sup>ǹ], child's nurse.
  - (2) Nouns in -я preceded by a vowel or ь take й, e.g. шéя, шéй [ʃéjʌ, ʃéi], neck,

or én, e.g.

семья, семе́й [sənijá, səniéi], family.

153. If the a or  $\pi$  is preceded by two consonants which would be difficult to pronounce when final, the pronunciation is facilitated by inserting **o** or **e** (when accented this is sometimes  $\ddot{e}$ ) between those two consonants in the genitive plural, *e.g.* 

> служа́нка, служа́нокъ [stuʒánʌk], servant. сестра́, сестёръ [səstór], sister. са́бля, са́бель [sablʌ, sabəl], sabre.

This e is also used in the genitive plural to replace ь or й, e.g.

копе́йка, копе́екъ [кар́е́їка, кар́е́јэк], copeck. спа́льня, спа́ленъ [spá<sup>i</sup>lňa, spálon], bedroom.

Notice in this last example ъ is found where we might have expected ь.

Note. Nouns in **b** were discussed in Par. 136.

154. As the points dealt with in Pars. 152, 153 are rather troublesome to remember, the genitive plural has been indicated of all feminine nouns not accounted for by Pars. 151 and 136.

155. NUMERALS-' hundreds ' and ' thousands.'

двѣсти [dvésti]	200
три́ста (ста gen. sing. of сто) [trístл]	300
четы́реста [tʃətí́rəstʌ]	400
пятьсо́ть (gen. plur. of сто) [pətsót]	500
шестьсо́тъ (gen. plur. of сто) [∫əstsót], etc.	600
ты́сяча [tї́sət∫л]	1000
двѣ ты́сячи (gen. sing.) [dvɛ tīsətʃi], etc.	2000
пять ты́сячъ (gen. plur.) [ṕət tī́sət∫], etc.	5000
милліо́нъ, а, ы [miljón]	1,000,000

#### VOCABULARY

число́,¹ а́, ∽а (елъ) [t∫isłó],	ча́сть, и, и (е́й) [tʃast], part
number, date	окрестность, и, и [лкіє́snast],
мно́жество, <sup>1</sup> а [mnózəstvл], a	n eighbourhood
number, many, a lot	го́нчій [gónt∫i], hunting
пожъ, а́, и́ (е́п́) [no∫], knife	могу́чій [mʌgútʃi], powerful
де́ньги, егъ (fem. plur.) [deingi,	великолѣпный [vəlikalépnī],
dénək], money	splendid
квартира, ы, ы [kvartira], home,	о́стрый [óstrï], sharp
flat	тупо́й [tupóĭ], blunt
са́бля, и, и (ель) [sáblʌ], sabre	ма́лый [mátī], small
<sup>1</sup> Governs the gen	itive. Cf. Par. 30.

ма́лое число́, <sup>1</sup> а́, -a [mátʌjə t{isto], a small number	Ско́лько <sup>1</sup> [sko <sup>i</sup> lkʌ], how many, how much
ме́нѣ́е <sup>1</sup> [ḿе́nəjə], fewer	нѣсколько <sup>1</sup> [néskailka], a few,
бо́лѣе <sup>1</sup> [bó <sup>i</sup> ləjə], more	some
многочи́сленный [mnogatsísləni], numerous	сто́лько <sup>1</sup> [stó <sup>i</sup> lk <sub>л</sub> ], so many, so much
numerous ми́лый [míli], nice, dear	больша́я часть 1 [bailjája tjost],
изобража́ющій (a present parti-	a large part
ciple) [izʌbrʌʒájuʃtʃi], depicting ма́ло <sup>1</sup> [málʌ], few, little немно́го <sup>1</sup> [nəmnöqʌ], few, little	бо́льшая часть <sup>1</sup> [bó <sup>i</sup> ] <sub>f</sub> əjə t∫asti], the larger part, the majority
, , , , , , , , , , , , , , , ,	

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

(1) Множество тупыхъ ножей. (2) Нѣсколько пріятныхъ рѣкъ. (3) Много большихъ усадебъ. (4) Столько копеекъ. (5) На сухой землѣ. (6) Ско́лько де́негъ? (7) Бо́льшая часть бълныхъ женщинъ. (8) Менъе львовъ и болъе волковъ. (9) Многочисленныя семьи русскихъ крестьянъ. (10) Въ пріятной окрестности нашихъ деревень. (11) Слишкомъ много мокрой травы. (12) Немного богатыхъ помъщиковъ. (13) Множество острыхъ сабель. (14) Нѣсколько дома́шнихъ живо́тныхъ. (15) Ма́лое число́ краси́выхъ ко́мнатъ. (16) Сто́лько карти́нъ изображающихъ мужчи́нъ и ма́льчиковъ. (17) Сли́шкомъ мно́го великолѣпныхъ домо́въ. (18) У помѣщика о́чень мно́го го́нчихъ собакъ. (19) Столько лисицъ. (20) О могучемъ князъ и дочеря́хъ скромнаго крестья́нина. (21) Просты́я жи́лья скромныхъ (22) Сто́лько де́негъ и такъ ма́ло хлѣба. люпе́й. (23) Moя́ милая няня и ея многочисленные друзья. (24) Каждому мальчику дали острый ножъ. (25) Восемьдесять пять человъкъ. (26) Семь тысячъ шестьсотъ тридцать деревень.

B. Translate into Russian :

For the young Russian ladies, the large estate of my old aunts, the dirty windows of that large infirmary, without money and without books, out of the dark rooms, the great doors of those splendid houses, at their nurses', his sisters' games, the neeks and tails of the black cats, the white paws of their dogs, old women's tales, each of [13b] them, 100 eigars, 777 idle men, 11 small rooms, 16 young boys, 2222 wooden houses, the majority of your new pietures, the too numcrous friends of our elder sisters, so many difficult lessons, how many splendid churches.

<sup>1</sup> Governs the genitive.

126

### LESSON XLI

# LESSON XLI

## REVISION—Present, Past, Future Tense.

#### VOCABULARY

любе́зный [lubɛ́znī], agreeable,	интере́сно [intəŕɛ́snʌ], it is in-
amiable	teresting
хи́трый [xítrï], cunning	мо́жно [mózna], it is possible
хи́щный [xí∫nï], ravenous	неда́вно [nedavna], not long ago,
имѣть I A [iniéit], to possess, to own	recently
предпочитать IA [pretpatsitait],	вѣдь [ve <sup>i</sup> t], why, surely
to prefer	съ дѣ́тства [sd̀źtstvʌ], from childhood
изобража́ть I А [izлbrлzá <sup>i</sup> t], to	они́ (онѣ́) знако́мы [ліі́ (лііє́)
depict	znakómi], they are known
забы́ть [z.ıbit], to forget	во вся́комъ слу́чаѣ [vлfšákлm
	sṫút∫ʌjə], in any case

#### EXERCISES

#### A. Translate :

Мы рѣша́емъ, она́ бу́детъ сидѣть, она́ жела́ла, я бу́ду зажига́ть, онъ тро́гаетъ, онъ спалъ, я стою́, мы зажига́емъ, Вы говори́те, они́ слу́шаютъ, я стро́ю, онъ сто́итъ, онъ стои́тъ, онъ ви́дитъ, спитъ ли она́? приготовля́етъ ли онъ? э́то имъ непра́вилось, оши́ хо́дятъ, я держу́, я полага́ю, оши́ у́чатся, ку́рите ли Вы? я открыва́ю, Вы сиди́те, она́ виси́тъ, они́ бу́дутъ спать, я курю́ папиро́су, она́ закрыва́етъ, я сижу́ до́ма, я сплю́, они́ слу́жатъ, что онъ де́ржитъ въ рукѣ́? они́ бро́дятъ, онъ смо́тритъ, мы лежи́мъ, я бу́ду спать, Вы слы́шите.

B. Translate into Russian :

He was reading, he is reading, he was lying, she is lying in [H3] bed, they will stand, it will cost, I saw, I see, I worked, I am working, it cost, it costs, he stood, he stands, we do that, we used to do it, it used to hang, it hangs, we slept, we are sleeping, I hear, she heard, he is here, he was here, he will be here, I do not love her and she does not love me, I was smoking yesterday, I do not usually smoke, I shall not smoke to-morrow, I serve, he served, he serves, what are you gazing at [Ha *with acc.*]? we shall conceal it from her, it belonged to him, it belongs to me.

C. Translate :

(1) Въ нашей окре́стности есть оди́нъ бога́тый и могу́чій помѣ́щикъ. (2) Онъ имѣ́етъ мио́жество го́нчихъ соба́къ и лошаде́й въ свое́й уса́дьбѣ. (3) Ему́ принадлежи́тъ и [also] этоть грома́дный, великолѣ́пный домъ, кото́рый стои́ть при са́момъ във̀здѣ въ лѣсъ. (4) Когда́ сидя́ть у меня́ въ спа́льнѣ, и́ли стоя́ть у окна́ въ пере́дней, мо́жно ви́дѣть э́тоть дворе́цъ во́злѣ це́ркви. (5) Ско́лько сто́итъ тако́е жильё? (6) Пра́во, я не зпа́ю. (7) Во вся́комъ слу́чаѣ всё э́то мнѣ не интере́сно, и́бо (такъ какъ) я предпочита́ю скро́мныхъ люде́й и просты́я ве́щи. (8) На примѣ́ръ, я ча́сто хожу́ смотрѣ́ть на э́ти ми́лыя до́мики, кото́рые Вы ви́дите за́ лугомъ. (9) Мнѣ нра́вятся э́ти краси́выя карти́ны, кото́рыя вися́тъ на стѣна́хъ Ва́шей кварти́ры. (10) Неда́вно любе́зный другъ мо́й посла́лъ мое́й сестрѣ́ одну́ изъ свои́хъ книгъ съ рису́нками изобража́ющими ста́рыя ру́сскія ба́сни и ска́зки, кото́рыя ка́ждому изъ насъ съ дѣтства знако́мы. (11) Вѣдь и Вы са́ми не забы́ли «Волкъ л А́истъ», «Лиса́ и Жура́вль», «Левъ и Мышь», «Свинья́ подъ ду́бомъ», «Двѣ Соба́ки».

D. Вопросы :

(1) Гдѣ помѣщикъ? Како́въ э́тотъ человѣ́къ? (2) Каки́хъ соба́къ у него́ мно́жество? Гдѣ онъ ихъ де́ржитъ? (3) Гдѣ нахо́дится [finds ilself, i.e. is] его́ но́вый домъ? Како́й у него́ домъ? (4) Отку́да мо́жно ви́дѣ́ть его́? (5) Что говоря́щему [speaker] гора́здо бо́льше нра́вится? (6) На что ему́ прія́тно смотрѣ́ть? (7) Гдѣ нахо́дятся карти́ны? (8) Каку́ю кни́гу получи́ла [received] неда́вно ма́ленькая дѣ́вочка? Отъ кого́? Что изобража́ютъ рису́нки? (9) Зна́ете ли Вы съ дѣ́тства нѣсколько ба́сенъ и ска́зокъ? Каки́е, на примѣ́ръ?

E. Write Exercise C in the past tense.

F. Translate into Russian :

A lot of tame animals, of horses, eows, sheep, pigs, dogs, eats.
 How many wild animals, lions, wolves, bears, foxes?
 Twenty-one cranes and five storks.
 Four oaks and many other large trees.
 Twenty old books, forty-one new books, ninety-six French books.
 Five thousand six hundred and forty-four men.

G. Translate into Russian :

(1) The teacher showed the younger pupils a number of pretty sketches and pictures. (2) He asks them what those pictures represent. (3) In their opinion they all represent old Russian fables. (4) You could see the ravenous wolf lying [say how the wolf lies, or break the construction and say simply the wolf lies] under the tall oak in the forest along with the sick lion and the sly fox. (5) I always thought that there were a great many beautiful trees on the large estate of the rich proprietor who owns this village. (6) Surely they are not still sitting at table in the dining-room ? (7) I suppose they are smoking eigars after dinner; at least they usually do that. LESSON XLII

(8) In any case there are a lot of books lying on the table. (9) I know that she is still lying in bed. (10) We have known [*pres. tense*] these tales from childhood; the majority of [ $\Pi$ 3 $\Sigma$ ] them are also known to our friends. (11) Next year we shall, perhaps, be in France, and if we like your town and its environs, we shall stay there till Christmas. (12) Did those Englishmen understand what was said? (13) I am told that it was two of his sons who saved him when he fell into the river. (14) We are all taught in the old school.

## LESSON XLII

## PRESENT TENSE, I A (a)

156. In Paragraph 121 a small group of verbs is given under IA (a, b, c). They are sometimes treated as irregular verbs.

The present tense of these verbs has a stem ending in a consonant, in -Ъ (preceding -ять), or in -ь (see Par. 162).

These verbs all have in the present tense the endings -y,<sup>1</sup> -ешь, -етъ, -емъ, -ете, -утъ.<sup>1</sup>

157. I A (a). Terminations accented throughout :

 (1) жить [ʒit], to live
 везти́ [vəsif], to be actually carrying

 живу́ [ʒīvú]
 in a vehicle, to convey

 живёшь [ʒīvóf]
 везу́ [vəzú]

 живёть [ʒīvót]
 везёшь [vəžóʃ]

 живёть [ʒīvót]
 везёшь [vəžóʃ]

 живёть [ʒīvót]
 везёшь [vəžóʃ]

 живёте [ʒīvót]
 еtс.

 живуть [ʒīvót]
 етс.

Similar are :

- (2) ткать<sup>2</sup> [tka<sup>i</sup>t], to weave тку, ткёшь ог тчёшь, etc. [tku, tkoj (tjoj)] ткуть [tkut]
- (3) прясть [přast], to spin пряду́, прядёшь, etc. [př.dú, př.dóʃ]
- (4) Hectú [ňəstí], to carry, to be actually carrying Hecý, Hecëμι, etc. [ňəsú, ňəšó]]
- (5) итти́ [ití], to go, to be actually going иду́, идёшь, etc. [idú, idó]]

(6) CMŠÁTЬCЯ [sinəjá<sup>i</sup>tsʌ], to laugh CMŠIÓCЬ, CMŠĖIIIЬCЯ [sinəjús, sinəjó∫sʌ]

<sup>1</sup> Become ю and ють after vowels or ь.

<sup>2</sup> This verb might also have been given under Par. 163.

129

1

(a) The participles of these verbs have the following forms :

Adverbial participle present:

живя, везя, —, прядя, неся, идя (идучи), смѣясь.

Adjectival participle present active :

живущій, везущій, ткущій, прядущій, несущій, идущій, смѣющійся.

Adjectival participle present passive :

-, везо́мый, -, прядо́мый, несо́мый, -, -.

Adverbial participle past:

жи́вши, вёзши, тка́вши, пря́дши, нёсши, ше́дши, смѣя́вшись.

Adjectival participle past active :

жи́вшій, вёзшій, тка́вшій, пря́дшій, нёсшій, ше́дшій, смѣя́вшійся.

Adjectival participle past passive :

(про)жи́тый, (по)везённый, тка́нный, пря́денный, несённый, —, —.

(b) Compare Pars. 80 (b), 96 (a), 131 (a), 139 (b).

158. Note that changes in the stem of these verbs are frequent, and that, as well as the typical ending of the infinitive, viz.

vowel + ть, e.g. дѣ́лать, to do,

there are the forms<sup>1</sup> in

consonant + ть, e.g. пря́сть, to spin,

consonant + ти, e.g. нести́<sup>2</sup>, to carry,

vowel + 4b,  $e.g. \text{ MO4b}^3 \text{ [mot]}, to be able, can.$ 

159. ходи́лъ and шёлъ, which were exactly distinguished in Par. 40, are the *past tenses* of the verbs ходи́ть, to go, to be in the way of going (pres. хожý), and итти́, to go, to be actually going (pres. идý), e.g.

Обыкнове́нно я хожу́ по ве́черамъ домо́й [лbїknлvė́nл ja хлзи́ рлvė́tʃərʌm dʌmóĭ], I generally go home of an evening.

Куда́ онъ тепе́рь идёть? [kudá on təṕéír idót], Where is he going now? Спъ́гъ идёть<sup>4</sup> [shɛk idót], It is snowing. Дождь идёть [do[t idót], It is raining.

<sup>1</sup> See Par. 239. <sup>2</sup> Infin. of нёсь, carried. <sup>8</sup> Infin. of могь, could. <sup>4</sup> =Падаеть [pádʌjət] спѣгь, Snow is falling. 160. The compounds of  $\mathbf{u}\mathbf{TT}\mathbf{\hat{u}}$  (see Par. 122, I *a*, *b*, *c* no $\mathbf{\ddot{u}}\mathbf{T}\mathbf{\hat{u}}$ , etc.), like the compounds of most other simple verbs, have a form which looks exactly like a present tense, but is really an immediate future referring to one definite event (see Par. 204), *e.g.* 

Я пойду́ сейча́сь [ja pʌĭdú sətʃás], I shall go at once.

Онь войдёть че́резь чась вь ко́мпату [on valdot tjérəs tjas fkómnatu], He will enter the room in an hour (lit. through an hour, after the lapse of).

Сего́дня мы прійдёмъ (ог придёмъ) къ Вамъ въ три часа́ [səvódňʌ mī přidóm kvam ftři tʃʌsá], To-day we shall come to you at 3 o'clock.

Similarly :

пройду́ [ртлі́dú], I shall go through, traverse. вы́йду [vī́idu], I shall go out (come out). перейду́ [pər̀əidú], I shall go through to the other side. дойду́ [dʌidú], I shall reach, go up to.

161. PAST TENSES of verbs in Par. 157:

вёзь, везла́, везло́, везли́ жиль, жила́, жи́ло, жи́ли ткаль, ткала́, тка́ло, тка́ли пряль, пряла́, пряло́, пряли́ нёсь, несла́, песло́, несли́ шёль, шла, шло, шли смѣя́лся, смѣя́лась, etc.

## VOCABULARY

лю́ди, е́й <sup>1</sup> (m. pl.) [lúdi], people	она́ должна́ [dʌt͡ʒnɑ́], she must
снѣгъ, a, á [shɛk], snow	оно должно [datzno], it must
въ снѣгу́ [fsnəgú], in the snow	они́ должны́ [dʌtʒnt], they must
дождь, я́, и́ [dost], rain	на дворѣ [na dvařé], out of doors,
уѣздъ, а, ы [ujɛ́st], canton, district	lit. on the yard
губе́рнія, и, и (ій) [gubernija],	и́зъ дому <sup>2</sup> [ízdʌmu], out of the house
government (corresponding to	ежедне́вно [jəzədnévnʌ], daily, each
province or department)	day
изба́, ы́, -у, -ы [izbá], peasant's	совсѣмъ нѣтъ [safšém úɛt], not at
house, hut	all
дѣло, a, á [dɛ́tʌ], act, deed, business,	че́резъ (gov. acc.) [t]érəs], through,
affair	across
голо́дный [gʌłódnï], hungry	находи́ться [naxadítsa], to find it-
онъ до́лженъ дѣ́лать [on dót <sub>3</sub> ən	self, to be
détai], he is under an obligation	умира́ть IA [umirá <sup>i</sup> t], to die
to (he must) do	
<sup>1</sup> instr. plurьми́. <sup>2</sup> Cf.	отъ xóлоду (gen. in -y), Voc. XLIII.

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate:

 На дворѣ идётъ дождь. (2) Не зна́ете ли Вы, пряду́тъ ли [whether] тепе́рь э́ти стару́хи? (3) Совсѣмъ нѣтъ; онѣ ткутъ.
 (4) Мы полага́емъ, что нѣме́цкіе солда́ты перешли́ че́резъ рѣку́.
 (5) Она́ уже́ четы́ре го́да живётъ въ э́томъ селѣ, но ихъ дере́вня нахо́дится въ друго́мъ уѣздѣ. (6) Э́тотъ ма́льчикъ идётъ въ ико́лу, вотъ почему́ онъ несётъ кни́ги и тетра́ди. (7) Сего́дня онъ прійдётъ домо́й изъ шко́лы въ три часа́, но обыкнове́нно то́лько въ пять часо́въ прихо́дитъ. (8) Отчего́ Ва́ши друзьи́ всегда́ смѣю́тся? (9) Мы должны́ рабо́тать ежедне́вно до у́жина.
 (10) Голо́дныя соба́ки лежа́тъ въ снѣгу́. (11) Чьи и́збы стоя́тъ за рѣко́й? (12) Неуже́ли э́ти многочи́сленныя се́мыя всѣ живу́тъ въ одно́мъ деревя́нномъ до́микѣ? (13) Нельзя́ узна́ть, дойдётъ ли она́ до э́того мѣста. (14) До́брые лю́ди умира́ютъ, но дѣла́ ихъ живу́тъ.

B. Translate into Russian:

(1) In the hut the old peasant woman is spinning or weaving, but her husband is always working out of doors in summer. (2) She will come out of the house after dinner; she will go through the garden and come to us. (3) We have hved in this town for [we live already] two years. (4) Our town is [say finds itself] in one of the large governments of Russia. (5) Surely you have not lived here for two years? (6) I am going home now. (7) I go home every day at six o'clock. (8) To-day I'll go home at seven. (9) They went along the street this morning. (10) We must carry the little boy. (11) She is not to go out of the house. (12) What are we to do? Do you know that it is snowing ? (13) He did not carry it. (14) I suppose she is spinning; she does not know how to weave. (15) In this government there are [find themselves] seven districts, forty-six towns, two hundred villages, and one million two hundred and seventy thousand people. (16) Did she get to know that ? (17) Not at all; she never reached the house where her friends were living at that time. (18) I did not know whether she came here vesterday. (19) They continued to laugh, because they did not understand what the old teacher was [is] saying to them.

## LESSON XLIII

§§ 162–166

## LESSON XLIII

PRESENT TENSE, I A (b) (Par. 121), MONOSYLLABIC WORDS 162. Initial consonant soft throughout : пить [pit], to drink

нь [рп.], *ю аник* пью [р́ји] пьёшь [р́јоʃ] пьёть [р́јоt] пьёте [р́јо́т] пьёте [р́јо́tə] пьють [р́јиt]

Similar are :

лить [lit], to pour вить [vit], to wind, twine шить [jit], to sew бить [bit], to beat

163. Some other monosyllabic verbs, often called irregular :

жать [ʒɑit], to reap
 жну [ʒnu]
 жнёшь [ʒɒioʃ], etc.
 жать [ʒɑit], to press
 жму [ʒmu]
 жмёшь [ʒuioʃ], etc.

ждать [zda<sup>i</sup>t], *to wait* жду [zdu] ждёшь [zdo∫], etc.

ткать (see Par. 157)

The 3rd plural forms are жнуть, жмуть, ждуть, ткуть.

164.

PAST TENSES

пить, вить, лить, жда́ть, тка́ть have the accent on the feminine ending; all the other past tense forms of verbs in Pars. 162, 163 have the accent on the stem.

165. Distinguish пить from пѣть, пою́, ёшь, etc., пѣлъ, пѣ́ла [péʲt, pʌjú, pʌjó∫—pet, pétʌ], to sing.

166. ORDINAL NUMBERS are, as a general rule, formed from the cardinals by giving them the termination ый, ая, oe. Just as in English, among the first few ordinals there are some exceptional forms :

пе́рвый [j	bérvï]	lst
второ́й [ft	Aróĭ]	2nd

тре́тій (ья, ье) [tréti (tjə, tjə)]	3rd
четвёртый [t∫ətv́órtï]	$4 \mathrm{th}$
пя́тый [pátī]	5th
шесто́й [ʃəstóĭ]	$6 \mathrm{th}$
седьмо́й [sədmóĭ]	$7 \mathrm{th}$
восьмо́й [vašmóĭ]	8th
девя́тый [dəvátī]	$9 \mathrm{th}$
деся́тый [dəsdtī]	10th
оди́ннадцатый [ʌdínʌtsʌtï]	11th

and so on up to 19th, the accentuation being the same as in the cardinals.

167. These words are declined like any regular adjective of corresponding form.

In тре́тій the stem is everywhere, except in the nominative masculine, треть-. The genitive singular is тре́тьяго, тре́тьей, тре́тьяго; otherwise the declension is that of чей, чья, etc. (Par. 106):

третьяго дня [tietjəvn dna], the day before yesterday.

The nominative plural is тре́тьи [trétji] for all genders.

### VOCABULARY

- ча́й, я, н [t∫áĭ], tea
- руче́й, ья́, ьи́ [rut∫ė́ĭ], brook, stream
- ча́шка, п, и (екъ) [tʃáʃkʌ], сир
- ча́шка ча́ю <sup>1</sup> [tʃáʃkʌ tʃáju], a cup of tea
- руба́шка, и, и (екъ) [rubó∫kʌ], shirt
- пти́чка, н, н (екъ) [ptítska], little bird
- верёвка, н, н (окъ) [vər̀ófkʌ], rope, line
- слеза́, ы́, -ы [sləzá], tear
- недѣля, и, и (ь) [nodela], week
- пѣсня, и, и (енъ) [pésna], song
- сиро́тство, a [sirótstva], orphanhood
- гнѣздо́, а́, ≃а [gňəzdó, gňózdʌ], nest
- пи́во, a, á [pívл], beer

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Voe. XXVII.

вино́, á, -a [vino], wine

- пла́тье, я, я [plátjə], dress, clothes
- THIXO [tixA], low, softly
- гро́мко [grómkʌ], loudly, aloud
- до́лго [dotga], long (of time)
- едва́ [jədvá], hardly
- Hecmotpή Ha τό, чτο [həsmatiá nató, sto], not looking on to, i.e. in spite of, the fact that
- поливать IA [paliváit], to water
- лить ручьёмъ (ручья́ми) [lit rutfjóm (rutfjámi)] ог лить какъ изъ ведра́ [lit kak iz vodrá], to pour in torrents
- жа́ться отъ хо́лоду<sup>2</sup> [за<sup>i</sup>tsл at xoʻladu], to shrink together with cold, to be pinched with cold.

<sup>2</sup> Cf. и́зъ дому in Voc. XLII.

#### EXERCISES

#### A. Translate :

(1) Въ которомъ часу Вы пьёте ежедневно чай? (2) Сего́дия нельзя выйти изъ дому, потому что нехорошая погода. (3)Наша милая, трудолюбивая мать шьёть платья для младшихъ дочере́й и руба́шки для сынове́й. (4) Вчера́ дождь лилъ ручья́ми; несмотря на это, старая служанка поливаеть мокрый уже саль. (5) Давнымъ-давно всѣ крестья́не въ этой дере́внѣ пѣли пѣсни, но уже давно больше здъсь не поютъ. (6) Третьяго дня онъ вилъ верёвки. (7) Не видите ли Вы, какъ птички вьютъ гитэла? (8) Я хотѣлъ узнать, почему Вашъ сынъ бьётъ свою собаку. (9) Она́ такъ ти́хо поётъ, что я едва́ слы́шу. (10) Пе́рвый день недѣли-воскресе́нье, а второ́й-понедѣльникъ. (11) Теперь седьмая недѣля года. (12) Хорошо, что теперь тёплая погода; прія́тно работать на дворѣ. (13) Вѣсною посѣяли,<sup>1</sup> а осенью жнуть. (14) Мальчики жмутся отъ холоду. (15) Въ сиротствъ жить-слёзы лить.

#### B. Translate into Russian :

(1) Every day at five o'clock most ladies drink a cup of tea; their little daughters drink a glass of milk. (2) It is well that she can [knows how to] sew. (3) I used to see her sewing [how she sews] at the window. (4) It is pouring in torrents to-day, and all the little birds are sitting in their nests, huddled together [and they press themselves] with cold. (5) Our friends did not sow in spring and they will not reap in autumn. (6) When does that bird build [wind, weave] its nest? (7) In spite of the bad weather we go to school each day, but to-day, perhaps, we shall not go to school. (8) How many cups of tea do you drink ? (9) The industrious peasants must make [wind] ropes in the evenings, when it is impossible to work out of doors. (10) A lot of large birds are building their nests in the wood. (11) I thought that they usually reaped the harvest with a scythe or a sickle. (12) They have lived for fifty years <sup>2</sup> in our government. (13) Why were they speaking of the sixth day of the week ? (14) When I passed her, there she was pouring [pours] the water on the garden in front of our door. (15) Ten men came through the seeond field. (16) Five easy books, eighty-two white horses, four deep streams, six long years.<sup>2</sup> (17) He never drinks wine or beer.

- <sup>1</sup> the sowing was done.
- <sup>2</sup> Genitive plural with numerals after versipe is norm nfro.

## LESSON XLIV

## LESSON XLIV

168. PRESENT TENSE, I A (c) (Par. 121)

Termination accented only in 1st singular or not at all.

(1) писа́ть [pisá<sup>i</sup>t], to write

пишý [pɨjú] пи́шешь [pɨʃəʃ] пи́шеть [pɨʃət] пи́шеть [pɨʃət] пи́шеть [pɨʃət] пи́шете [pɨʃətə] пи́шуть [pɨʃut]

Similar to писать are :

- (2) вяза́ть [vəzá<sup>it</sup>], to knit вяжý, вя́жешь [vəzú, vázə∫], etc.
- (3) пла́кать [płókʌt], to weep пла́чу, пла́чешь [płót [u, płót [ə]], etc.
- (4) μεκάτь [iská<sup>i</sup>t], to seek (governs gen. or acc.) μщý, ήщешь [i[t]ú, i[t[ə]], etc.
- (5) Bxatb<sup>1</sup> [jźxʌt], to drive in a vehicle, ride, go
   B́ду, B́дешь [jźdu, jśdəʃ], etc.
- (6) παχάτь [pʌxú<sup>i</sup>t], to plough παμý, πάμιεμь [pʌʃú, púʃəʃ], etc.
- (7) MOYL [mot]], to be able, can

могу́, мо́жешь, etc., мо́гуть [magú, mózə]—mógut]

(a) Verbs in -ѣять, like сѣ́ять, to sow, have the same endings : сѣ́ю, сѣ́ешь [séju, séjəʃ], etc., ю replacing y after the vowel.

169. Notice in these verbs the changes in the form of the stem :

(1) Verbs in -сать, *e.g.* писа́ть, change c into ш in the present tense.

(2) Verbs in -зить and -зать, е.д. вяза́ть, change з into ж.

(3) Verbs in -тать and -кать, *e.g.* ила́кать, change т ог к into ч.

(4) Verbs in -стать and -скать, *e.g.* иска́ть, change ст ог ск into щ.

(7) Verbs in - $\Psi$ b, *e.g.* MOVB, change  $\Psi$  in the 1st singular and 3rd plural into  $\Gamma$  or K, in the other forms of the present tense into K or  $\Psi$ .

 $^1$  The important distinction between this verb and mrmi was pointed out in Par. 97.

170. PAST TENSE of verbs in Par. 168:

(1) писа́лъ, писа́ла, а́ло, а́ли (2, 4, 6 similar).

(3) пла́калъ, пла́кала (5 similar). In fact all these verbs preserve in the past tense the accent of the infinitive.

(7) могъ, могла́, могло́, могли́.

171.	ORDINAL NUMERALS—tens, hundreds.	
	двадца́тый [dvatsátī] два́дцать пе́рвый [dvátsat pérvī] два́дцать второ́й [dvátsat ftaróĭ]	20th 21st 22nd
and so on to	29th.	
	тридца́тый [tritsátï]	30th
	сороково́й [злглклуо́й]	40th
	пятидеся́тый [pətidəsáti]	50th
	шестидеся́тый [ʃəstidəsdtï]	60th
	семидеся́тый [səmidəsátī]	70th

 семидесятын [səmidəsatı]
 70th

 восьмидеся́тый [vʌśmidəsátī]
 80th

 девяно́стый [dəvənóstī]
 90th

 со́тый [sótī]
 100th

 сто со́рокъ пя́тый [sto sórʌk pǎtī]
 145th

Notice in the last example that, as in English, only the last element has the form of an ordinal.

## VOCABULARY

мѣ́сяцъ, а, ы (евъ) [mésəts], month	бхать за грани́цу [zл grлúítsu], to
письмо́, а́, -а (смъ) [piśmó], letter	go abroad, i.e. beyond the frontier
чуло́къ, лка́, лки́ (óкъ) [tʃułók],	быть за грани́цею [graniftšəju], to
stocking	be abroad
другъ дру́га [druk drúgл], each	верхо́мъ [vərxóm], on horseback (lit.
other	as the top, the upper part)
другъ дру́гу [druk drúgu], to each other	ѣхать верхо́мъ [vərxóm], to ride, to be riding
грани́ца, ы, ы [grʌniítsʌ], frontier,	ходи́ть пѣшко́мъ [xadít pəʃkóm],
boundary	to go on foot
тюрьма́, ы́, ∽ы (емъ) [turmá], prison	найти́ [n.siii], to find взадънвперёдъ[vzatifpərot],back- wards and forwards, to and fro
Что Вы такъ поступа́ете? [{to y	ï tak pastupájotel. Why do you act so?

Что Вы такъ поступа́ете? [jto vi tak pastupajoto], Why do you act so? (Что? = Отчего́?)

Развь онъ это сдѣлалъ? [rázvo on éta sdétat], Perhaps he did that?

Did he do that ? equivalent to Мо́жетъ-быть, онъ э́то сдѣ́лалъ, or simply Сдѣ́лалъ ли онъ э́то?

Онь не хотѣ́ль (жела́ль) отвѣча́ть, да и то́лько [on uə xʌtét (ʒəłół) htvatja'it, do i tó<sup>i</sup>lkʌ], He did not wish to answer, and that is all, that is the end of it.

Не вся́кій хлѣбъ па́шетъ, да вся́кій его́ ѣстъ [nə fšáki xlɛp pá∫ət, da fšáki jəvó jɛst], Not everyone grows (ploughs) corn, but everyone eats it.

Дитя́ пла́четъ, у ма́тери се́рдце боли́тъ<sup>1</sup> [ditá płátʃət, u mótəŕi sértsэ balít], The child cries, the mother's heart is sore, i.e. when the child cries, etc., etc.

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

(1) Ра́звѣ онъ никогда́ не пи́шетъ? (2) Я поко́рно благодарю́ до́брую стару́ху, кото́рая мнѣ ва́жетъ чулки́, но она́ всё говори́тъ: не сто́итъ. (3) Къ сожалѣ́нію онъ въ настоя́щее вре́мя ѣдетъ за грани́цу; нельзя́ спроси́ть его́. (4) Къ сча́стію онъ уже́ до́лго живётъ за грани́цею. (5) Ра́звѣ Вы не зна́ете, почему́ дѣ́вочка пла́четъ? (6) Мпѣ сказа́ли, что до́чка тѣхъ бѣ́дныхъ люде́й уже́ до́лго и́щетъ мать, но не мо́жетъ найти́ ея́. (7) Что они́ и́щутъ своего́ отца́? (8) Я не жела́ю э́того сказа́ть, да и то́лько. (9) Мнѣ по́мнится, что мои́ сёстры прійду́тъ сюда́ сего́дня. (10) Что опѣ́ всё хо́дятъ взадъ и вперёдъ? (11) Нѣ́сколько люде́й полага́ютъ, что уже́ отвезли́ Ва́шего дру́га въ тюрьму́. (12) Я не могу́ Вамъ показа́ть на́шихъ но́выхъ карти́нъ.

B. Translate into Russian :

(1) Perhaps you did not know for whom the countrywoman was knitting stockings. (2) What sort of stockings does she knit? (3) I think she does not knit stockings at all. (4) They write letters to each other. (5) They are riding to-day in the forest. (6) I usually go to the town on foot. (7) I cannot send them all; neither can they [they also cannot do it]. (8) Why are they weeping? (9) Whose letters was she earrying? (10) What are you writing about and to whom? (11) Surely you have known that for long? (12) They told me he was walking to and fro in the garden. (13) He is at the present moment riding along the street. (14) Why can they not relate that story to you? (15) I suppose they do not wish to, that is all. (16) The 25th day of this month is Sunday. (17) I was talking of the 37th week of the year. (18) A great many, too many, wealthy Russians live abroad.

<sup>1</sup> With a personal subject this verb болбть belongs to IA.

#### LESSON XLV

# LESSON XLV

GENITIVE PLURAL OF NEUTER NOUNS

172. Nouns in -o have genitive plural in -ъ, e.g. лѣто, лѣтъ [létʌ, lɛt], year, summer.

As was explained in Par. 153 it is often necessary to insert o or e, e.g.

окно́, о́копъ [лкио́, о́кли], window. кре́сло, кре́селъ [křésłл, křésəł], arm-chair.

173. Nouns in -e preceded by a consonant have -en, e.g. Mópe, Mopéň [móře, mařél], sea.

Nouns in -ie take -in, e.g.

зда́ніе, зда́ній [zdáňjə, zdáňi], building.

174. The genitive plural of all neuter nouns is either indicated in the vocabulary or accounted for in Par. 172.

#### VOCABULARY

извѣстный [izvɛ́s(t)nī], certain, ую́тный [ujútnī], comfortable, cosy known, well-known высота́, ы́, высо́ты́ [vīsʌtú], height далёкій [d.lóki], distant

EXERCISE

on the Declension of Nouns of all Genders

Translate :

The colour of the blue seas, how many distant places, a lot of wooden arm-chairs, the height of those tall buildings, a few pretty villages, for the splendid houses, towards the angry men, in a certain place, to [into] a remote village, of the simple pietures, from  $[OT_D]$  other friends, from  $[C_D]$  the long tables, from  $[H3T_D]$  a distant government, a few difficult things, a number of large pails of [with] water, too little good rye, about the bad weather, he does not know these enormous buildings, he does not know these rich landowners, of your gold rings, so many pleasant rooms, about [o or HpO] the large estates, in a numerous family, the larger part of the dark forest, the majority of the Russian peasants, in my cosy bed-room, in their splendid dining-room, on to the green meadow, in front of their new red house, the angry lion's tail, in that beautiful neighbourhood, on the blue walls, under the wooden chairs; 5 brothers,<sup>1</sup> 13 wooden chairs,<sup>1</sup> 8 sons,<sup>1</sup> 18 friends,<sup>3</sup> 31 chairs, 86 years, 804 people.

<sup>1</sup> See Par. 77 (9).

# LESSON XLVI

Revision: Verbs of all the types discussed in Lessons XXXII to XLV.

#### VOCABULARY

- дѣ́душка,<sup>1</sup> и, и (екъ) [dɛ́duʃkʌ], grandfather
- батюшка<sup>1</sup> [bátu]kл], father
- ма́тушка<sup>1</sup> [mútu]kл], mother
- сапо́гъ, а́, и́ (ъ) [sʌpók], boot, footgear
- кожа, н, н [kóʒʌ], leather
- посу́да, ы (sing. collective) [pлsúdл], vessels, utensils

ме́бель, и [mébəl], furniture

- мете́ль, и, и [mətéil], snow-storm
- пе́чь, п, и (е́й) [ṕе́<sup>i</sup>t], stove
- дрова́, ъ (neut. plur.) [drʌvá], wood fuel
- дѣти (an irregular neuter noun, Par. 229) [déti], children
- взрослый [vzrósti], grown up
- другъ съ дру́гомъ [druk sdrúgʌm], with one another
- это просто [éta prosta], that is simple
- это уютно [éta ujútna], that is cosy

быва́ть I A [bīvá<sup>i</sup>t], to be usually the case, to be customary, to happen Занима́ться I A [zʌiimá<sup>i</sup>tsʌ], to busy oneself, to be engaged темнѣть I A [təmib<sup>i</sup>t], to grow

- dark
- разска́зывать I A [rAsskúzīvAt], to be relating (stories)
- починя́ть IA [patfindit], to repair
- топи́ть (лю́, о́пишь) [tʌpít], to heat
- затопля́ть I A [zʌtʌpldit], to heat, make up fire
- проводи́ть (жý, о́дишь) [рглvлdit], to spend (time)
- ро́вно [róvnл], exactly
- одна́кожъ [лdnúkл[], however
- итти́ спать [ití spa<sup>i</sup>t], to go to bed
- пре́жде всего́ [přézdə fsəvó], before all, i.e. first of all
- она́ хо́четъ (Par. 222), she wishes

#### EXERCISES

A. Paying attention to the accentuation of each word, read aloud and translate the following verb forms :

онн ходили, она несла, мы пряли, вы идете, ты живешь, онъ плачутъ, я принадлежу, они вошли, она вьетъ, Вы живете, я служу, онъ держитъ, я хожу, Вы можете, мы будемъ сидъть, учитесь, видъть, стоитъ (two words), стоить, стоять, строитъ, прядетъ, могли, писала, она ткетъ, мы несемъ, вы открываете, она пришла, я смотрю, шьютъ, състъ, стараемся, приготовляетъ, любить, любитъ, я сижу, они слышатъ.

<sup>1</sup> Diminutives in frequent use instead of the more formal дѣдъ, оте́цъ, мать.

- B. Give the infinitive and the 1st singular, 2nd singular, 3rd plural of the past, present, future tenses of the verbs printed in italics in Ex. A.
- C. Translate :

(1) Мы живёмъ въ маленькой избъ въ уъздъ всъмъ извъстной далёкой губернін. (2) Зимо́й о́чень часто у насъ бываетъ дурная погода. (3) Поэтому мы иногда не можемъ гулять въ льсу [or по льсу]. (4) Сегодня сиътъ идётъ. (5) На дворъ сердитая мете́ль и нельзя́ вы́йти и́зъ дому. (6) Моя́ мла́дшая сестра́ плачеть и хочеть знать, что намъ дѣлать и о чёмъ говори́ть. (7) Однакожъ всё это очень просто. (8) Такъ какъ уже рано темиветь, зажигають лампу въ три часа. (9) Но прежде всего мы затопля́емъ печь; печь то́пятъ (дрова́ми). (10) Ма́ленькія дѣти, которыя не должны работать, уже сѣли на стулья возлѣ пея́. (11) Они читають книги, играють другь съ другомь, или разсказывають другь другу сказки и басни. (12) Въ избъ прія́тно и ую́тно. (13) Же́ищины приготовля́ють кушанье. (14) Ве́черомъ мы пьёмъ ча́шку ча́ю ро́вно въ семь часо́въ; пото́мъ мой младший брать ложится спать. (15) Но взрослымь послъ **ужина ещё долго нужно работать.** (16) Матушка и бабушка ткуть, прядуть, вяжуть чулки, шьють платья. (17) А батюшка шьёть сапоги изъ кожи, или починяеть посуду и мебель.

D. Rewrite Ex. C, 1–9, 11–17, in the past and future.

Е. Вопросы:

(1) Гдѣ говори́щій живёть? (2) Что быва́еть ча́сто у э́тихъ люде́й зимо́й? (3) Почему́ имъ пельзя́ гуля́ть на дворѣ́? (4) Кака́я сего́дня пого́да? (5) Почему́ не мо́гутъ вы́йти и́зъ дому? (6) Что хо́четъ знать мла́дшая сестра́? (7) Тру́дно ли э́то сказа́ть? (8) Въ кото́ромъ часу́ зажига́ютъ ла́мпу? (9) Почему́? (10) Чѣмъ то́пятъ печь? (11) Куда́ уже́ сѣли дѣти? (12) Каки́мъ о́бразомъ они́ прово́дятъ вре́мя до у́жина? (13) Какъ быва́етъ въ избѣ́? (14) Въ кото́ромъ часу́ пьютъ ча́шку ча́ю? (15) Когда́ иду́тъ спать сего́дня? (16) Чѣмъ зашима́ются же́нщины и мужчи́ны по́слѣ у́жина?

F. Translate into Russian :

(1) I was told that this man's two sons lived in the little village beyond the river, but at the present time they live, I am told, in that great house that you see before you. (2) Surely you sometimes have good weather in this district. (3) Do you know what problem they are solving now?

§ 174

(4) I suppose their father has been carried away, that is why they are crying. (5) Perhaps they did not tell you that they went upstairs and entered the large dining-room, where the old lady was sitting. She was sewing or knitting. (6) What's to be done now? (7) What is he to do? He does not know how to work. (8) I thought that the stove used to stand near the windows, but there it is standing behind the door. (9) I was lying on one bed and he lay down on the other. (10) He is sitting there now. (11) What are they talking about? (12) We told each other that that was not the truth. (13) Why did most of these poor people always drink tea ? (14) They do not drink tea at all; they drink water or milk or bad wine or beer. (15) She remembers that the English lady gave him that little gold ring. (16) I do not like the colour of those enormous buildings at all. (17) Surely she does not want to go to school yet? (18) Really I cannot say whether boots are always made of good leather. (19) You are obliged to remain at home after dinner. (20) Did you never think of the lesson that you were to learn by heart? (21) Usually we go home at five o'clock; to-day we are going home at four and after Sunday we shall always go home at three o'clock.

## LESSON XLVII

#### THE NUMERALS

175. The declension of ordinal numerals was indicated in Par. 167.

If an ordinal numeral be compound, only the last element is declined, e.g. in "the 674th verst,"

шестьсо́ть се́мьдесять четвёртая верста́ [ʃəs(ṫ́)sót sémdəsət tʃətvórtʌjə vərstá]

only четвёртая is declined along with the noun.

176. The declension of cardinal numbers :

(a) Numbers ending in ь are declined like regular feminine nouns in ь; in 5–10, 20, 30 the accent is on the termination, *e.g.* иять, ияти́ [po<sup>i</sup>t, potí].

(b) со́рокъ, девяно́сто, сто, ты́сяча, милліо́нъ are declined like nouns of corresponding form. But when со́рокь, девяно́сто, сто stand before other numerals the oblique cases all end in a, *e.g.* сорока́ ияти́, *of 45*; directly before nouns this also happens; the prepositional ends in  $\pounds$  or a. The genitive plural of сто is сотъ. (c) The declension of оди́нь was indicated in Par. 107 (b). The plural means the only, alone, the ones.

(d) nom. όσα (m. and n.) [όb<sub>λ</sub>], όστ (f.) [όb<sub>2</sub>], both, has gen. οσόμχ<sub>δ</sub> [λδόιχ], οστ μιχ<sub>δ</sub> [λδόιχ], etc., etc.

оба, like два, takes the noun in the genitive singular. о́бѣ takes the nominative plural.

(e)	nom.	два (m. and n.), двѣ (f.)	
	gen.	двухь [dvux]	
	dat.	двумъ [dvum]	
	acc.	nom. or gen.	
	instr.	двумя́ [dvumá]	
	prep.	двухъ [dvux]	
(f)	nom	три [tři]	четы́ре [t[ətḯrə]
(J)		A L 1	
	0	трёхъ [trox]	четырёхъ [t∫ətïŕóx]
	dat	mpönn [thom]	TROTT TO GALT [f(oft)// m]

8000	Pour [tron]	Tothe point [1] out on ]
dat.	трёмъ [tr̀om]	четырёмъ [t∫ətїŕóm]
acc.	три <i>ог</i> трёхъ	nom. or gen.
instr.	тремя́ [tr̀əm̀á]	чстырьмя́ [t∫ətïrmá]
prep.	трёхъ [tr̀ox]	четырёхъ [t∫ətїŕóx]

177. In numerals of two or more digits each figure is separately declined, if the number be cardinal, *e.g.* 

nom. rpticra [třísta], 300	шестьты́сячъ [∫əs(t)tї́sət∫], 6000
gen. трёхъсотъ [třoxsot]	шеститы́сячъ [ʃəstitîsətʃ]
dat. трёмъстамъ [tromstam], etc.	шеститы́сячамъ[ʃəstitḯsətʃəm], etc.

Fortunately, however, numerals occur with great frequency in the nominative or accusative.

178. It has already (Par. 138) been pointed out that after the word Oglihithandrightarrow or the singular, even when this is merely the last element in a compound numeral, the noun is singular,*e.g.* 

сто девяносто одна же́пщина, 191 women.

179. **двa** and **четы́ре** (*two pairs*) were dual forms. The dual of masculine nouns happened to be identical with the genitive singular, and when the dual fell into disuse the mechanical rule became universal that after 2 and 4, even when they are merely the last element in a compound numeral, the *genitive singular* of the noun

§§ 180–181

must be used. TPH came to have the same effect by analogy. In any phrase involving one of these three words, *i.e.* where the construction normally requires nominative or accusative, though the noun is in the *genitive singular*, the adjective is *nominative plural* or *genitive plural*, *e.g.* 

два́дцать два больши́хъ (больши́е) до́ма [dvátsať dva ba<sup>i</sup>]́јї́х (ba<sup>i</sup>]́јї́jə) dóma], 22 large houses.

180. After other numerals from 5 upwards, when the numeral is *nominative* or *accusative*, both noun and adjective are in the genitive plural, e.g. три́дцать пя́ть больши́хъ домо́въ [třítsʌt], thirty-five great houses.

Whatever be the cardinal numeral used in a phrase, if the phrase be nominative or accusative, the numeral determines the form of the noun; if the phrase be in any other case, the numeral must agree with the noun.

181. (a) The date of the month is expressed by using the genitive (' of the tenth of the month'), or nominative neuter.

деся́таго мая, ceró (мѣ́сяца) [dośátava mája, šovó (méšotsa)], on the tenth of May, of this month, curt.

Сего́дня деся́тое (число́) ію́ля [səvódňa dəsótajə ijúla], To-day is the 10th of July.

(b) The date of the year is expressed in two ways :

(1) '1892 A.D.' is

въ ты́сяча восемьсо́тъ девяно́сто второ́мъ году́ по Рождествѣ (по = after takes the prep.) Христо́вомъ [xristóvʌm] (after the birth of Christ).

(2) 'the 22nd June 1892' is

два́дцать второ́го ію́ня ты́сяча восемьсо́тъ девяно́сто второ́го го́да.

(3) 'In June' is въ ію́нть [vijúna].

(4) 'On Monday' is въ понедѣ́льникъ [fpʌnɨədéilnik].

'On Mondays,' 'of a Monday,' is по понедѣльникамъ [рлрлйәdéi] nik.m].

(c) The time of day is expressed thus:

мину́та [minútл], minute.

часъ [t]as], one o'clock (=hour).

два, три, четы́ре часа́ [tfasú], two, three, four o'clock.

нять, шесть etc. часовъ [t[лsof], five, six etc. o'clock.

чéтверть четвёртаго [tjétvərt], 3·15 (a quarter of the fourth hour).
полови́на четвёртаго [рлідійлл], 3·30 (half of the fourth hour).
безъ чéтверти четы́ре [bəs tjétvərti], 3·45 (four, less a quarter).
дéсять мину́тъ пя́таго [désət minút pótлул], 4·10 (ten minutes of the fifth hour).
безъ де́сяти мину́тъ пять [désəti], 4·50 (five less ten minutes).
въ пять часо́въ, at five o'clock
о́коло пяти́ часо́въ [о́кліл], about five o'clock (genitive).

Children milite income formally accuration of the formation.

182. To indicate an approximate number the numeral is placed after the noun, e.g.

два́дцать рубле́й [dváts.t rubléĭ], twenty roubles. but рубле́й два́дцать [rubléĭ dváts.t], about twenty roubles. го́да четы́ре [gód. t]ətîřə], about four years.

183. To express the distributive form (at the rate of, so many each) по is used with the accusative of два, три, четы́ре, but with the dative of any other numeral, e.g.

Онъ имъ далъ по два рубля́ [ou jim dat p. dva rublá], He gave them two roubles each.

По одной копе́йкъ [рл лdnói kaṕе́ikэ], one copeck each. По трина́дцати [рл třinátsati], at the rate of thirteen.

184. ORDINAL NUMBERS that have not yet been given are :

двухъсо́тый [dvuxsóti]	200th
трёхъсо́тый [troxsóti]	300th
четырёхъсо́тый [t∫ətïŕoxsótĭ]	400th
ияти <mark>со́ты</mark> й [pətisóti]	500th
шестисо́тый [∫əstisótï]	600th
семисо́тый [səmisótī]	700th
восьмисо́тый [vasmisóti]	S00th
девятисо́тый [dəvətisóti]	900th
<mark>ты́сячны</mark> й [tîsət∫nï]	1000th
двухъ ты́сячный [dvux tísət∫ni]	2000th
стоты́сячный [stʌtîsət∫nī]	100,000th
милліо́нный [milónï]	1,000,000th

## VOCABULARY

- воскресе́нье, Sunday (Voc. XXXIV)
- понедѣльникъ, Monday (Voc. XXXIV)
- вто́рникъ, a (second (working-)day) [ftórnik], Tuesday
- среда́, ы́ (middle (of week)) [srədá], Wednesday
- четве́ргъ, á [t[ətvɛ́rk], Thursday
- пя́тница, ы [pátnitsʌ], Friday
- суббо́та, ы (sabbath) [subótʌ], Saturday
- янва́рь, я́, и́ [jənvá<sup>i</sup>r], January
- февраль, я́, и́ [fəvrá<sup>i</sup>l], February

ма́ртъ, а, ы [mart], March апрѣ́ль, я [лріе́<sup>i</sup>], April
ма́й, я, и [máī], May
ію́нь, я, и [ijú<sup>i</sup>i], June
ію́ль, я, и [ijú<sup>i</sup>i], July
а́вгустъ, а, ы [ávgust], August сентя́брь, я́, и́ [sənidbi], September октя́брь, я́, и́ [sənidbi], October
ноя́брь, я́, и́ [ллја́bi], November
дека́брь, я́, и́ [dəkábi], December
роди́ться [rʌdítsʌ], to be born
сконча́ться [skʌntʃá<sup>i</sup>tsʌ], to die, lit. to come to an end, to decease

#### EXERCISE

Translate into Russian :

(1) The woman's rich friend died on the 29th of January, 1852. (2) They were born on the 10th of May 1903. (3) To-day is the 9th of October. (4) How much did she give you? She gave us only ten copecks each. (5) In June we sometimes have good weather, seldom hot weather. (6) The third day of the week is Tuesday. (7) There are 365 days in the year. (8) Twenty men went into this little room; but the twenty-first man they did not admit. (9) The landed proprietor who lives near [in the neighbourhood of] the town has four beautiful white horses and about twenty hunting-dogs. (10) The twenty-fifth of December is Christmas. (11) They came here early in the morning of the 23rd of this month. (12) We saw about 40 soldiers who were walking along this wide street. (13) 546 men, the 546th man. (14) On Fridays we always go to church. (15) 257,649 roubles.

## LESSON XLVIII

185. Certain verbs in frequent use require the complement in the *instrumental* case. Such verbs are :

быть [bit], to be<sup>1</sup> стать [sta<sup>it</sup>], to become<sup>1</sup> сдѣлаться I A [sdɛ́tʌtsʌ], to become<sup>1</sup> служи́ть (ý, -ншь), to serve as звать (зову́, ёшь) [zva<sup>it</sup>], to call, to name

 $^1$  Especially when a merely temporary quality or change of state is expressed. See note to Par. 69.

называ́ться I A [nʌzïvú<sup>i</sup>tsʌ], to be called счита́ть I A [stʃitú<sup>i</sup>t], to reckon, to consider почита́ться I A [pʌtʃitú<sup>i</sup>tsʌ], to be regarded as владъ́ть I A [vtʌdɛ́it], to dominate, to rule over

## Examples :

Онъ сталъ бога́тымъ кунцо́мъ [on stat bagátim kuptsóm], He became (a) rich merchant.

Эта комната ему служить спа́льнею [éta komnata jəmú stúzīt spá<sup>i</sup>lnəju], This room serves him as a bedroom.

Его́ зову́ть Никола́смь [jəvó zavút nikatájəm], They call him Nicholas (by the name of N.)

Это я считаю нужнымъ [éta ja stjitáju núznim], I consider that necessary.

186. cámuii [sómi] preceding an adjective gives to it the force of a superlative. This word itself means *self*, *same*; prefixed to an adjective it means *extremely*, *in the highest degree*, e.g.

са́мый большо́й [sámï b.<sup>i</sup>]∫о́ĭ], the largest.

#### VOCABULARY

кузне́ць, а́, ы́ [kuznéts], smith

- вѣ́къ, а, н ог á [vɛk], age, century на своёмъ вѣку́ [na svʌjóm vəkú], in his (life)time
- ца́рство, a, a [tsárstvʌ], kingdom, empire
- ца́рствовать [tsúrstvavat] (ца́рствую, еннь [tsúrstvuju]) (see Par. 225), to reign
- Госуда́рь, я, и [gлsudá<sup>i</sup>r], the Ruler, Lord, Empcror
- Импера́торъ, а, ы [impəratar], Emperor

Госуд. Импер. [gлsudá<sup>i</sup>i impərátлг], His Majesty the Emperor

госуда́рство, а, а [gasudárstva], state, empire

короле́ва, ы, ы [kлглĺévл], queen

- владѣ́ніе, я, я (ій) [vlʌdénjə], territory, possession
- владѣть I A [vtʌdéit], to rule over, possess

сѣверъ, a [śźvər], north

ю́гъ, a [jug, juk], south

- восто́къ, a [vastók], east
  - за́падъ, a [zápлt], west
  - прито́къ, а, и [pritók], a tributary
  - верблю́дъ, а, ы [vərblút], camel
- сме́рть, н, н (е́й) [sniert], death
- верста́, ы́, ∺ы [vorstá], verst (1067 metres)
- работа, ы, ы [rлbotл], work
- пусты́ня, п, и [pustínʌ], wilderness, desert
- óзеро, a, ≃a [óżərʌ], lake
- поко́йный [pʌkóinï], deceased, late
- рабо́чій [rʌbót∫ī], working, workman
- пра́здинчный [praz(d)nitfnī], holiday, feast(-day) (adj.)
- поле́зный [pʌlɛ́znī], useful
- тяпу́ться (ý, ≤ешь) [tʌnúitsʌ], to stretch, extend
- доходи́ть (жý, о́дншь) [dʌxʌdít], to reach
- впада́ть I A [fpAdá<sup>i</sup>t], to fall into

### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

(1) Въ шестнадцатомъ вѣкѣ не было въ владѣніи Россіи ни одного моря, но теперь она владъетъ нъсколькими морями. (2) Въ прошломъ году царствовалъ Государь Императоръ Николай Второ́й; онъ сталъ (сдѣлался) императоромъ послѣ (or по with prep.) смерти покойнаго Александра третьяго. Въ настоящее время уже не царствуеть; теперь нъть императора. (3) Русское царство, которое тянется съ востока на западъ на тринадцать тысячь вёрсть, а съ сѣвера на югъ на четыре тысячи вёрсть, русскіе считають самымь большимь государствомь на свѣть. (4) Четвёртый день недѣли называ́ется средою, а шестой деньпя́тница. (5) Шесть рабочихъ дней лю́ди работаютъ цѣлый день, а въ воскресе́нье и въ другіе праздничные дни всѣ отдыхаютъ оть работь и ходять въ церковь. (6) Въ году двѣна́дцать мѣсяцевъ, а двѣна́дцатый мѣсяцъ зову́ть декабрёмъ. (7) Рѣка́, которая не доходить до моря или до озера, а впадаеть въ другую рѣку, называется притокомъ. (8) Верблюдъ-очень полезное животное, такъ какъ можетъ пройти, черезъ пустыню, отъ ста восьми́десяти до дву́хсотъ вёрстъ въ недѣлю. (9) Онъ роди́лся въ тысяча восемьсотъ два́дцать второ́мъ году́, а сконча́лся (умеръ) трилиать перваго мая тысяча восемьсоть певяносто пятаго гола. В. Вопросы:

(1) Когда́ Россія не владѣла ни одного́ мо́ря? (2) Кто<sup>1</sup> ца́рствовалъ въ А́нглін въ ты́сяча восемьсо́тъ девяно́сто пя́томъ году́? (3) Кто<sup>2</sup> сталъ королёмъ по сме́рти э́той короле́вы? Кото́рое ца́рство англича́не счита́ютъ са́мымъ больши́мъ на свѣтѣ? (4) Ско́лько рабо́чихъ дне́й въ недѣли? (5) Какъ зову́тъ пе́рвый день недѣли? А тре́тій день? (6) Кака́я рѣ́ка́ называ́ется прито́комъ? (7) Почему́ верблю́дъ счита́ется поле́знымъ живо́тнымъ? (8) Когда́ вы роди́лися?

C. Translate into Russian :

(1) I have been told that the present landowner is the son of a smith who lived in this district forty-five years ago. (2) The smallest wooden house in the village served his father as a dwelling at that time. (3) But a few years after the death of his wife the man went abroad. (4) He lived in one of [M35] the largest towns in England. (5) There he became a merchant and was soon regarded as a very rich man. (6) The youngest son, who was only ten years old at the time of his mother's death, was born on the 24th of February 1885. (7) The father died abroad ten years ago and the second son, who had always wished to live in Russia, bought this little estate. (8) He has been living here for five years now [pres. tense with ynké].

<sup>1</sup> Викторія.

<sup>2</sup> Эдуардъ.

# LESSON XLIX

187. Most of the adjectives that have occurred have been used attributively, *i.e.* they qualify nouns. But there is also a shorter form of the adjective ending in  $-\mathbf{b}$ , -a, -o,  $-\mathbf{b}$  (or  $-\mathbf{H}$ ), which, in theory, ought to be used when the adjective is predicative.

У него́ больно́й сынъ, *He has a sick son*, shows the attributive form.

Его́ сынъ бо́ленъ [jəvó sïn bólən], His son is ill, shows the predicative form.

This form is obtained from the attributive by substituting in the masculine  $\mathbf{b}$  for  $\mathbf{h}\mathbf{\ddot{n}}$ ,  $\mathbf{\acute{o}n}$ , by dropping, in the feminine and neuter, the final  $\mathbf{\pi}$  and  $\mathbf{e}$ , and, in the plural, the final  $\mathbf{e}$  or  $\mathbf{\pi}$ , e.g.

сла́бый, сла́бая, сла́бое, сла́бые, ыя слабъ, слаба́, сла́бо, сла́бы [stab (p), stabú, stába, stábī], weak.

In fact the predicative adjective in the singular and often in the plural has the endings already associated with the past tense of the verb and with the noun.

188. The word радъ [rod (t)], meaning glad, has no longer form. Adjectives in скій like ру́сскій, and adjectives indicating materials and ending in я́нный, like деревя́нный, are without the predicative form. Most other qualifying adjectives have this form. As it is found very frequently in current speech and in literature, the predicative form must be known, but both in writing and speaking the attributive form takes its place to a very great extent. Outside popular poetry one rarely meets the predicative form in the oblique cases.

189. The neuter singular is of very frequent occurrence :

(1) Used as an adverb, *e.g.* 

хорошо́ [хлгл∫о́], well. пло́хо [płóхл], badly. (2) As the complement of the verb  $to \ be$  expressed or understood in phrases like

Миѣ ну́жно, непрія́тно, легко́, тру́дно э́то дѣ́лать [miɛ núʒnʌ, nəprijútnʌ, ləxkó, trúdnʌ ɛ́tʌ dɛ́tʌt̀], It is necessary, unpleasant, easy, difficult, for me to do this. (Cf. Par. 116.)

190. It will be observed in the lists given in Par. 237 that o or e is sometimes inserted in the masculine to facilitate pronunciation; *e.g.* 

коро́ткій: коро́токъ [karótak], коро́тка, etc., short,

тру́дный : тру́денъ [trúdən], трудна́, etc., difficult,

but to give a rule is hardly practicable, for combinations of consonants that at first seem almost impossible to the foreigner are quite easily negotiated by the Russian, *e.g.* 

# мёртвъ [mortf], dead.

191. The accentuation of the attributive adjective is a very simple matter: the accent remains throughout on the syllable corresponding to the accented syllable of the nominative singular masculine. In the predicative form the accent can only be mastered by continual observation. Paragraph 237 gives the predicative forms of most of the adjectives that are used in this book.

## VOCABULARY

грибъ, а́, ы́ [grip, gribá], mushroom	гроза́ (in acc. sing. and nom. plur.
тру́съ, а, ы (о́въ) [trus], coward	stem accented) [grszá], thunder-
быкъ, а, н [bïk], ox	storm
пёсь, иса, ы [pos], dog	жи́знь, и [ʒïzň], <i>life</i>
гу́сь, я, н [gus], goose	кость, и, и (е́й) [kost], bone
шка́пъ, а, ы́ [ʃkɑp] (въ шкапу́	на́до [núdʌ], it is necessary
[f∫kʌpú]), cupboard	жа́лко [zálkʌ], it is a pity
гро́мъ, а, ы (о́въ) [grom], thunder	влѣзть [vlest] (влѣзъ, влѣзла;
ло́дка, и, и (окъ) [tótkʌ], boat	futвзу, -ешь), to climb
ла́пка, и, и (окъ) [łópkʌ], foot, paw	стать [sta <sup>i</sup> t], to become, get; to set
(diminutive)	about

Я не знаю, прошёль ли онь [ja ne znaju, prafot li on], I do not know whether he has passed, it is past.

сразу по два, двѣ [srázu padvá, dvé], two at a time.

The following simple examples are taken chiefly from Tolstoi's Áзбука. Any adjectives not yet given in the vocabularies will be found in the list in Par. 237 and in the general vocabulary.

### Exercises

Translate :

Α.

(1) Дѣдъ былъ старъ и слабъ, а внукъ младъ<sup>1</sup> и глупъ. (2) Сталъ нашъ садъ голъ. (3) Сталъ нашъ пёсъ плохъ. (4) Ма́льчикъ былъ радъ. (5) Грибъ былъ гнилъ. (6) Онъ былъ трусли́въ. (7) Сталъ быкъ золъ. (8) Онъ по́слѣ того́ не до́лго былъ живъ.

#### В.

 Игра́ была́ плоха́. (2) Соба́ка была́ умна́. (3) Изба́ была́ не мала́. (4) Ба́ба была́ ра́да. (5) Вода́ была́ чиста́. (6) Ста́ла ло́дка полна́ воды́. (7) Лиса́ ѣла сра́зу по двѣ мы́ши, и ста́ла жирна́. (8) Ел́ жизнь трудиа́. (9) Крѣ́пка́ какъ кость.

С.

(1) На водѣ бы́ло гла́дко. (2) На дворѣ бы́ло чи́сто. (3) Ему́ ста́ло смѣшно́ (he felt inclined to laugh). (4) Миѣ легко́ э́то дѣлать. (5) Была́ гроза́ и громъ.<sup>2</sup> Ма́льчикъ былъ трусъ. Онъ влѣзъ въ шкапъ. Тамъ бы́ло ему́ темно́ и ду́шно. Ему́ не́ было слы́шно, прошла́ ли гроза́. (6) Гнѣздо́ уже́ бы́ло иу́сто. (7) Всё, что на́до. (8) Две́ри бы́ли тѣсны. (9) Ла́пки гусе́й бы́ли ви́дны. (10) Ма́льчики ста́ли мо́кры. (11) Жа́лко бы́ло.

# PROVERBIAL SAYINGS

Хýдо тому, кто добра́ не дѣлаетъ шкому́ [xúda tamú, xto dabrá no détajot nikamú], Woe be to him who does good to no man.

Жизнь дана́ на добрыя двла́ [zīzu dand na dobrīje deta], Life was given us for good deeds.

(дань is the predicative form of да́нный, passive past participle of дать. Such participles in анъ, ана, ано, аны are very frequent.)

Ску́ченъ день до ве́чера, коли́ дѣлать не́чего [skútjen de'n da vétjera, kali détat nétjeva], The day is long (weary, tedious) till evening, if there is nothing to do.

У Бо́га всѣ ра́вны́ [u boga fšɛ rúvnī (ravnī)], Before God all are equal.

<sup>1</sup> = мо́лодь. <sup>2</sup> громь греми́ть [grom gŕəḿit], the thunder rolls.

# THE COMPARATIVE DEGREE

192. The predicative form of the comparative degree of the adjective is formed by changing ый, iй, or óй into be. The short form bi is frequently used in poetry and popular speech. In most adjectives of more than two syllables the accent remains where it falls in the positive; in words of only two syllables in the positive, the predicative comparative is accented on the b.

Examples :

прямо́й, прямѣ́е [prɨəmói, prɨəinɨjə], upright, straight прія́тный, прія́тнѣе [prɨjátnī, prɨjátnəjə], pleasant краси́вый, краси́вѣе [krʌśívī, krʌśívəjə], beautiful у́мный, умнѣе [úmnī, umnɨjə], intelligent мо́крый, мокрѣе [mokrī, mʌkrɨjə], damp, wet

193. A number of adjectives, mostly in frequent use, have the predicative comparative in -e. Many of these also modify the final consonant of the stem. A list of some of the forms in frequent use is given in Par. 238.

194. Than following the comparative is translated by чѣмъ [t(ɛm] or не́жели [néʒəli], e.g.

Сынь умиће чъмъ до́чка [sin umnéjə tʃɛm dótʃkʌ], The son is more intelligent than the daughter.

Желѣзо поле́знѣе чѣмъ серебро́ [ʒəlśzʌ pʌléznəjə tʃɛm sərəbró], Iron is more useful than silver.

Мо́й прія́тель лу́чше чѣмъ я́ [mói prijátəl tútʃə tʃɛm ja], My friend is better than I.

Another way of using the comparative is to omit чѣмъ or не́жели and substitute for the nominative the genitive case. The three examples might therefore have been written :

> Сынъ умиѣс до́чки [dót]ki]. Желѣзо поле́зиѣс серебра́ [šərəbrá]. Мо́й прія́тель лу́чше меня́.

195. When the comparative is attributive it is formed, as in English, by prefixing бо́лъ̀е [bóləjə], more, to the positive, e.g.

болће дорогой стуль [bóləjə dлrлgói stuł], a more expensive, a dearer, chair.

(a) As in English, a few words have exceptional forms, e.g.

хоро́шій [xʌróʃī], good	лу́чшій [tútʃï], better
худо́іі [xudóĭ], bad	ху́дшій [xút∫ï], worse
молодо́й [matadóĭ], young	мла́дшій [mṫót∫ī], younger or junior
ста́рый [stárï], old	ста́ршій [stúrʃï], elder or senior
высо́кій [vïsóki], high	вы́сшій <sup>1</sup> [ví́∫ï], higher
пи́зкій [níski], low	пи́зшій <sup>1</sup> [ńíʃї], lower
ма́лый [mátī], little	∫ме́ньшій [mé <sup>i</sup> n∫ī], less or lesser
	(меньшо́й [mən∫óĭ], younger, youngest
большо́й [bʌ <sup>i</sup> lʃóĭ], large )	бо́льшій [bó <sup>i</sup> ]íï], greater
вели́кій [vəlíki], great	oonbinn Loo ijij, greater

196. A few adjectives have a special form for the attributive superlative ending in -а́йшій, -ѣ́йшій, *e.g.* 

глубо́кій, deep	глубоча́йшій [głubʌtʃáĭʃï]
просто́й, simple	простѣйшій [prastéiji]
сла́бый, weak	слабѣ́йшій [stʌb́éĭ∫ï]
бога́тый, rich	богатѣ́йшій [bʌgʌt́eĭʃï]
далёкій, distant, far	дальнѣ́йшій [dʌ <sup>i</sup> lnéĭʃï]
коро́ткій, short	кратча́йшій [krʌtʃɑ́Iʃï]
до́лгій, long	должа́йшій [dʌt͡ʒɑ́ĭʃī]
крѣпкій, strong	<b>крѣпча́йшій [</b> kŕəptʃɑ́ĭʃī]

These words are absolute superlatives in meaning, as they correspond to the English very deep, very simple, etc.

197. The relative superlative, the form corresponding to the English adjective in *-est*, is expressed in various ways; the most useful form is obtained by prefixing са́мый to the positive (cf. Par. 186). This superlative is used both attributively and predicatively.

198. The three degrees of comparison of an adjective having all the forms, attributive and predicative, that have been mentioned, are therefore as follows:

	ATTRIBUTIVE FORM	PREDICATIVE FORM
	Positive	
	крѣпкій столъ	столь крѣ́покъ
	Comparative	
	бо́лѣе крѣпкій столъ	столъ крѣ́пче
	Superlative	
	крѣпча́йшій столь	
	самый крѣпкій столъ	столъ са́мый крѣ́нкій
111	C I C IIIII	the mention frames of the state

<sup>1</sup> These forms are not now so frequent as the regular forms with бо́лье.

### VOCABULARY

во́ръ, а, ы (о́въ) [vor], thief

свине́цъ, нца́ [svinɛ́ts], lead (metal)

столи́ца [stalítsa], capital (city)

- скарлати́на [skʌrtʌtínʌ], scarletfever
- перча́тка, и, и (окъ) [pərtʃótkʌ], glove

доро́га [dʌrógʌ], road, way

страна́, ы́, -ы [stranú], country

при́быль, и, и [příbïl], profit, gain

гибель, и, и [ġibəl], ruin

площадь, и, и (е́й) [płojtjat], place, square

зна́ніе, я, я (ій) [znáňjə], knowledge

бога́тство, a, a [bʌgáts(t)vʌ], wealth ра́неный [rúnənī], wounded

дорого́й, доро́же [dлrлgóĭ, dлrózə], dear, dearer

желѣ́зный [ʒəlɛ́znï], iron (adj.)

брита́нскій [británski], British

нспа́нскій [ispánski], Spanish

зараба́тывать [zʌrʌbútïvʌt͡], to earn

- ворова́ть (ру́ю, у́ешь) [vлглvá<sup>i</sup>t], to steal
- мнѣ ка́жется [mhɛ káʒətsʌ], it seems to me
- дѣйстви́тельно [dəĭs(t)vítəlnл], really
- бо́льше всего́ [bo<sup>il</sup>∫ә fšәvó], more than all, most
- напро́тивъ (with gen.) [плрто́tif], opposite

### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

(1) Чёрное кресло, на которомъ вы сидите, гораздо красивъе этого стула. (2) Бѣлый хлѣбъ не всегда дороже чёрнаго. (3) Самое большое здание въ нашемъ городъ-самая старая церковь, по послѣ́лняя ме́ньше то́й це́ркви, кото́рую вы ви́дѣли напро́тивъ своей квартиры въ столицъ. (4) Умнъйшая ученица никогда не хочеть отвѣчать, когда её спрашиваеть добрая учительница. Она умна, но ея старшій брать прилежень и гораздо внимательиве ея. (5) Руки раненыхъ бълве чёмъ кровати, на которыкъ они лежать. (6) Неужели не всъ знають, что холера болье ужасная болфзиь чемъ скарлатина? (7) Самая тёмная комната мић правится больше всего. (8) Мић говорять, что саман старая женщина вяжетъ самые лучшіе чулки и перчатки. (9) Почему богатвищие помѣнники всегла желають имѣть ещё больше земли? (10) Мић кажется, что настоящий домъ царя великолѣпиѣе этого громаднаго дворца, который теперь строятъ. (11) Хорошо, что самые трудолюбивые крестьяне иногда зарабатывають больше. (12) Они получають самую большую прибыль. (13) Правда свѣтлѣе солина. (14) Знаніе-лучшее богатство. (15) Правда дороже зблота. (16) Воръ вору́еть не для прибыли, а для свое́й гибели.

B. Translate into Russian :

(1) In their letter they say that white bread is now dearer than black. (2) Perhaps your sister is younger than you. (3) In the majority of towns there are broad streets and narrow streets, and all the streets are narrower than the squares. (4) The largest village is more distant than your town. (5) I do not like that white paper that you sent me, it is too thin; send me some thicker paper [partitive genit.]. (6) Of course, the railway [iron way] is shorter than the river. (7) It seems to me that the problem we are solving to-day is far easier. (8) In our country the evening in summer is generally hotter than the morning. (9) The Russian language is, in my opinion, much harder than Spanish. (10) When I was living in that village, they told me that the old blacksmith was richer than all the hard-working peasants. (11) We thought that the light was brighter in the other room. (12) I thought that everybody knew that lead was heavier than iron, and also that iron was cheaper than lead. (13) I do not know whether the Russian Empire was really larger than the British Empire, but in the opinion of the Russians their empire was the largest of all.

# LESSON LI

### THE ASPECTS OF THE VERB

199. The Russian verb has no special form for the conditional mood of other tongues : this is rendered by simply adding the particle бы [bī] to the past tense, *e.g.* 

Онъ имѣлъ бы [on imɛ́t bī], He would have.

200. Nor is there any special form for subjunctive or conjunctive : the past tense introduced by the conjunction  $\Psi T \delta \delta H [\int t \delta B ]$ , that, in order that, does duty for that mood, e.g.

Царь посла́лъ мини́стра, что́бы онъ купи́лъ садъ мужика́ [tsa<sup>i</sup>r pʌsłół ministrʌ, ʃtóbī on kupít sat muʒīká], The czar sent his minister, that he might buy the peasant's garden.

201. In order to express modifications in the meaning of verbs some languages have elaborate systems of moods and tenses : this is characteristic of Greek, Latin, and the Romance tongues. Other languages achieve the same end by the facility with which they combine, in an almost endless variety, infinitive and participles with auxiliary and modal auxiliary verbs : English and German are two such tongues. The Russian verb has but three moods : infinitive, imperative, indicative ; and of these only the indicative appears in different tenses ; it has the three tenses that have been discussed. The Russian verb possesses only to a very limited extent the power of forming compound tenses. Yet, lacking the characteristic features of both the French and the English verb, the Russian verb is one of the subtlest instruments of expression, as the want of variety in mood and tense is more than compensated for by the modifications introduced by the use of numerous prefixes and by transformations of the stem itself.

202. One form of the verb indicates merely that the action was going on, is going on, or will be going on, without any reference to its beginning or end, without affording any information as to its completion. In this form, which is called the IMPERFECTIVE ASPECT, the action is thought of only as a duration.

Most, not all, simple verbs, *i.e.* verbs not compounded with a prefix, are *imperfective*. All the verbs under A, in Paragraph 121, are examples of this aspect, which therefore, in the indicative mood, has three tenses : *past*, *present*, *future*.

203. Another form of the verb expresses the action from the point of view of its completion : it indicates that something *happened* once and was done with, or that something is about to be begun and completed. This form of the verb is called the PERFECTIVE ASPECT.

All the verbs under B, in Paragraph 122, are examples of this aspect. Now, as an action cannot at one and the same time be conceived as *perfected* and as *still going on*, this aspect has no present tense; it has only two tenses: *past* and *future*.

204. For foreigners the chief peculiarity of this perfective aspect is, that the *future* tense has exactly the appearance of a *present* tense.<sup>1</sup> That is to say, all the verbs under B, in Paragraph 122, have a tense with the inflexions of a *present tense* and the meaning of an *immediate future*. A mistake that must be carefully avoided, is to form the future of the perfective aspect on the model of the imperfective future.

<sup>1</sup> The verbs given in Par. 160 are examples of this *perfective future*.

205. The complete scheme of the verb in the infinitive, indicative, and imperative, is therefore as follows :

IMPERFECTIVE ASPECT	Perfective Aspect
Infir	iitive
писа́ть, to write, to be busied with writing	написа́ть, to write once, to start writing and get it finished
Indicativ	e Past <sup>1</sup>
я писа́лъ, I wrote, I was writing, I was occupied in writing, I busied myself with writing	written on a definite occasion,
Indicative	Present
я пишý, I write, I do write, I am writing	
Indicative	
я бу́ду писа́ть, I shall write, I shall busy myself with writing	я напиппý, I shall write now or soon, I shall get the writing started and finished
Imper	ative
HIHIIIITE, write, make it your practice to write, be busied with writing	

206. In the list of verbs given under A, in Paragraph 121, it will be observed that each word is accompanied by a prefix enclosed in brackets, or by one of the signs (1), \*, or (2).

a. Verbs marked (2) have no separate form for the perfective aspect, are not used as perfective verbs, or undergo a real change of meaning in the so-called perfective.

b. \* indicates a verb whose perfective aspect is expressed by the use of a different root, e.g.

говори́ть,<sup>2</sup> сказа́ть, to say.

c. (1) indicates a verb whose perfective is derived by modifying the form, often the length, of the stem or by changing the termination; e.g.

спра́шивать, спроси́ть,<sup>3</sup> to ask, рѣша́ть, рѣши́ть, to resolve.

In this class of words the perfective is frequently a simpler form than the imperfective, the latter being derived from the former.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>1</sup> These Past Tenses also render our I have or had written.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>2</sup> говорйть=to speak has as the perfective поговори́ть.

<sup>&</sup>lt;sup>3</sup> For this type see Par. 232.

d. Where a prefix is given, it is this prefix that is used to form the perfective aspect, e.g.

ду́мать, поду́мать, to think. пла́кать, запла́кать, to weep.

The list of perfective verbs given under B in Paragraph 122 is marked in the same way.

207. All the words in those lists are in frequent use and as the lists were not compiled for the special purpose of illustrating the formation of the aspects, they may not unfairly be regarded as a representative collection of verbs. It would therefore appear (1) that the majority of Russian verbs come under headings c or d of the last paragraph, *i.e.* that they have a perfective aspect; (2) that perfectives formed by modification of the stem are numerous; (3) that any prefix may be used to form the perfective, but that the prefix  $\Pi o$  is of far greater frequency than any other. Very often this  $\Pi o$  has the effect of 'doing the action a little.'

208. Which prefix, if any, is precisely the right one to use for any given verb, can be learned only by observation. If any other prefix be taken, the compound verb resulting, if it really exist, is indeed a perfective verb,<sup>1</sup> but one in which the meaning has been altered according to the meaning of the prefix. The peculiarity of THE perfective aspect of an imperfective verb is, that the force of the prefix is more completely exhausted in making the verb perfective, though even in this form the modification of the sense may be so decided, that the meaning is best rendered into English by a different verb.

Some illustrations :

Simple verb	писа́ть [pisá <sup>i</sup> t], to write	дѣ́лать [d́є́t̀лt̀], to do
Perfective	написа́ть [nʌpisá <sup>i</sup> t]	сдѣлать [sdźłʌt]
Other Com-	списа́ть [spisú <sup>i</sup> t], to copy	надѣлать [nadétat], to prepare
pounds	вы́писать [vípisat], to	вы́дѣлать [videtnt], to fashion, to
	extract, subscribe for	execute
Simple verb	нить [pit], to drink	плати́ть [platit], to pay
	вы́нить [vípit]	заплати́ть [zʌplʌtít]
Other Com-	напиться [плриtsл], to	отплати́ть [stpłsiit], to pay back
pounds	drink one's fill of	выплатить [viplatit], to pay out

<sup>1</sup> See note following this paragraph.

Simple verb ду́мать [dúmʌi], to think Perfective ноду́мать [pʌdúmʌi] Other Compounds вы́думать [vîdumʌi], to devise Заду́мать [zʌdúmʌi], to propose to oneself

All the verbs given under '*other compounds*' are perfective verbs in virtue of the fact that they are simple verbs compounded with prefixes, and corresponding imperfective forms are made from most of them on a system which is explained in Paragraph 232.

Note.—There is, however, a class of verbs of which XOДИ́ТЬ and HTTÝ (for the distinction see Paragraph 40) may be taken as the type. These words occur in two forms, each form having both imperfective and perfective aspects. XOДИ́ТЬ is called the indefinite, potential, or abstract form of the word, and HTTÝ the definite, actual, or concrete form. In verbs belonging to this category the compounds of the indefinite verb are all imperfective and the compounds of the definite verb are perfective. (See Voc. LII (4); LIV (5); LV (5); LVI (4).)

Such verbs are :

(по)бѣгать (аю)	and (по)бѣжа́ть, to run
(по)води́ть (жý, о́дишь)	(по)вести, to lead
(по)вози́ть (жу́, о́зишь)	(по)везти́, to convey
(по)гоня́ть (я́ю)	(по)гнать, to drive, persecute
(по)лета́ть (а́ю)	(по)летѣть (чу́, е́тншь), to fly
(по)носи́ть (шу́, о́симь)	(по)нести́, to carry
(по)пла́вать (аю)	(по)плыть (ыву́, ёшь), to swim, float
(по) вздить (взжу, вдишь)	) (по)ѣ́хать, to drive, ride, travel

209. Only a few exercises on the use of the aspects are given, but before undertaking these exercises it will be useful to read carefully the following passages, observing, in the light of Pars. 199–208, in which aspect each verb appears. New words occurring in these passages are given in the vocabulary, but as the purpose in printing them here is solely to illustrate the distinction between the imperfective and the perfective, a close translation of each passage is given : the English version is, for our present purpose, as important as the Russian.

#### (Perfective Verbs are in Italics)

Ло́дка была́ гото́ва. Я сълз въ неё съ двумя́ гребца́ми. Они́ отча́лили и уда́рили въ вёсла.

Небо было ясно. Луна сіяла. Погода была тихая. Волга неслась ровно и спокойно. Лодка скользила по поверхности тёмныхъ волнъ. *Прошло* около получаса. Мы достиели среди́ны рѣки́. Вдругъ гребцы на́чали шепта́ться ме́жду собо́ю.

— Что тако́е? спроси́лъ я.

— Не знаемъ.

Гребцы смотрѣли въ одну́ сто́рону. Глаза́ мои́ при́ня́ли то́же направле́ніе, и я уви́дълъ въ су́мракѣ что́-то. Незнако́мый предме́тъ плылъ впизъ по Во́лгѣ. Приближа́лся. Луна́ зашла́ за о́блако. Плыву́щій при́зракъ сдю́лался ещё темнѣе. Онъ былъ отъ меня́ уже́ бли́зко, а я всё ещё не могъ его́ различи́ть.

Вдругълуна вышла изъ-за облака, и озарила зрълище ужасное. Къ намъ навстръчу плыла висълица, утверждённая на плоту. Три тъла висъли на перекладинъ. Болъзненное любопытство овладило мною. Я захотилъ взглянуть на лица висъльниковъ.

> «Капита́нская До́чка,» Пу́шкинъ.

# 2

#### (Perfective Verbs are in Italics)

Большая, высо́кая, тёмная за́ла, освъщённая то́лько четырьмя́ и́лп пятью́ свѣча́ми, съ кото́рыми доктора́ подходи́ли осма́тривать ра́пеныхъ, была́ буква́льно полна́. Носи́льщики безпреста́нно вноси́ли ра́пепыхъ, скла́дывали ихъ оди́нъ по́длѣ друго́го на́ полъ, па кото́ромъ уже́ бы́ло такъ тѣсно, что несча́стные толка́лись и мо́кнули въ кро́ви другъ дру́га, и шли за но́выми. Сёстры, со споко́йными ли́цами и съ выраже́ніемъ дѣятельнаго практи́ческаго уча́стія, то тамъ, то сямъ мелька́ли ме́жду ра́неными. Доктора́, съ засучёнными рукава́ми, осма́тривали, ощу́пывали и зондн́ровали ра́ны, песмотря́ на ужа́спые сто́ны страда́льцевъ. Оди́пъ изъ докторо́въ сндѣ́лъ о́коло две́ри за сто́ликомъ, и въ ту мину́ту, какъ въ ко́мпату вошёлъ офице́ръ, запи́сывалъ уже́ 532.

« Севасто́польскіе Разска́зы,» Толсто́й.

#### Translation

The boat was ready. I *embarked* (seated myself into it) with two hoatmen. They *cast off* and *set to work* (struck away) at the oars.

The sky was clear (bright). The moon shone. The weather was calm. The Volga flowed smoothly and quietly along. The boat glided over the surface of the dark waves. About half-an-hour *elapsed*. We *had reached* the middle of the river. Suddenly the oarsmen *began* to whisper to each other (among themselves).

"What is that ?" I asked. "We do not know."

The oarsmen were looking in a certain direction (to one side). My eyes took the same direction, and I caught sight in the gloom of something or other. The unknown object was floating down the Volga. It was approaching. The moon went behind a cloud. The floating apparition became still darker. It was already close to me, but I was still unable to make it out.

Suddenly the moon *shone out* from behind the cloud, and *illumined* a terrible spectacle. The thing that was floating along to meet us was a gallows *fastened* to a raft. Three bodies were hanging from the crossbeam. A morbid curiosity *mastered* me. I was seized with the desire to look upon the faces of the dead men (hanged men).

The Captain's Daughter, PUSHKIN.

# 2

#### Translation

The great, high, dark hall *lighted* only by the four or five candles, by the aid of which the doctors were stepping up to examine the wounded, was literally full. Stretcher-bearers were continually bringing in wounded men; they laid them down one beside the other on the floor, on which they were already so closely packed that the unfortunate men were rolling up against each other and weltering (being drenched) in each other's blood; [then] they would go for more. The nurses, with unruffled countenance and an expression of active practical sympathy, flitted hither and thither among the wounded. The doctors, with sleeves *turned up*, examined, palpated, probed the wounds, in spite of the awful groans of the sufferers. One of the doctors was sitting near the door at a little table and at the moment when the officer *came into* the room he was already entering number 532.

> Tales of Sebastopol, TOLSTOI.

## (Perfective Verbs are in Italics)

— Послу́шай, слѣпо́й! сказа́лъ онъ: — береги́ то мѣсто . . . зна́ешь? тамъ бога́тые това́ры . . . сказиси́ хозя́ину, что я ему́ бо́льше не слуга́. Дѣла́ пошли́ ху́до, онъ меня́ бо́льше не уви́дить: тепе́рь опа́сно: поѣду иска́ть рабо́ты въ друго́мъ мѣстѣ; тамъ я бу́ду ждать удо́бнаго слу́чая. Да сказиси́, е́слибъ онъ полу́чше цлати́лъ за труды́, такъ и я бы его́ не поки́нулъ. Она́ поѣдетъ со мно́ю; ей нельзя́ здѣсь остава́ться.

— А я! сказа́лъ слѣпо́й жа́лобнымъ го́лосомъ.

Онъ что-то положи́ль слѣпо́му въ ру́ку, примо́лвивь: « На, купи́ себѣ́ пря́никовъ.» — То́лько? сказа́ль слѣпо́й. « Ну, вотъ тебѣ́ ещё, » и упа́вшая моне́та зазвенѣла, ударя́сь о ка́мень<sup>1</sup>. Слѣпо́й ея́ не по́дняль. Они́ сѣли въ ло́дку; вѣтеръ дулъ отъ бе́рега; они́ бы́стро понесли́сь. До́лго при свѣтѣ мѣ́сяца мелька́лъ бѣ́лый па́русъ ме́жду волиъ; слѣпо́й всё сидѣ́лъ на берегу́ и пла́калъ, и до́лго до́лго.

«Геро́й на́шего вре́мени» [slightly altered], Ле́рмонтовъ.

### 4

### (Perfective Verbs are in Italics)

Тёма чу́вствовалъ себя́ оконча́тельно сби́тымъ съ пози́ціи: ко́рпусъ, ещё такъ неда́вно каза́вшійся дѣ́ломъ ръшённымъ, отодви́нулся куда́-то далеко́-далеко́.

—Ты когда́, Тёма, покдешь?—спросила Ната́ша, втора́я сестра́, стара́ясь скрыть волнова́вшія её чу́вства подъ ма́ской просто́го любопы́тства.

Тёма загляну́ль въ глаза́ сестры́.

-Никуда́ я не пою́ду, отвю́тиль онь, вздохну́вь, и вставь, напра́вился въ кабине́ть.

Тамъ онъ шага́лъ въ созна́ній принесённой имъ же́ртвы. Мо́жетъ-быть, для же́ртвы его́ видъ былъ сли́шкомъ споко́енъ, но тѣмъ не ме́нѣс э́то не мѣша́ло ему́ счита́ть себя́ же́ртвой, и ему́ каза́лось, что онъ сра́зу то́чно вы́росъ на нѣсколько лѣтъ. Онъ лёгъ на дива́нъ, заложи́лъ за́ голову ру́ки и заду́мался о томъ, что жизнь не така́я проста́я и лёгкая вещь, како́й она́ ка́жется по пару́жному ви́ду.

Такъ и уснулъ, думая всё о томъ же.

«Семе́йная Хро́ника,» Га́ринъ.

<sup>1</sup> o = against governs the accusative.

# 3 Translation

"Listen, blind boy," he said; "keep a watch on that place.-You know? There is great wealth (are rich wares) there. Tell the master that I am no longer his servant. Things have turned out (gone) badly, he won't see me any more; it's dangerous now. I am going to seek work in another place. There I shall await a convenient opportunity. And tell him, if he had paid me better for my labour, I should not have left him in the lurch. She is going to go with me; it is impossible for her to remain here."

"And what about me ? " said the blind boy in a pitcous voice.

He put something in the blind boy's hand, adding (having said) as he did so, "There, buy yourself some spice-buns." "That's all ?" said the blind boy. "Well, there is something more for you," and a falling (fallen) coin tinkled as it struck (striking) the stone. The blind boy did not pick it up. They took their places in the boat; the wind was blowing off the shore and they were swiftly carried away. For a long time the white sail in the midst of the waves shimmered in the light of the moon ; the blind boy still continued sitting on the shore and wept and wept.

> A Hero of Modern Times, LERMONTOF.

#### 4

#### Translation

**Timothy felt** himself *driven* once for all from his position [*i.e.* felt that he had no ground left to stand upon]; [his entrance into] the corps [of officers], which, such a short time before, had appeared a settled thing, had [now] receded to a point (somewhere) far, far away.

"When are you to set off, Timothy?" asked Natalia, his second sister, trying to conceal the emotions that agitated her under the mask of mere curiosity.

Timothy looked into his sister's eyes.

"I am not going anywhere," he answered with a sigh (having sighed) and getting up (having stood up), he betook himself to his room.

There he strode up and down in the consciousness of the sacrifice he had made (that had been made by him). Perhaps, for a victim, his aspect was too calm, but nevertheless that did not prevent him from regarding himself as a victim, and it seemed to him that he had, as it were, grown older all at once by several years. He lay down on the sofa, put his hands behind his head, and gave himself up to musing on the fact that life was not such a simple, easy thing as it seemed on a superficial view.

And thus, still thinking over that fact, he fell asleep.

Family Chronicle, GARIN.

# THE IMPERATIVE

210. As indicated in Paragraph 205, both the imperfective and the perfective aspects have an *imperative mood*, formed in the imperfective from the *present* and in the perfective from the *future* tense.

The 2nd singular ends in -й, -и ог -ь;

the 2nd plural ends in -йте, -ите, -ьте.

211. I. When the termination of the 2nd singular is preceded by a vowel, change the termination into - $\ddot{n}$  and - $\ddot{n}$ Te, e.g.

сдѣлаешь	сѣ́ешь	стара́ешься
сдѣ́лай [sdɛ́tʌĭ], do	сѣ́й [śéĭ], sow	стара́йсь [staráis], try
сдѣ́лайте [sdɛ́łʌitə]	сѣ́йте [śéĭtə]	стара́йтесь [staráĭtəs]

(a) The verbs in Par. 162 change the  $\mathbf{b}$  which follows the initial consonant into e, e.g.

пьёшь пе́й [ṕе́ĭ], drink пе́йте [ṕе́ĭt̀ə]

(b) The verb дать, which is very irregular in the future tense, has да́й [dáĭ], да́йте [dáītə] (cf. Par. 231).

212. II. When the termination of the 2nd singular is preceded by a consonant:

A. If the termination is accented in the 1st singular,<sup>1</sup> change the termination of the 2nd singular into  $\dot{\mu}$  and  $\dot{\mu}$ re, e.g.

несу́	скажу́	хожу́
несёщь	скажешь	хо́дишь
неси́ [nəśí], carry	скажи́ [skлzi], say, tell	ходи́ [xʌdí], <i>go</i>
necúre [našíta]	скажите [skлzîtə]	ходи́ [xʌdí], <i>go</i> ходи́те [xʌdítə]
люблю́	учý	
любишь	ўчишь	
люби́ [lubí], love	учи́ [ut]í], teach (learn)	
любите [lubitə]	учи́те [ut∫ítə]	

<sup>1</sup> The accentuation of the 1st sing. pres. is generally that of the infinitive.

B. If the stem is accented in the 1st singular, change the termination of the 2nd singular into ь and ьте; e.g.

влѣзу	пла́чу	бу́ду (future)
влѣзешь	пла́чешь	бу́дешь
влѣзь [vle <sup>i</sup> s], climb	нлачь [plat∫], weep	будь [bu <sup>i</sup> t], be
влѣзьте [vléstə]	пла́чьте [płát∫t́ə]	бу́дьте [bú <sup>i</sup> tə]

C. If two consonants precede the termination, then, irrespective of where the accent falls, change the termination into  $\mu$  and  $\mu$ re; e.g.

ри́кну [kříknu]	мéдлю [médlu]	<b>пущу́ [pu∫t∫ú]</b>
ари́кнешь [kŕíkňə∫]	ме́длишь [médliʃ]	пу́стишь [púsṫi∫]
кри́кни [kiíkňi], cry out	мéдли [médli], hesitate	
кри́кните [kříkňiťə]	мéдлите [médlitə]	пусти́те [pustítə]

213. The verb лечь has лягь <sup>1</sup> [lak], ля́гте [lákiə], lie down.

", " ѣсть " ѣшь[jeʃ],ѣ́шьте[jeʃtə], eat. (Cf. Par. 220.)

214. The first plural of the *future perfective* may be used without a subject as the equivalent for *let us do* etc.; *e.g.* 

Сдѣлаемъ то, что опъ намъ вели́тъ [sdéťajəm to, sto on nam vəlít], Let us do what he orders us (dat.) to do.

215. The imperative пуска́й [puskáĭ] of пуска́ть, to allow, or the form пусть [pu<sup>i</sup>st] is used with the 3rd sing. or plur. of the present imperfective or future perfective as 3rd sing. or plur. imperative; e.g.

Пуска́й онъ пройдёть садь [puskái on praidót sat], Let him go through the garden.

216. Many salutations and other frequently used expressions are imperatives; *e.g.* 

здра́вствуйте [zdrás(tvuĭ)te], good day, how are you?

is really the imperative derived from the present здра́вствую, ешь etc. of the verb здра́вствовать, and means hail! be of good health!

> проща́йте! [prʌftʃátiə], farewell ! (до свида́нія [dʌ svidáújə], au revoir) and прости́те! [prʌstitə], pardon me !

are respectively the imperfective and perfective imperative of прощать, простить.

смотри́те! [smʌtřítə], look out / извини́те! [izviúítə], excuse me ! пожа́луй! [pʌʒátuī], after all, as far as I am concerned, may be; пожа́луйста! [pʌʒátuī], please.

<sup>1</sup> The only imperative ending in ъ.

217. The imperfective imperative is a general command; the perfective imperative is an indication that something is to be done now, at once.

In negative commands the imperfective form is generally used.

218. The infinitive is often used instead of the imperative in general commands or prohibitions, *e.g.* 

Не встава́ть! [ǹə fstʌvɑ́<sup>i</sup>t], Do not stand up ! Не говори́ть! [ǹə gʌvʌíti], No speaking !

### VOCABULARY

(1) Perfective formed with prefix
 (по)боя́ться (ю́, и́шь) [(рл)bлjá<sup>i</sup>tsл], to fear
 ∫ жечь (жгу,<sup>1</sup> жжёшь, жгуть) [ʒetʃ], to burn
 (скечь (сожгу́) [sʒetʃ]
 (подо)жда́ть (у́, ёшь) [(рлдл)ʒdá<sup>i</sup>t], to wait, await

(2) Imperfective in atb, perfective in HTb

(ποлуча́ть I A [pʌlutʃáit], to receive (ποлучи́ть (чý, ýчипь) [pʌlutʃít] (πоступа́ть I A [pʌstupáit], to act, behave (ποступи́ть (плю́, ýпипь) [pʌstupít] (πуска́ть I A [puskáit], to let, allow, admit (πусти́ть (щý, ýстипь) [pustít] (προща́ть I A [prʌʃtʃáit], to remit, pardon (προсти́ть (щý, сти́пь) [prʌstít]

(3) Imperfective long : perfective short.

(In this group many of the imperfectives, especially those in BaTL, are verbs indicating the repeated or continuous occurrence of the act, and are derived from the perfective verb, which is itself a compound of a simple verb. Cf. Par. 232.)

(пока́зывать I A [pʌkdzīvʌt], to show показа́ть (жý, а́нешь) [pʌkʌzdit] Встава́ть (встаю, ёшь) [fstʌvdit], to stand up, get up, rise встать (а́ну, ешь) [fsta<sup>i</sup>t] (одѣва́ться I A [ʌdəvditsʌ], to clothe oneself, dress одѣться (ѣнусь, ешься) [ʌdéitsʌ] раздѣва́ться I A [rʌzdəvditsʌ], to undress раздѣва́ться I A [mīvditsʌ], to undress умыва́ться I A [umīvditsʌ], to wash (oneself) умы́ться (о́ю, ешь) [umītsʌ]

<sup>1</sup> Imperative жги, жгите.

(4) Imperfective and perfective from different roots or from different forms of cognate stems

(проходи́ть (жý, о́дншь) [praxadít], to traverse

пройти́ (ду́, ённь) [praití]

(приноси́ть (шу́, о́сишь) [prinasit], to bring

принести́ (су́, ёшь) [prinəstí]

(Cf. note to Par. 208.)

то́лько что [tó<sup>i</sup>lkл ∫to], *just* (with past tenses)

до сихъ поръ [d.sixpór] (up to these times), till now

пора́ сдѣлать (perf.) это [рлта́ sdéłnt étл], it is time to do that съ тѣхъ поръ [stɛxpór] (since those times), since then

пора́, ы́, ∽у, ∽ы [рлга́], time

### PROVERBIAL SAYINGS

Ку́й (from кова́ть) желѣ́зо, пока́ горячо́, Strike the iron while it's hot. Уважа́й старика́, самъ бу́дешь старъ, Honour (esteem) the aged (man), you will be old yourself.

Вѣкъ живи́, вѣкъ учи́сь, Live a life-time (an age), learn a life-time, i.e. it's never too late to learn.

Береги́ копéeчку про чёрный день, Save the farthing for a rainy day. Люби́ бли́жняго, какъ самого́ себя́, Love thy neighbour as thyself.

Не моли́ л'вта до́лгаго, моли́ тёплаго, Don't pray for a long summer, pray for a warm one.

EXERCISES

A. Translate :

### I. дѣлайте, сѣйте, стара́йтесь, дава́й, слу́шайте, сто́й, стро́йте, пуска́й, проща́йте, здра́вствуйте, имѣйте, не бо́йтесь, пожа́луйста, play, answer, work, ask questions, read, build, continue, laugh, do not blush, dress, undress, let, farewell, sing, wash, behave.

(a) пе́йте, ле́йте, beat, wind, sew.

II. (a) неси́, скажи́те, спроси́те, ходи́те, иди́те, учи́тесь, speak, show, sleep, sit down, pardon me, live, seek, write, look, inquire, plough, aet (perf.), bring.

(b) влѣзьте, плачь, встань, eat, sit down, dress.

(c) крикните, ме́длите, let, press, reap, wait, burn.

III. сдѣлаемъ, понесёмъ, запла́чемъ, кри́кнемъ, let us sow, let us listen, stand, build, play, go, live, look, wait, write, burn, dress, wash.

B. Translate:

(1) Принеси́те миѣ, пожа́луйста, о́ту но́вую ру́сскую кни́гу!
(2) Приноси́те мнѣ ежедне́вно тетра́ди ста́ршихъ ученико́въ!

(3) Ложи́тесь спать ка́ждый ве́черъ въ семь часо́въ!
(4) Пора́ итти́ спать! Раздѣ́ньтесь, ма́льчики, и ля́гте спать!
(5) Пиши́ ме́дленно и пра́вильно!
(6) Напиши́те то, что я Вамъ скажу́!
(7) Смотри́те!
(8) Посмотри́те то, что они́ дѣлаютъ тепе́рь!
(9) Не говори́те е́й о томъ, что я Вамъ то́лько что разсказа́лъ!
(10) Не дѣлайте э́того!
(11) Не отвѣча́йте на э́тотъ вопро́съ!
(12) Пуска́й она́ сдѣлаетъ, какъ она́ жела́етъ!
(13) Пусть они́ пойду́тъ тепе́рь въ шко́лу!
(14) Всегда́ слу́шайте то, что говори́тъ учи́тель!
(15) Учи́тель говори́тъ тепе́рь; послу́шайте его́!

C. Translate into Russian :

(1) Stand up at once.
 (2) Always sit on this chair, please.
 (3) Don't do that.
 (4) Let him receive the money.
 (5) Read this paper quickly.
 (6) Read aloud at home.
 (7) Let us have a look <sup>1</sup> at what is going on out of doors.
 (8) Show me, please, what you are holding in your hand.
 (9) Do not cat so quickly.
 (10) Halt [stand].
 (11) Get up early in the morning, wash, dress, and go to school; do [act] so every day.
 (12) It is time to get up, boys. Get up, wash, dress, and go to school.
 (13) Let them live here.

# LESSON LIII

219. Declension of время, time.

	Sing.	Plur.
nom.	вре́мя [vřémʌ]	времена́ [vr̀əm̀əná]
gen.	—ени [vřéməni]	—ёнъ [vr̀əmón]
dat.	—ени [vřéməni]	—ена́мъ [vr̀əm̀ənám]
acc.	—я [vřéḿл]	—ена́ [vr̀əmənú]
instr.	—енемъ [vřémənəm]	—ена́ми [vr̀əm̀ənɑ́mi]
prep.	—ени [vřéməňi]	—ена́хъ [viəmənɑ́x]

There is a small group of nouns, all neuters, of this form. The most frequently used of them are :

бре́мя [břémʌ], burden и́мн [úmʌ], name зна́мн (знамёна) [znómʌ], banner пле́мя [plɛ́mʌ], tribe пла́мя [plɑ́mʌ], flame стре́мя [střémʌ], stirrup сѣмн [šémʌ], seed

<sup>1</sup> Perfective of смотр'ять.

168

220. The verb ѣсть, поѣсть [jest, pʌjést], to eat, is irregular. The present tense is

**ѣмъ, ѣшь, ѣстъ [jɛm, je**ʃ, jɛst], ѣди́мъ, и́тс, и́тъ [jədím, jədítə, jədát] The imperative is ѣшь, ѣ́шьте [jeʃ, jéʃtə].

221. (по)ѣ́хать, to drive or ride, has in the present ѣ́ду, ∠ешь [jédu], and only one form in the imperative, поѣ́зжа́й, á́йте [pʌjəʒúī].

222. Present tense of хотѣть [xʌté<sup>i</sup>t], to wish; perfective захотѣть [zʌxʌté<sup>i</sup>t], to conceive a wish or desire:

хочу́ [хлt∫ú]	хоти́мъ [xʌtím]
хо́чешь [xót∫ə∫]	<b>хоти́те [</b> xʌṫíṫə]
хо́четъ [xót∫ət]	хотя́ть [xʌtɑ́t]

223. (1) The conditional in Russian is formed by adding the particle  $\mathbf{6}\mathbf{H}$  to the past tense, *e.g.* 

Онь проси́ль бы [on prasit bi], He would ask or he would have asked.

If the condition is unfulfilled, this form of the verb is used in both parts of a conditional sentence, *e.g.* 

Я бы написа́лъ ему́, е́сли бы я зналъ э́то [ja bī nʌpisát jəmú, jésli bī ja znat étʌ], I should write (have written) to him, if I knew (had known) that. With е́сли ог что, бы often becomes бъ: е́сли бъ, чтобъ.

(2) If the present tense is used in English in the conditional clause, there is still a chance of the condition being fulfilled or *if* may have the force of *whenever*; and in Russian the present and future tenses without  $\mathbf{\overline{6}6}$  are used, *e.g.* 

Éсли Вы бу́дете говори́ть съ нимъ, скажи́те ему́, etc. [jésli vī búdətə gavarit sním, skazītə jəmú], If you speak with him, tell him, etc.

Я вѣрю ему, е́сли онъ мнъ такъ говори́тъ [ja vė́iu jəmú, jésli on mie tak gavaiít], I believe him (dat.), if he speaks to me so.

224. (1) With хотѣ́ть when only one person or group of persons is involved, the construction is the same as in English, *e.g.* 

Я хочý (с)дѣлать [ja xʌtʃú (s)dɛ́tʌt́], I wish to do.

(2) If there are two persons or groups of persons involved, the Russian does not say I wish you to do but I wish that you did or I wish that you should do:

Я хочу, что бы Вы сдѣлали [ja xatʃú, ʃtó bī vī sdɛ́tali].

This is the construction to use with other verbs of requesting.

# LESSON LIII

#### VOCABULARY

(Where no special indication of genitive case, etc. is given, it is to be understood that the oblique cases of the noun in question are regularly derived and that there is no change of accent.)

Богъ [box], God	стару́шка [stʌrú∫kʌ], old woman
Бо́же! [bózə], O God !	лопа́та [tʌpɑ́tʌ], spade
францу́зъ [frantsús], Frenchman	старина́ [stʌriná], former days, days
кладъ [kład (t)], treasure	of old
нахо́дка [плхо́tkл], a find, treasure-	бы́ль [bīl], true story
trove	что-нибу́дь [∫to-nibú <sup>i</sup> t], something
	or other

Свѣтлое Воскресе́нье [svétłajə vaskrəšénjə], Easter Sunday (Bright day of Resurrection)

не́чего [нѣть ничего́, чего́] [ńétʃəvʌ], (there is) nothing of which не́чѣмъ [нѣть ничего́, чѣмъ] [ńétʃəm], (there is) nothing with which

#### VERBS

(1) Perfective formed by use of prefix

(итти́ (иду́, ёшь) [ití], to go (on foot)

Пойти́ (пойду́) [рлі́tí]

(по)ры́ть (о́ю, ешь) [(рл)rit], to dig

(по)просить (шу́, о́сишь) [(рл)prašít], to request, beseech

(по)моли́ться (ю́сь, -ишься) [(рл)malítsa], to pray, say one's prayers

((по)пла́кать (а́чу, ешь) [(pл)ptaknt], to weep, lament, bewail

) (за)пла́кать 1 [(zл)płáknt], to weep, start weeping

(об)радоваться (радуюсь, ешься) [(ль)radлvatsa], to rejoice

(2) Imperfective long-perfective short (see Par. 232)

 $\begin{bmatrix} nomoráть I A [pлm.qd<sup>i</sup>t], to help, assist$ nomóчь (like morý, Par. 168) [pлmót∫], (dat. of person) $<math> \exists apывáть I A [z.rīvd<sup>i</sup>t], to bury$  $<math> \exists apы́ть (о́ю, ешь) [z.rīt]$  $<math> \exists nocылáть I A [pлsītd<sup>i</sup>t], to send$ nocлáть (шлю́, ёшь) [pлstd<sup>i</sup>t] $<math> \exists cnoминáть I A [fspлmind<sup>i</sup>t], to remember$  $<math> \exists cnoминáть I A [fspлmind<sup>i</sup>t], to remember$  $<math> \exists cnoминáть I A [pлkupd<sup>i</sup>t], to buy$  $<math> \exists nokynáть I A [pлkupd<sup>i</sup>t], to buy$  $kynú́ть (плю́, у́пншь) [kupít] \\ \end{bmatrix}$ 

(3)

f разговля́ться I A [rʌzgʌvlá<sup>i</sup>tsʌ], to eat meat for the first time after a fast разговѣться (ѣюсь, ѣешься) [rʌzgʌvé<sup>i</sup>tsʌ]

<sup>1</sup> Perfectives formed with the prefix as are mostly inchoatives, *i.e.* they indicate the beginning of an action.

### LESSON LIII

(4) Imperfective and perfective from different roots
 Говори́ть <sup>1</sup> (ю́, ннь) [длүлі́ц], to speak, say
 сказа́ть (жý, епь) [skлҳdìt], to say, tell
 брать (беру́, ёшь) [braít], to take
 взять (возьму́, ёшь) [vҳdít]

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

### Быль

Въ одной дере́внѣ жила́ стару́шка со (съ) вну́чкой. Онѣ о́ы́ли о́чень бѣ́дны, и ѣсть имъ бы́ло не́чего. Пришло́ Свѣтлое Воскресе́нье. Наро́дъ ра́дуется. Всѣ купи́ли себѣ разговѣться, то́лько стару́шкѣ со вну́чкой не́чѣмъ разговѣться. Попла́кали онѣ и ста́ли Бо́га проси́ть, чтобъ Онъ имъ помо́гъ. И вспо́мнила стару́шка, что въ старииу́, во вре́мя францу́за, мужики́ де́ньги въ зе́млю зарыва́ли. Стару́ха и говори́тъ вну́чкѣ: «Возьми́ (ты), вну́чка, лопа́ту и иди́ на ста́рое село́, помоли́сь Бо́гу, да поро́й въ землѣ: мо́жетъ быть, Богъ намъ и пошлётъ что-нибу́дь.»

Толсто́й

#### (a) PROVERBIAL SAYINGS

Не ро́й друго́му я́му, самъ въ неё попадёшь, Don't dig a pit for another, you may fall into it yourself.

Что посѣешь, то и пожнёшь, What you sow, that also shall you reap. Отъ худо́го сѣмени не жди добраго пле́мени, From bad seed do

not expect a good stock.

Кто работаетъ, тому́ Богъ помога́етъ, Who works, him God helps.

# B. Translate into Russian :

(1) Do you know that they are digging ? Always let him dig here. Dig now. We shall dig at once. You will be digging (this) afternoon. She has just dug. She was digging. She would dig if she had a spade. Her mother wants her to dig.

(2) Why will she be crying ? Why will she lament ? Why will she begin to cry ? Do not cry. She bewailed her misfortune. She would have started to cry, if they had taken her father away. We do not want her to cry.

(3) Go home at once. Do you not know that she has gone already? I am going home now. I shall go home now. I should go to the village, if my mother told me that (there was) a treasure there.

(4) The old woman would have been glad, if God had sent her a treasure.

<sup>1</sup> The perfective norosophits must be used when the verb corresponds to to speak.

(5) She says her prayers every morning. Has she said her prayers this morning? No, she is going to say her prayers now. Every day say your prayers night and morning.

(6) Who usually helped the poor girl to do her work? We often help her. You are going to help her now. Surely you did [неуже́ли...не] help her. She wants me to help them. I should be glad if you helped them.

(7) Send us a lot of those pretty flowers every week. Send her the flowers now. I should have sent them, if I had got to know that she liked flowers.

(8) I generally buy my books of [y] that man, but to-day I am going to buy what I need [what to me (is) necessary] of my friend. Surely you have not bought yours already? I should have bought them, if I had had any money. I want you to buy your books here.

(9) She'll tell you what we are talking about. Speak with him about it and tell him what you think of the matter. I should speak to him about it, if I knew where he lived [lives]. I want to tell you something.

(10) Take this pen and paper. We'll take them now. He is always taking what does not belong to him. You would have taken the money, if it belonged to them.

(11) Do not eat that meat.

(12) He will drive to church. Drive home.

C. Translate into Russian:

Before  $[ \mu o with genitive ]$  that time I did not know that peasants in that district buried their treasure in the earth, but at Easter, when the others were buying food for the feast, we prayed to God that He might send us something, so that we too might have food and clothes. I took a spade and went into the old village; I asked God to help me and started to dig in the damp earth.

### LESSON LIV

225. Verbs in -овать have the present in -ую, -уешь; -евать changes to -юю, etc., e.g.

рисова́ть, рису́ю, imperat. рису́й [řisúǐ], to draw. ра́доваться, ра́дуюсь, imperat. ра́дуйся [ráduĭšʌ], to rejoice. горева́ть, горю́ю, imperat. горю́й [gʌrəvó<sup>i</sup>t, gʌrɨuǐ], to grieve, mourn.

226. Verbsin-ывать, -нвать are regular verbs with -ва́ю, -ва́ешь, etc., e.g. открыва́ть, открыва́ю [лtkrïváju], to open.

227. Ex. A of the last lesson and Ex. A of this lesson are almost exactly Tolstoi's version of this story. It will be noticed that the

writer mingles past and present tenses, where, in English, we should prefer the past or the present throughout.

228. Remember the form corresponding to *whether* in subordinate clauses :

Онъ меня́ спроси́лъ, зна́ю (зналъ) ли я э́то [on mənd sprašit, znáju (znat) li ja éta], He asked me, if (whether) I knew (had known) that.

### VOCABULARY

Госпо́дь (Го́спода, у, а, омъ, ѣ)	моли́тва [malítva], prayer
[gAspó <sup>i</sup> t], the Lord	сере́бряный [sərébrənī], of silver
Го́споди! [góspadi], O Lord	полно́ [pʌtnó], (it is) full
пра́здникъ [prázňik], festival	по́лно [pólnл], stop, enough !
жи́тель [ʒїtəl], inhabitant	ο, όδο (with acc.) [o, όb.], against
я́ма [jámл], pit, hole	внеза́нно [vnəzápnʌ], suddenly
кубы́шка [kubí∫kʌ], <i>jug</i>	ну [nu], well
MOHÉTA [manéta], coin	бýдстъ [búdət], that will do, enough !

#### VERBS

(1) Perfective with prefix

(по)ду́мать I A [(рл)dúmлi], to think
(по)велѣть (ю, и́шь) (dat. of person) [(рл)vəléit], to order, command
(по)благодари́ть (ю, и́шь) [(рл)błддлдлі́ц], to thank
(по)бѣжа́ть (ѣгу́, жи́шь, Згд рlur. гу́ть) [(рл)bәʒáit], to run
(за)звенѣть (ю, и́шь) [(гл)гізейit], to ring, tinkle, jingle
(за)хотѣть (Раг. 222 and note to Voc. LIII) [(гл)хлі́еit], to wish
(с)дѣлать I A [(s)dɛ́tлt], to do. make
(у)слы́шать (ю, ишь) [(u)stījлt], to see (perf. = to catch sight of)

(2) ать, нть

∫броса́ть IA [brasá<sup>i</sup>t̀], to throw бро́сить (о́шу, о́сишь) [brósit̀]

(3) Long and short (see Par. 232)

 вырыва́ть I A [vīrīváit], to excavate

 вы́рыть (ою, ешь) [vīrīt]

 открыва́ть I A [лtkrīváit], to open

 откры́ть (о́ю, ешь) [лtkrīt]

 поднима́ть I A [pлdňimá<sup>i</sup>t], to lift, pick up

 подни́ть (ниму́, и́мешь) [pлdňa<sup>i</sup>t]

 потряса́ть I A [pлtřəsá<sup>i</sup>t], to shake

 потряса́ть (су́, ёшь) [pлtřəstí]

#### § 228

(4) Perfective in нуть

∫нагиба́ть I A [nʌġibá<sup>i</sup>t], to bend

\нагну́ть (ну́, ёшь) [плдпú<sup>i</sup>t́]

∫стуча́ть (чý, чи́шь) [stut∫á<sup>i</sup>t], to knock

Cту́кнуть (у, ешь) [stúknut], to knock once

∫крича́ть (чý, чи́нь) [krit∫á<sup>i</sup>t], to cry, call out

(кри́кнуть (y, ешь) [kříknuť], to cry out once

Perfective verbs in HyTb indicate a single, and often sudden, performance or occurrence.

#### (5) Different stems

{находи́ть (жý, о́дишь) [плхлdít], to come upon, find (пайти́ (дý, ёшь) [пліtí]

#### EXERCISES

 A. Continuation of the "True Story" from Толсто́й. Translate :

Вну́чка и ду́маетъ: «Какъ мо́жно кладъ найти́? Ну да, сдѣлаю, какъ ба́бушка вели́тъ.» Взяла́ лопа́ту и пошла́. Вы́рыла она́ я́му и ду́маетъ: «Бу́детъ, пойду́ домо́й.» Хотѣла подня́ть лопа́ту, слы́шитъ—<sup>1</sup> о́бо что́-то лопа́та сту́кнула. Она́ нагну́лась, ви́дитъ—<sup>1</sup> кубы́шка больша́я. Потрясла́ её, что́-то звени́тъ. Она́ бро́сила лопа́ту, побѣжа́ла къ ба́бушкѣ, кричи́тъ: «Ба́бушка, кладъ нашла́!» Откры́ли кубы́шку, въ не́й полно́ сере́бряныхъ моне́тъ. И ба́бушка со вну́чкой купи́ли себѣ къ пра́зднику, чѣмъ разговѣться, и коро́ву купи́ли, и благодари́ли Бо́га, что Онъ услы́шалъ ихъ моли́тву.

(a) PROVERBIAL SAYINGS

Матери́нская моли́тва со дна [dna] мо́ря поднима́сть, A mother's prayer raises (even) from the bottom of the sea, i.e. can remove mountains.

Госпо́дь повелѣ́лъ отъ земли́ корми́ться [gaspói̇́t pavəĺɛ́t at žəmĺí karmítsa], The Lord commanded men to live on the fruits of the earth.

Кто вчера́ солга́лъ, тому́ и за́втра не повѣрятъ [xto ft∫ərá sʌtgat, tʌmú i záftrʌ nə pʌv̀érʌt], Who (has) lied yesterday, will not be believed to-morrow.

B. Translate into Russian:

(1) How difficult (it is) to find the treasure we are seeking ! How easy to dig a hole in the garden when you have a good spade ! We must do as granny has ordered.

(2) Thank you. When we thanked him for his goodness, he said, "Don't mention it."

<sup>1</sup> This broken construction with verbs of *hearing* and *seeing* is very common.

(3) The old man ordered his grandson to bring him his pipe. Why does he order you to take a look at what the other pupils are doing? Order him to write this letter to-day.

(4) Why is she running? They are not running. I should like [condit. of xot<sup>\*</sup>5Tb] to know whether she did indeed run home to her grandmother. Run to her.

(5) Suddenly we felt a desire to hear what they were saying to each other. Did you hear that they had already opened the book? We hear the coins jingling [how the coins jingle *or* we hear—the coins are jingling].

(6) We caught sight of them throwing stones at the dog [how they were throwing with stones into the dog]. Throw (away) the wooden spade. I shall throw it away, if you command me.

(7) What are they excavating in the ground? Let them go into the garden; let them excavate a deep pit, perhaps they will find what we want.

(8) Do you know whether they have opened the door? They always open the doors at six o'clock. They will open them at once. If they open them, we shall go in. If they opened them, we should go in.

(9) I want them to pick up all those white stones and throw them into the river. Pick them up. She will pick up the spade at once. Why did the old teacher want the elder pupils to write on white paper instead of copy-books ? If you shake the black jug, you will hear the coins jingling. If you had shaken it, you would have heard the coins jingling. Shake it. Do not shake it.

(10) She was always bending down. She bent down and saw something in the ground.

(11) It is well that they always knock. Then he knocked, opened the door and went in. Surely they are not still crying out? They started to cry out. He cried out, "Mother, I have found that beautiful treasure you were speaking of. God has heard our prayer." We do not always find that which we seek. We always used to find it. I found it yesterday. I want to find it. I want you to find it. I asked him whether you had found it. I'll seek it and perhaps I'll find it. If I find it, I'll tell you.

(12) If those foreigners had known that cholera (was) in the town, perhaps they would not have come to the fair. I should like to know how many of the unfortunate inhabitants have already died of such dreadful discases.

# LESSON LV

# LESSON LV

229. Declension of two words for child.

(1)		Sing.	Plur.
	nom.	дитя́ [ditá]	дѣти [déti]
	gen.	—я́ти [ditáti]	—éй [dətéĭ]
	dat.	—я́ти [ditáti]	дѣ́тямъ [dėt́əm]
	acc.	—я́ [ditá]	—éü [dətéĭ]
	instr.	—я́тею [ditátəju]	—я́ми (ьми́) [dətámi (dətmí)]
	prep.	—я́ти [ditáti]	дѣтяхъ [détəx]
(2)			
	nom.	ребёнокъ [rəbónлk]	ребя́та [rəbátл]
	gen.	—нка [rəbónkл]	—ъ [rəbát]
	dat.	—нку [rəbónku]	—амъ [r̀əb́átлm]
	acc.	—нка [rəbónkл]	—ъ [rəbát]
	instr.	—нкомъ [ŕəbónkлm]	—ами [rəbátami]
	prep.	—нкѣ [řəbónkə]	—axъ [r̀əbátʌx]

(3) Of these the singular of (2) and the plural of (1) are in most frequent use.

Ребя́та! is used by officers addressing soldiers.

(4) The declension shown in (2) is typical of the names of young of animals. (Cf. Group 10, Par. 77.)

230. Many names of peoples, of classes or ranks, end in -анинъ, -янинъ, -инъ. In the singular they are regular. The plural endings are

-(ан)е, -(ан)ъ, -(ан)амъ, -(ан)ъ, -(ан)ами, -(ан)ахъ

or

-яне, etc. (Cf. Group 11, Par. 77.)

Such words are :

болга́ринъ, а́ре [bʌt͡gdřin, dířə], Bulgar англича́нинъ, а́не [ɑnglitʃdňin, dňə], Englishman да́тчанинъ, ане [ddtʃəňin, лňə], Dane дворяни́нъ, а́не [dvʌřəňín, řdňə], noble граждани́нъ, а́не [grʌʒdʌňín, dňə], burgher мѣщани́нъ, а́не [uhəʃtʃəňín, dňə], small townsman крестья́нинъ, а́не [krəstjdňin, jdňə], peasant христіани́нъ, а́не [xristjʌňín, jdňə], Christian

Typical feminine form :

болгарка, англичанка [batgarka, anglitfanka]

## LESSON LV

231. The verb дава́ть, да́ть, to give, is irregular.

Present tense of дава́ть is

даю́, ёшь, еtс. [dʌjú, dʌjóʃ],

but the imperative is

**дава́й, а́йте** [daváĭ, daváĭtə].

Future tense of дать is

дамъ [dam], дашь [daʃ], дастъ [dast], дади́мъ [dʌdím], и́те [dʌdítə], даду́тъ [dʌdút],

and the imperative is

да́й [dóĭ], да́йте [dóĭtə]

The imperative дава́й is frequently used with an infinitive in the sense of *let us*, e.g.

Дава́й чита́ть [daváĭ tſitá<sup>i</sup>t], Let us do some reading.

## VOCABULARY

слуга́, и́, ∸н (masc.) [sługá], servant самова́ръ [sлmлvár], tea-urn	се́рдце, а, а́ (е́цъ) [šɛ́rtsə], heart колѣ́но, а, н [kalɛ́nʌ], knee			
ба́ринъ, a, ба́ре [bárin], master	остально́й [лstл <sup>i</sup> lnóĭ], remaining			
шалу́нъ [ʃətún], young scamp	дово́льно [davó <sup>i</sup> lna], sufficiently,			
приро́да [přiródʌ], nature	fairly, rather			
прихожая (adj. in form) [přixóʒəjə],	како́й-нибу́дь [kakoĭ-nibú <sup>i</sup> t], some			
ante-room, corridor	or other			
воро́та (also accent on á) (neut. pl.)	про́сто [próstл], simply			
[varóta], gate	сза́ди [ssádi], from behind			
сторона́ (accent on сто́ in acc. sing.	He tố [ủə tố], not that, if not that, or			
and nom. pl.) [staraná], side	else			
лежа́нка [ləʒánkʌ], bench beside	не та́къ [ńə ták], not in the right way			
the stove	разумѣется [глгите́jətsл], it is			
ку́ча [kút∫л], heap, lot, group	understood, of course			
Verbs				
(1) Destructions forward with motion				

(1) Perfective formed with prefix
(по)болта́ть I A [(рл)bлltá<sup>i</sup>t], to chatter
(по)ста́внть (влю, иннь) [(рл)stá<sup>i</sup>ti], to set, put, stand (trans.)
(по)сто́ять (ю́, и́ннь) [(рл)stлjá<sup>i</sup>t], to stand (intrans.)
(по)люби́ть (блю́, -биннь) [(рл)lubít], to love
(по)мири́ть (ю́, и́ннь) [(рл)niiít], to reconcile, make peace between (ми́ръ [mir], peace)
(по)сидѣть (ну́, ди́ннь) [(рл)sidé<sup>i</sup>t], to sit
(по, за)ворча́ть (ў, и́ннь) [(рл, гл)vлrtfá<sup>i</sup>t], to grumble, growl
(вз)дрема́ть (млю́, е́мленнь) [(vz)drəmá<sup>i</sup>t], to doze, slumber
(у)вида́ть I A [(u)vidá<sup>i</sup>t], to see

M

#### LESSON LV

(2) ать, ить

∫ заставля́ть I A [zʌstʌvlá<sup>i</sup>t], to cause, get, make, oblige заста́вить (влю, вишь) [zʌstávit] оставля́ть [ʌstʌvlá<sup>i</sup>t], to leave, abandon поставля́ть [pʌstʌvlá<sup>i</sup>t], to set, put on

(3) Imperfective long—perfective short (see Par. 232)
подмета́ть I A [pʌdmətá<sup>i</sup>t], to sweep up
подмести́ (етý, ёшь)<sup>1</sup> [pʌdməstí]
(обвива́ть I A [ʌbvivá<sup>i</sup>t], to twine round, embrace
(обовью, ёшь) [ʌbvít]
посма́тривать I A [pʌsmátřivʌt], to look on things about you
посмо́трѣ́ть (ю, -ишь) [pʌsmatřé<sup>i</sup>t]
(устра́ивать [ustráivʌt], to arrange, organize
устро́ить (о́ю, ишь) [ustróit]

(4) Perfective in нуть (покида́ть I A [рлkіdá<sup>i</sup>t], to give up, leave

поки́нуть (у, ешь) [pʌkínut]

(5) Different Stems

∫уходи́ть (жу́, о́дишь) [uxʌdít̀], to go away \уйти́ (ду́, ёнь) [uit́í] ∫проводи́ть (жу́, -дишь) [prʌvʌdít̀], lit. to lead through, pass, spend (time) \провести́ (еду́, ёшь) <sup>1</sup> [prʌvəst́í]

#### EXERCISES

A. Translate :

## Лѣни́вый Слуга́

Лѣни́вый отъ приро́ды, онъ остально́е вре́мя ни́чего не дѣлалъ. Онъ не дава́лъ себѣ труда́ ни <sup>2</sup> поста́вить самова́ра, ни <sup>2</sup> подмести́ поло́въ. Онъ, и́ли дрема́лъ въ прихо́жей, и́ли уходи́лъ болта́ть въ ку́хню; не то́, такъ по цѣлымъ часа́мъ стоя́лъ у воро́тъ и посма́тривалъ на всѣ сто́роны. Онъ ворча́лъ вся́кій разъ, какъ го́лосъ ба́рина заставля́лъ его́ покида́ть лежа́нку. Несмотря́ на всё э́то, онъ былъ дово́льно мя́гкаго и до́браго се́рдца. Онъ люби́лъ да́же проводи́ть вре́мя съ дѣтьми́. На дворѣ, у воро́тъ, его́ ча́сто вида́ли съ ку́чей дѣте́й. Онъ ихъ мири́тъ, устра́иваетъ и́гры, и́ли про́сто сиди́тъ съ ни́ми, взявъ³ одного́ на одно́ колѣ́но, друго́го на друго́е, а сза́ди ше́ю его́ обовьётъ ещё како́й-инбу́дь шалу́нъ рука́ми.

Adapted from «Обло́мовъ», by Гончаро́въ

<sup>1</sup> For past tense see List A, Par. 239.

<sup>3</sup> ' Having taken,' from взять, to take.

#### (a) **PROVERBIAL SAYINGS**

He оставля́й [лstлvloi] отца́ и ма́тери на ста́рости [stórлsii] лѣть, и Богь тебя́ не оста́вить, Do not abandon father and mother in their old age, and God will not abandon you.

Кто пра́вды и́щсть, того́ Богъ сы́щетъ [sı́jtjət], Who seeks truth, him God will find (seek out).

Какъ Богъ до люде́й, такъ оте́цъ до дѣте́й, As God is to men, so is a father to his children.

Ма́ленькое дитя́—ма́тери го́ре; большо́е дитя́—отцу́ забо́та [zʌbótʌ], A young (little) child is the mother's sorrow: an older (big) child is the father's care.

За учёнаго [utjón.vx] двухъ неучёныхъ [noutjónïx] даютъ, One instructed person is worth two ignorant ones.

Терпѣнie даёть умѣнie [iərpénija—unhénija], Patience brings power (understanding).

## B. Translate into Russian :

(1) The rich burghers would sometimes like to be [Lesson XLVIII] nobles, and poor workmen often wish to be burghers.

(2) Surely those two lazy servants are not always standing chattering in the corridor? Would you like to know what they are chattering about? Perhaps they are grumbling because their master makes them get up so early. Make them go to bed. When their master is kind, few industrious servants will grumble.

(3) Let us sweep this dirty floor. I thought it had been swept already. Give me what you are holding in your hand. I am not holding anything. I'll give the poor man what he needs. Give him a few silver coins.

(4) As he was rather kind-hearted [of a fairly kind heart], you might [could] often have seen him sitting near the iron gate, playing with his master's little children. One would sit [sat] on one knee, a second would be on his other knee, while (a) third young scamp would embrace his great thick neck from behind.

(5) He is always looking about him on all sides. Look at [Ha with acc.] him ! If you had looked at what [TO, 4TO] was going on out of doors, you would have known that he was not a bad man, in spite of the fact that [TO, 4TO] he was lazy by nature. He has just been arranging the children's games, but he did not do it right. I wish you would make peace [between] those three children.

(6) I wonder why [I should wish to know] he always makes me leave the bench when I am dozing in the comfortable kitchen. He'll make you go away. They will oblige us to go to one of [II375] those old houses that still stand on the meadow behind the wooden church. Do not leave your kind old master.

## LESSON LVI

(7) How do you spend so much time at home when it is raining and it is impossible to work outside ? I like to play with the child; I study a little, of course not too much; or I repair the furniture. I should have spent the whole day in bed, if I had not been well [healthy]. I want her to spend the day at home; I want her to sweep the floor, to prepare the dinner and then to knit stockings for her father. Do you know whether she has put on the samovar?

(8) You have lived a long time [already live long] with us in this cold, dark forest; if you went away now you would never know what might [=could (cond.)] happen to [Cb, instr.] all your friends. If she goes away, what will you say to her? I do not want her to go away. She goes away every day at six o'clock. Go away. Do not go away.

#### LESSON LVI

232. In vocabularies LII-LV appear a number of verbs under 'Long and short' belonging to a very numerous class. The typical verb of this class has in the perfective aspect a form composed of *prefix plus simple verb*, and from the perfective is formed the imperfective infinitive by adding to the stem the termination (ы)вать or (и)вать, the stem-vowel occasionally being modified. Such words are :

- (1) (на)писа́ть, to write
   бописа́ть (perf.), to describe
   опи́сывать (imperf.)
- (2) (по)ры́ть, to dig
   (зары́ть, to bury)
   (зарыва́ть)
- (4) (по)проси́ть, to request ∫спроси́ть, to ask ⟨спра́шивать

- (5) (по)стро́ить, to build, construct устро́ить, to arrange устра́ивать
- (6) (с)вить, to twine
   ∫ обви́ть, to embrace
   ∫ обвива́ть
- (7) каза́ться, to appear
   ∫показа́ть, to show
   (пока́зывать
   ∫ разсказа́ть, to relate
   (разска́зывать)

This type of imperfective indicates that the action takes place again and again (cf. Voc. XIX, спра́шивать and спроси́ть) or occupies some duration of time. 233. The verbs (по)надѣ́яться [(рл)плdéjətsл], to hope, and (по)боя́тьса [рлbлjá<sup>i</sup>tsл], to fear, have the same construction as хотѣ́ть (cf. Par. 224 (2)), i.e. they are used with the conditional, e.g.

Я надѣюсь, что́бы она́ пришла́ [ja nʌdejus, ʃtóbī ʌna priʃtá], I hope she comes.

Онь бойтся, чтобы я ис по́няль [on baitsa, stobi ja no pónat], He is afraid I shall understand.

Note the ne in the last example.

234. If the subordinate clause following боя́ться is negative, use the future perfective with conj. что, *e.g.* 

Онь бойтся, что я не пойму́ [on bлitsл, ∫to ja ne pлimú], He is afraid I shall not understand.

235. Distinguish clearly between cámhin (used before nouns with the meaning of *same*, *very*, and before adjectives to form the superlative)  $^{1}$  and camb, the emphatic pronoun (meaning *self*).

Са́мый is declined like any adjective in -ый.

Caмъ is declined like оди́нъ (see Par. 107 (c)). Examples :

Она сама не понимаетъ [лъй злто не ранітојет], She herself does not understand.

Само́ собо́ю разумѣ́ется [samó sabóju razumė́jətsa], That understands itself of itself, i.e. it is, of course, understood ; it goes without saying. but

то́же са́мое [tóʒə sám.jə], (just) the same thing; въ са́момъ дѣлѣ [fsám.m délə], in very deed; са́мый лу́чшій примѣ́ръ [sámï tút[ĭ priinér], the best example.

## Vocabulary

генера́лъ [ġəǹərát], general	всю́ду [fšúdu] ог вездѣ́ [vəzdɛ́],		
похо́дъ [pʌxót], campaign	everywhere		
непрія́тель [nəpřijátəl], enemy	не вѣ́рно? [ѝә v́є́rnʌ], not true ? i.e.		
во́йско, а, а́ [vóiskʌ], army	is it not so?		
врагъ, á, и́ [vrok], enemy	испра́вный [isprávnī], correct, exact		
разска́зъ, ы [rasskás], tale, narration	смѣлый [smétī], bold		
слу́жба (gen. pl. ебъ)[stúzbʌ], service	весёлый [vəsotī], glad, jolly		
ка́ша [káʃʌ], gruel, porridge	солда́тскій [sʌłdútski], soldierly		
шу́тка (окъ) [∫útkл], joke	BOĆIIHLIII [vajźni], warlike, military		
щи, ще́й (fem. pl.) [stsi, stsei],	и.т.д. = итакъда́лѣе[i tak dúləjə],		
cabbage-soup	and so forth		
стоя́ть на часа́хь [stʌjú <sup>i</sup> t nʌ tʃʌsúx], to be (stand) on guard.			
<sup>1</sup> Cf. Voc. X, Pars. 186, 197.			

## LESSON LVI

#### VERBS

(1) Perfective formed with prefix

(по)би́ть (бью, ёшь) [(рл)bít], to beat
(по)чи́стить (и́щу, и́стишь) [(рл)tʃístit], to clean
(по)надѣяться (ѣю, ѣешь) [(рл)плdéjətsл], to hope
(на, по)смѣши́ть (ý, и́шь) [(пл, рл)subəʃít], to make laugh
(на)учи́ться (dat. of subject learned) [(пл)utʃítsл], to learn, study

(Bh)учи́ться <sup>1</sup> (dat. of subject learned) [(vī)utʃitsʌ], to learn, learn off (о)безноко́нться (ю, нинь) [(л)bəspʌkóitsʌ], to put oneself about, take

thought

/поко́й (m.), rest

поко́йный [pʌkóinï], peaceful, at rest, deceased

(с)поко́йной но́чи ! [(s)рлко́їплі nótʃi], good night !/

(про)служить (ý, -ишь) [(prл)stuzit], to serve

(с)кома́ндовать (дую, ешь) (gov. instr. case) [(s)kamándavat̀], to command

#### (2) ать, ить

{поступа́ть I A [pʌstupá<sup>i</sup>t], to step, act, behave, enter (upon) поступи́ть (плю́, у́пишь) [pʌstupít́] {побѣжда́ть I A [pʌbəʒdá<sup>i</sup>t], to conquer, overcome побѣди́ть (ѣжду́, ѣди́шь) [pʌbədít́]

#### (3) Long and short

∫опи́сывать I A [ʌpísīvʌt], to describe
Описа́ть (шу́, -шешь) [ʌpísá<sup>i</sup>t]
∫счита́ть I A [stʃitá<sup>i</sup>t], to count, consider, regard as
(счесть (сочту́, ёшь) [stʃest]
∫пачина́ть I A [nʌtʃiná<sup>i</sup>t], to begin
нача́ть (чну́, нёшь) [nʌtʃá<sup>i</sup>t]

#### (4) Different stems

f приходи́ть [přixʌdít], to come притти́ [přití]

#### Exercises

A. Translate :

## Суво́ровъ

Мальчикъ рано началъ учиться и съ раннихъ лътъ полюбилъ книги, въ которыхъ описывались войны, походы, и.т.д. Пятнад-

<sup>1</sup> Perfectives in вы are accented on the prefix.

цати лѣть молодо́й Суво́ровь поступи́ль на вое́нную слу́жбу и де́вять лѣть прослужи́ль просты́мь [as a] солда́томь.

Не было солдата исправиње его: онъ вставалъ раньше другихъ, самъ чистилъ себѣ сапоги и платье и стойлъ на часахъ во всякую ногоду. Жилъ онъ вмѣстѣ съ простыми солдатами и ѣлъ солдатскія щи и ка́шу; былъ всегда смѣлъ и веселъ и смѣши́лъ свои́хъ това́рищей весёлыми шу́тками и разска́зами. Всѣ люби́ли его́.

Когда́ онъ сталъ офице́ромъ и на́чалъ кома́ндовать солда́тами, всю́ду на войнѣ онъ побѣжда́лъ непрія́теля.

«Ребята—говорилъ Суво́ровъ солда́тамъ,—всегда́ иди́те вперёдъ на врага́. Не безпоко́йтесь о томъ, ско́лько пе́редъ ва́ми непрія́телей. Вы вѣдь пришли́ бить ихъ, а не счита́ть.»

From «Четвёртая Кни́га для Чте́нія»,

by И. С. Мнхе́евъ

(Каза́нь, 1907)

B. Translate into Russian :

(1) The brave general was at that time only a private [Lesson XLVIII] in the Russian army. I thought that the Russians regarded [Lesson XLVIII] him as their best officer. Why did he call him their weakest general ?

(2) Don't beat the poor children. She was always beating them. I wish she would not beat them. Let her beat them, if she likes. If she often beat them, they would not love her.

(3) I want the same servant to clean the children's black boots and I hope that she will clean all the windows and the utensils in the kitchen too. She is cleaning them now, I am told.

(4) Some of that boy's friends are always laughing; he keeps them laughing all day. It would be a pity if the silly boy made his little friends laugh on that occasion.

(5) Surely your youngest brother has not learned his lesson yet? Yes, he has already learned it by heart. Has he been studying the Russian language [dat. case]?

(6) If you put yourself about over that business, it would be a pity. It will be a pity, if you put yourself about. Don't put yourself about. I should be glad if she took [gave herself] a little more trouble when I tell her to put on the samovar and to sweep the floor. Perhaps she did not understand what you said.

(7) Perhaps your eldest son finished his service long ago. Do you not understand that that dark pit served the animal as a dwelling ? I did not understand you.

(8) Of course, as an officer, he had command of large numbers of private soldiers.

§ 235

(9) Would you not like to know how he would act, if you told him what had happened to [съ, *instr.*] his rich old aunt? When will you enter military service? Really, I scarcely know myself yet. I hope that I may soon enter the service, but I am afraid that I may not enter it till Christmas.

(10) Is it really true that that general always defeated his numerous enemies ? He would always defeat them, if he had enough soldiers.

(11) If you ask those two intelligent children, they will describe fairly well what took place. Describe it to me.

(12) You must never count your enemies. Do not count them. I hope he won't start counting them to-day. If he does, we shall not come home till late [come only late].

(13) I am afraid the lazy boys will not get up before nine o'clock. We always used to get up early in the morning, but to-day we did not get up till eight. Stand up. Sit down, please.

(14) When the four little boys came into the wooden hut, they found their father and mother weaving. They begin to work very early. When will he begin to repair the old arm-chair? He has already begun, hasn't he? We shall begin a little later. Begin now, if you like. Why must I begin ?

## PREPOSITIONS

236.

## PREPOSITIONS

#### EMPLOYED IN LESSONS I-LVI

With Genitive

близъ, near	пре́жде, <i>before</i> (of time)
вмѣсто, instead of	сза́ди, from behind
во́злѣ, near, beside	безъ, without
кро́мѣ, besides	цля, for
ми́мо, past	до, up to, till, before
напротивъ, opposite	изъ, out of, from
о́коло, about, approximately	ме́жду (cf. instr.), between
подлѣ, beside	отъ, away from, from
по́слѣ, after	съ (co) (cf. instr.), from, off
противъ, against	y, at, near, with

(The words from близъ to сза́ди are also adverbs.)

With Dative

къ (ко), to, towards по (cf. acc. and prep.), over, on, along, according to

With Accusative

въ, into (cf. prep.)	по, up to, at the rate of (cf. dat. and
<b>3a</b> , behind, in exchange for, in return	prep.)
for (cf. instr.)	подъ, under (cf. instr.)
на, on to (cf. prep.)	про, about, concerning
несмотря́ на, in spite of	сквозь which has not occurred means
о, объ, обо, against (cf. prep.)	through
передъ, before (place) (cf. instr.)	че́резъ, through, across, in (of time)

With Instrumental

ме́жду, between (cf. gen.) сь (со), with (cf. gen.) за, подъ, пе́редъ (cf. acc.) надъ, over, above

With Prepositional

въ, *in* (cf. acc.) на, *on* (cf. acc.) по, after (cf. dat. and acc.) при, near, at, in the time of

o, объ, обо, concerning (ef. acc.)

Note.— За, пе́редъ, подъ govern acc. or instr. въ, на, о govern acc. or prep. съ governs gen., acc. (=as in comparisons), or instr. по governs dat., acc., or prep. ме́жду governs gen. or instr.

## 237. PREDICATIVE FORM OF ADJECTIVES

Observe that o or e is inserted very frequently in the masculine singular.

Other forms in brackets indicate alternatives.

The neuter may generally be used adverbially, though the accent sometimes changes.

(1) Feminine termination accented, e.g.

простой : простъ, проста, просто, просты

Similar are:	
блѣдный (енъ)	ми́лый
бѣдный (енъ)	мо́крый
бѣлый (о́)	молодо́й (мо́лодъ)
весёлый (ве́селъ)	ни́зкій (окъ)
ви́дный (енъ; о́, ы́)	но́вый
вку́сный (енъ)	ну́жный (енъ)
высокій (о, и)	плохо́й
гла́дкій (окъ; о́)	по́лный (онъ)
глубо́кій (о́, и́)	пра́вый
глу́пый	просто́й
гнило́й	прямо́й
голо́дный (енъ)	пустой
го́лый (о́)	ра́вный (енъ)
громкій (окъ)	робкій (окъ)
гря́зный (енъ)	ро́вный (енъ)
ди́кій	рѣдкій (окъ)
дли́нный (и́ненъ)	си́льный (си́лёнъ; or (2))
до́лгій (огъ)	скро́мный (енъ) — — —
дурно́й (енъ)	ску́чный (енъ)
душный (енъ)	сла́бый
жа́лкій (окъ)	слы́шный (енъ)
жа́ркій (окъ)	спѣ́лый
жёлтый (ó)	ста́рый
живо́й	сухо́й
жи́рный (енъ)	сѣрый (or (2))
зелёный	твёрдый
кра́сный (енъ; о́, ы́)	тёнлый (тёпель; or (2))
кроткій (окъ)	ти́хій
кру́глый	тру́дный (енъ)
крѣпкій (окъ)	ўзкій (окъ)
ме́лкій (окъ)	хра́брый (á or a)
мёртвый (о́, ы́)	худой

иѣ́лый чистый чёрный (енъ) я́ркій (окъ) честный (енъ) я́сный (енъ) Note.---си́ній: сниь; я́, е, и (2) Terminations accented, e.g. добрый: добръ, добра, добро, добры больной (боленъ; о) мя́гкій (окъ) большой) острый (остёръ) (вели́къ; о, н) великій | свѣтлый (елъ) во́льный (во́лёнъ) си́льный (sec (1)) высо́кій смѣшио́й (о́нъ) горя́чій (е, н) тёмный (енъ) добрый тупой каково́й (о́въ) тяжёлый короткій (отокъ) умный (ёнъ) лёгкій (окъ) хи́трый (ёръ) ма́ленькій) хоро́шій (малъ) ма́лый широ́кій (3) Accentuation of the attributive adjective preserved, e.g. здоровый : здоровъ, здорова, здорово, здоровы бога́тый очеви́дный (енъ) великолѣпный (енъ) поко́йный (о́ешъ) внеза́пный (енъ) поко́рный (енъ) внимательный (енъ) поле́зный (енъ) дъйствительный (снъ) прилежный (енъ) дово́льный (енъ) прія́тный (енъ) здоро́вый (радъ) злой (золъ), зла, etc. рыжій извѣстный (енъ) сердитый иптере́сный (енъ) скорый испра́вный (енъ) смѣлый ки́слый (елъ; or (1)) суро́вый краси́вый счастли́вый лѣни́вый трудолюби́вый любезный (енъ) трусли́вый медленный тъсный (енъ) могу́чій ужа́сный (енъ) некраси́вый ую́тный (енъ) несчастный (енъ) хи́щный (енъ) (4) Note.—холо́дный: хо́лоденъ, дна́, о́ or o, ы́ or ы

хоро́шенькій : хороше́некъ, е́нька, etc. (pretty) свято́й : свя́та etc.

## 238. PREDICATIVE COMPARATIVE IN -E

(1) ENDING IN ->Ke

ни́зкій, и́же, low (not high) рѣдкій, ѣже, rare стро́гій, о́же, strict твёрдый, рже, hard у́зкій, у́же, narrow худо́й, ху́же, bad

Note.—The stem of the positive ends in -г, -д, -дк, -зк. (a) по́здный has по́зже ог позднѣе, late.

(2) ENDING IN - LUE

высо́кій, вы́ше, high далёкій, льше, far до́лгій, о́льше ог о́лѣе, long

бли́зкій, и́же, near гла́дкій, а́же, smooth

глубо́кій, бже, deep дорого́й, о́же, dear

жи́дкій, и́же, fluid

молодо́й, о́же, young

сухо́й, у́ше, dry ти́хій, и́ше, low (not loud) то́нкій, о́ньше, thin

Note.—The stem of the positive ends in a guttural.

(a) Observe the irregular forms :

хоро́шій, лу́чше, good большо́й, бо́льше, large ма́ленькій, ме́ньше, little ста́рый, а́рше, old ра́нній, а́ньше, early

(3) ENDING IN -ще

rусто́й, у́ще, thick, dense то́лстый, о́лще, fat просто́й, о́ще, simple чи́стый, и́ще, clean Note.—The stem of the positive ends in -ст.

(4) ENDING IN - 4e

бога́тый, а́че, rich го́рькій, рче, bitter гро́мкій, че or чѣе, loud жа́лкій, че or чѣе, pitiful жа́ркій, че, hot коро́ткій, о́че, short кро́ткій, о́че or о́тче, gentle круто́й, у́че, steep, brusque крѣпкій, пче, strong лёгкій, е́гче, light ме́лкій, льче, fine, shallow мя́гкій, мя́гче, soft ро́бкій, бче, timid я́ркій, рче, bright

Note.—The stem of the positive ends in -K or -T.

(a) Observe : ди́кій, дичѣ́е, wild

#### (5) IRREQULAR FORMS

дешёвый, е́вле, *cheap* тяжёлый, тяже́ле *ог* тяжелѣе, шпро́кій, ши́ре, *broad heavy* 

The pronunciation of these forms in -e is simple: the syllable preceding the termination bears the accent.

## IRREGULAR VERBS

## 239. A FEW COMMON IRREGULAR VERBS<sup>1</sup>

A. Some verbs in -ctb, -cth

	Infin.	Pres.	Imperat.	Past
(1)	(по)вести́	еду, ёшь	еди́	ёлъ, а́, о́, и́, to lead
	класть	аду́, ёшь	ади́	алъ, а́, о, н, to put, lay
	The perfe	ctive is поло:	жи́ть (жý,	, о́жишь).
	(у)красть	аду́, ёшь	ади́	алъ, а, о, и, to steal
	(по)пря́сть	яду́, ёшь	яди	ялъ, á, ó, ú, to spin
(2)	(вы́)мести́	ету́, ёшь	ети	ёлъ, а́, о́, и́, to sweep
	(за)цвѣсти́	ъту́, ёшь	Ъти	ъль [jot], á, ó, ú, to bloom
(3)	(по)гре́сть	ебу, ёшь	еби	ёбъ, бла́, о́, и́, to row
• •		also гребну́	ть.	
	скрести	ебý, ёшь	еби	ёбъ, бла́, о́, и́, to scrape
	Perfective	скребнуть.		
(4)	(по)нести́	есу, ёшь	еси	ёсъ, сла́, о́, н́, to carry
. /	(по)трясти	ясу, ёшь	яси	ясь [jos], сла́, о́, и́, to shake
	(вы́)рости́	сту́, ёшь	CTÍ	ось, осла́, о́, н́, to grow
(5)	(про)кля́сть	япу́, ёшь	яни́	ялъ, а́, о, н, to curse
		B. VERBS	5 IN -3TL,	-3TÚ
	Infin.	Pres.	Imperat.	Past
	(по)везти́	езу́, ёшь	ези́	ёзъ, зла́, о́, и́, to convey,
	(non) my inmy	*	ызц	carry in a vehicle
	(раз)гры́зть (по)лѣзть	ызу́, ёшь ѣзу, ешь	фзр	гры́зъ, ла, о, н, to gnaw лѣ́зъ, ла, о, н, to climb
	(110)31 531 5	bay, cmb	DoD	11555, 11a, 0, 11, 10 climb
		C. Ve	ERBS IN -	ЧЬ
	Infin.	Pres.	Imperat.	Past
	(по)бере́чь	гý, жёшь <sup>2</sup>	еги	ёгъ, гла́, о́, и́, to keep, preserve
	(с)жечь	гу, жёшь <sup>2</sup>		жёгъ, жгла, о, н, to burn
Future Perfective сожгу́ ctc.				
	(по)сѣчь	ку́, чёшь <sup>2</sup>	Ъки́	ъкъ, ъкла, о, н, to cut, flog
	(по)те́чь	кý, чёшь <sup>2</sup>	еки́	ёкъ, кла́, о́, и́, to flow
D. The perfective verbs <i>neub</i> and ctctb				
I	nfin. Fr	et.	Imperat.	Past
		я́жешь	лягъ, ягт	е лёгъ, ла́, ó, и́, to lie down
сѣсть ся́ду, ещь ся́дь, ьте сѣль, а, о, и, to sit down				
The Imperfectives are ложи́ться and сади́ться.				

<sup>1</sup> Cf. Par. 156.

١

<sup>2</sup> Present tense like that of мочь: гу (ку), жёшь (чёшь) etc., гуть (куть).

# EXAMPLES OF RUSSIAN SCRIPT

# The Written Alphabet

AaAa 55 Jr 6 6 BBBBBB ггГГгг A A D g d E e E e Ж ж M, M, sp 3 з *3 з з* И и И и Ii Ji Йй Шй K K KKKKKK ЛлАЛЛ M MM M M НННИИ 000a II II MM n Pp PPppp

C c C c Т т Ill III m m Z Уу Уу Ффф фр Xx X x x II Il is is 4 4 ° 4 III will in m ЩщШį щ Б 4. 8 3 2 bI bi bl ol b 6 6 5 西当化 12 かち 33732 Ю ю Ю 10 Я я I A. L BBAA

190

Words from Sections VIII -XX viii. 1 Auria, nonazano, /sa/rangarus 2 Anonia, arota, azura, zanpara ix. 1 Icmaralie, Imomo, ofu, I unparma г Европа, налогь, весь снамейна 3 tos Sumo, rogyujui, toro, marsiente 1 Mbl, Mbimb, Mbiramb, doimoboi x г Италия, ива, амотрить, эренэнь з Тисуст, ігонь, іголь, Россія, знаніе + май, сарай, домой, война хі. 1 Ольга, твой, герой, этого, пложо, 2 OSKUMCA, Scenmber, Neve, creme хіі. 1 Украйна, уже, утхать, ублиненіе 2 HOnselos, Hora, croga, renousa, Molino xiii 1 Gramo, caba, oddeur, uryma г ить, говорить, сядь, маленький Gonapia, Synka, Sepye, Seri x iv. Beneyia, bugame, bumi bracmb Slemper, nana none, npouranis Phanyin, granmasin, popula

## RUSSIAN SCRIPT

Octops, Coma, karespa, Carania Salandia, Spyrin unoro, bours x۷ Ruman, kanhama, whace, is seeing Xucmodrops, seysice, xumpsili, Dania, oba, dieta, grage, oggs xvi Illypuis, mars, moors, opame, opums Yaporpate, yapunga, altmiz younoru, Fandor, Baltumi, guarro 30000, zami xvii Cebacmonous, cous origins, co Huns Ilberis, mars mecons Sammara xviii Mykobckiis, geasteda secure, nonoseufle, lexoto, rais, repero, storyris, cypeyse Menteuns, up, mars, seconquera Mockba, Mouns, Mozno, Coursea xix Huronai, nyreda, usine, bonzi: Mannandis, Mana, Asmans Myrue xх Poccis, pars pros, pypa, producca

Sentences in Italics from Lessons 1-XXX1

Barur como - ymuni nanouis i Moi unaluin cours quants intoi Do noii

192

RUSSIAN SCRIPT

Кува ходило лотоло старый мужия iii Cert Skyra & HUROLDA HE LOGUAR by Afor iv Sturiou cours woopun montres no-puccan v Omento HUROIDa He somt as dams ever Sutoa vi Homoraus ONB Hormbuls urban vii Tronbuloe adanie Romopoe mby mario viii butterto - Hoopey's waps CKOLOKO CMOULO Sto Delebismore Kneeds? ix Я никогда не сказаль Этого. xi 23 Has bora or berpit; rucmas borr br cary. xiii expected on a Inalla by body?" xv Koura rerea y croba chang chat Ha carriet xvi Junor release basomand rea doobob rviii xix Smont sucuer no syrung one grumers notary xxi renula nuoula "Uleoll Уто всях труда отпрыла и сные сисе раза вошли xxii Itarums ormahach Marcubkas Horne otres xxvii Мать вли скалали. что они чест выскии. xxviii Prebuono ona comapartace chipter xxxi CMB Millellor AUNCUlle ebou

Ν

## EXERCISE I

(1) stári ded (t). (2) naj atéts. (3) on-stábi stári tjetavék. (4) béti xlep i tjórni xlep. (5) vaj sin-silni matadói máiltjik. (6) tjórni les. (7) on-ptaxói máiltjik. (8) naj sin-gtúpi, a vaj sinúmni máiltjik. (9) stári dom. (10) naj det-negtúpi tjetavék.

#### EXERCISE II

A. (1) vaj det bit stári tjetavék. (2) žimói on rabótat hemnóga; on spat. (3) ja xarajó znat tjórni dom, gde on zit žimói. (4) naj atéts bit he takói stábi tjetavék. (5) létam on xadít vles, gde on mnóga rabótat. (6) jevó sin bit úmni má<sup>i</sup>ltjik. (7) létam on igrát i prigat. (8) na on bit hegtúpi má<sup>i</sup>ltjik. (9) gde on igrát žimói? (10) ti hemnóga rabótat žimói ; ti he xadít vles. (11) état má<sup>i</sup>ltjik jet béti xlep. (12) ti xarajó znat naj dom. (13) ti jevó znat. (14) mói matadói sin znat tvói dom. (15) vot mói sin. (16) vot on. B. vaprósi. (1) xto bit stári tjetavék? (2) jto on détat žimói? (3) kak ja znat dom, gde zit vaj det? (4) xto hé bit takói stábi? (5) kudá on xadít? (6) kagdá on xadít vles? (7) kakóf bit jevó sin? (8) jto on détat? (9) jto jet má<sup>i</sup>ltjik? (10) znat li ja tvói dom?

## EXERCISE III

B. (1) má<sup>i</sup>ltfik dat starikú tot tfórni xlep. (2) tvói dóbri atéts pakazát más tvói sad (t) i agarót. (3) vaf vnuk más skazát éta. (4) on maná na znat. (5) ja tabá na znát. (6) javó úmni sin pakazát tabé mói stári dom. (7) ja pakazát sinu béti dom bráta. (8) éta—ns béti, a tfórni xlep. (9) ja dat jamú vaf sir. (10) on javó jst. (11) jix brat gavařít xarafó parúski, na on gavařít tagdá ótfon ptóxa paángliski. (12) gdz vaf atéts ? (13) on tapé<sup>i</sup>r zdes (s). (14) létam sílni muzik xadát vles; on tam rabótat. (15) tvói

vnuk pakazát mie agarót atsá. (16) naj druk bit tagdá matadói, a on tepéfr stári tjetavék. (17) ja xarajó znat stári dom, gde zit starík. (18) ti nikagdá ne rabótat.

#### EXERCISE IV

A. (1) dĺa má<sup>i</sup>ltýika. (2) bəs statiká. (3) u drúga. (4) u ňəvó. (5) dĺa měňá; u ňix; dĺa ťebá. (6) dĺa kavó? (7) u kavó? (8) bəs tebá. (9) u atsá. (10) dĺa atsá. (11) gde zit dóbri stári druk atsá? (12) ýto jemú dát tvóř atéts? (13) adnázdi on dat týstavéku xaróji béti dom. (14) komú on skazát éta? (15) létam état má<sup>i</sup>ltýik bit týásta u muziká. (16) tagdá vaj úmni druk zit zdes (s). (17) žimói sin tam rabótat bes atsá. (18) ti xarajó znat éta. (19) brat atsá skazát jim éta. (20) kudá má<sup>i</sup>ltýik týásta xadít létam? (21) mói matadói vnuk tejté<sup>i</sup>r u měná. (22) xto bit tagdá u tebá? (23) u měná zdeš (s) dóbri druk. (24) u étava muziká bit týórni xlep. (25) sir né dĺa tebá, a dĺa ňix. (26) on nikagdá ne igrát u měná.

## EXERCISE V

A. (1) bəs gərója. (2) dla stariká. (3) dva stariká. (4) u tsará. (5) bəs aléna. (6) tri gərója. (7) ba<sup>il</sup>jói sarái. (8) xrábri gərói. (9) sílni tsa'r. (10) zdaróvi má<sup>i</sup>ltjik. (11) matadói sin tsará. (12) u təbá bagáti druk.

B. (1) bédní muzík znát gorója. (2) xrábri gorói—dóbri týstavék. (3) žimói stári rabótnik ne týásta xadít fsad (t). (4) létam vaj ba<sup>i</sup>lnói sin zit zdes (s). (5) gde on tepé<sup>i</sup>r ? (6) u atsá téi sína; vot aní ! (7) u muzíká tepé<sup>i</sup>r ótýsn málonki agarót bes sarája; on né bagáti, na ótýsn bédní týstavék. (8) raz (ras) sílni tsa<sup>i</sup>r dat goróju ba<sup>i</sup>ljói dom. (9) u stařiká týstíre vnúka. (10) u nevó ba<sup>i</sup>lnói sin. (11) adín sin tsa<sup>i</sup>tá gavařít xarajó pafrantsúski i parúski, a drugói gavařít tó<sup>i</sup>lka parúski. (12) ja jevó nikagdá ne znat. (13) gde zit ba<sup>i</sup>ljói alé<sup>i</sup>n ?

#### EXERCISE VI

E. (1) týətirə astá. (2) bəs jətýməná. (3) dla astá. (4) astá. (5) bit tagdá ótýən sílni i bagáti tsá<sup>i</sup>r; u nəvó bit ba<sup>i</sup>lýói dvaréts. (6) u tsará bit druk-gərói. (7) tsa<sup>i</sup>r dat gəróju dva dóma i ba<sup>i</sup>lýói les. (8) létam on xatét ganá<sup>i</sup>t aléna. (9) bédni muzik pakazát jəmú tri aléna. (10) málənki sin xatét týásta igrá<sup>i</sup>t, a

jəvó atéts nə xatét. (11) on bīt nəbagátī týətavék; u nəvó máta xléba, na on séjət mnóga jətýməná i afsá. (12) žimói on nə mog rabótat. (13) sílni tsáir xatét kupít jəvó málənki dom. (14) u muziká tóilka dva sína; adín sin mnóga rabótat, drugói nikagdá nitýəvó nə détat, na on jet xaróýi xlep u atsá. (15) atéts nikagdá nə xatét dait jəmú xléba. (16) starífk dat astú mnóga afsá. (17) u nəvó net jətýməná. (18) ja mog tóilka máta panimáit.

#### EXERCISE VII

A. (1) fkúsnajə jábtaka. (2) síni tsvet néba. (3) sínəjə mórə. (4) bétajə néba. (5) spétajə jábtaka. (6) málənkajə zdánijə. (7) xarójī sir i xarójəjə pitjó. (8) vot tvajó spétajə jábtaka. (9) nájə xarójəjə kújanjə. (10) kístajə pitjó. (11) vájə ba<sup>i</sup>jójə sətó. (12) éta zdánjə—ba<sup>i</sup>jói dvaréts, katóri dat gəróju sílni tsa<sup>i</sup>t. (13) málənki sin drúga bit zdaróvi má<sup>i</sup>ltjik; on jet éta ba<sup>i</sup>jójə jábtaka, katórajə ti mne dat. (14) patóm on xatét igrá<sup>i</sup>t. (15) má<sup>i</sup>ltjik igrát i prígat; vot patjəmú ja nikagdá nə mog spa<sup>i</sup>t.

## EXERCISE VIII

B. (1) šíni tsvet móřa i néba mňe ótýpi nrávitsa; ballóř les mňe nrávitsa, na váýp málpikajp šetó mňe ótýpi máta nrávitas. (2) ševódňa adín týpitavék xatét vídet medvéda vlesú. (3) kňas, druk tsatá, gaňát medvéda. (4) éta jemú skazát muzik. (5) patóm ja vídet étava týpitavéka fsadú muziká. (6) ksazaléňju u muziká ballnóř málpiki sin; ševódňa on bit u étava statiká, katóri fsadú rabótat. (7) fkúsnaje kújaňje jemú nrávitas, patamújta on xatét jest. (8) balljóje zdánje, katóraje ti tam vídet,—dvaréts kňáza.
(9) móř druk ne dóma tepé<sup>i</sup>r. (10) ksazaléňju ja jevó atsá nigdé ne mog vídet; on nikagdá né bit dóma. (11) vot on tepé<sup>i</sup>r.

## EXERCISE IX

C. (1) magútji kňaž sministram. (2) fkúsni xlep bos másta. (3) spétajo jáblaka jomú ňonrávitas. (4) jovó dóbri druk zit zálosam. (5) adnó krésta stajáta pérot aknóm, a drugójo stajáta u statú (pérot statóm). (6) état stol no stóit tjotíro rublá. (7) málonki málltjik igrát stavárijtjom fsadú. (8) bédni sin staját satsóm pérot étim aknóm. (9) skem on jot kmóru? (10) u moná bit tagdá kámoni

196

dómik ssarájem. (11) skó<sup>i</sup>lka stóila éta derevánaje krésta? (12) u karalá bil krasívi sod (t).

## EXERCISE X

B. (1) Adín sílni tsáir stróit ballói kámoni dvaréts. (2) pérot étim zdánjom bit ótýon krasívi sad (t). (3) na pri sámam vjézdo fsat staját málonki dorováni dómik. (4) éta noravitas tsará. (5) vétam dómiko zit bédni muzik, a snim jovó atéts. (6) létam tsair týásta gulát sministram fsadú. (7) ras on gavarít staváriýtjom atóm muziké. (8) nakanéts tsair pastát ministra kmuzikú, ýtóbi on kupít stári dómik. (9) kagdá ministr pastát ministra kmuzikú, ýtóbi on kupít stári dómik. (9) kagdá ministr pastát ministra kmuzikú, jtóbi on kupít stári dómik. (9) kagdá ministr pastát ministra kmuzikú, jtóbi on kupít stári dómik. (9) kagdá ministr pastát ministra kmuzikú, jtóbi on kupít stári dómik. (10) staiík tágzo né bit dóma, a tólka ótýon málonki sin muziká bit zastatóm. (11) kújat tjórni xiep smástam, a ksazalénju tot mállýik no mog skazált ministru, gde tagdá bit atéts. (12) jto détať ? nolzá kupít dómika.

## EXERCISE XI

B. uməná; bəskavó? atjóm? zannóju; utəbá; bəsnəvó; skæm? anóm; ftəbé; stabóju; natjóm? akóm on gavarít? atjóm? kamú on éta gavarít? sétim; kétamu; kakavó bíta éta zdánjo? poró, katórajə ləzáta tom; málənki dom, katórī staját pri vjézdə; kakóf bit jəvó sin? tī pajót knəmú; tjæm? ksazalénju; ja nikagdá nə skazát étava.

#### EXERCISE XIII

A. (1) u sabáki kusók mása. (2) bélaje tápa kólki. (3) stáraje nóma dévatlki. (4) u nevő bagátaje bábulka. (5) dóbraje rúskaje dáma sdévatlkai-fsadú. (6) zatlém tlórnaje kólka nastalé? (7) aná tejéli na patú. (8) ja vídet dámu ssabákai vlesú. (9) málenki rúski málitlik igrát snáneju namastú. (10) u kólki krašívaje léja. (11) sevődia majá matadája sestrá natugú. (12) lto on sevődia dat sabáke? (13) ja ne gavarit a sabáke. (14) xaróli xlep bes másta i mása nemávitsa stuzánke. (15) gráznaje vadá viedté; tlístaje vadá fsadú.

## EXERCISE XV

A. (1) Aná přijlá na jármarku. (2) sabáka stařiká lozáta na sóntšo.
 (3) tjórnajo kójka upáta vřokú (vřéku). (4) ja jojó nigdé no vídot, na état má<sup>i</sup>ltjik jojó spas. (5) aná smatřéta na sámku vlosú. (6) on nos

vədró svadóju. (7) nəuzéli and spatá na étam méstə? (8) vétam stútsajə and jəjó nə magtá vídət. (9) matadája padrúga zénstsini prastá sad (t) i vastá vles. (10) nəlzá skazáit, gde and təpéir. (11) nəuzéli and upáta vvódu? (12) vot and!

## EXERCISE XVI

A. (1) ftýərá dóbri starík sidét zdes na étam stúla, katóri jevó vnuk přinós na béřek. (2) sóntse jejtýó sijáta. (3) on vídet, kak tam lezáta séraje kójka. (4) patóm and státa pit matakó katóraje jéi přinestá anglískaje dévatýka. (5) kak ras vajtá fsat rizeje sabáka. (6) přijtá kkójke, xatéta atagnáit jejó. (7) ne magtá. (8) bitá dráka mézdu sabákai i kójkai. (9) starík smatrét na dráku. (10) véta vřéma stáraje bába jta míma. (11) vídeta i aná to, jto stutjítas. (12) nestá kak ras ba<sup>il</sup>jóje vedró svadói i státa lit vadói na kójku i sabáku. (13) sabáka ubezáta. (14) kójka legtá i snóva státa spait na sóntse.

## EXERCISE XVIII

A. (1) ftýərá útram ja fstřétila padrúgu, katóraje máz rasskazála fiso to, jto délalas, kagdá aná zilá vdeřévne. (2) bilá vesnői jejtjó xatódnaje pagóda, na trudalubívi krestjánin paxál mókraje póle saxóju, i séjal jetjmé<sup>i</sup>n i avós. (3) dňom on rabótal natugú íli fisadú; vétjeram on adixál, a nótjju on spal. (4) vesnői majá padrúga tóze xadíta fjkólu. (5) vétjeram aná přigatavlála urók. (6) létam bilá abiknavéna xarójeje, tóplaje, inagdá zárkaje pagóda, i jetjmé<sup>i</sup>n uzé virastál. (7) ósenju bilá zátva. (8) krestjánin zal zíta sorpóm íli kasóju. (9) zimói bilá patjít fisegdá durnája pagóda i sílni marós. (10) zimói nelzá rabótat na dvaré.

## EXERCISE XIX

A. (1) móĭ stárſī sīn uzé kóntſit ſkótu. (2) na kagdá ja bīt vdetévne, jevó mtátſī brat paseſtſát jeſtſó máleňkaje utſíliſtſe, katóraje stajáta bliz vakzáta. (3) ras on přiſót damóĭ is ſkótī. (4) jevó fstřétit jevó máleňki taváťiſtſ. (5) sprasít jevó, "ſto tī sevódňa útram détat fſkóle?" (6) přiléznī utſeňík pakazát jemú kňígu i tetráti, rasskazát fso to, ſto détatas abīknavéna, i skazút, ſto bes kňígi i tetrádi ňelzá utſítsa. (7) króme kňígi bīt u ňevó tſórnī karandáſ. (8) inagdá stárſī utſeňík pisát perám vmésta karandaſú. (9) króme tavó on pisát na bumágo. (10) ktásnajo daská stajáta vózlo káťodri utýliola i pérot aknóm. (11) trudalubívi utýliol týásta pisát métam na daské. (12) lonívi utýoník fsogdá sidét na skaméiko blis káťodri. (13) suróvi stári utýliol dat urók sovódňa útram. (14) on mnóga sprájivat, na, ksazalénju, tólka adin vňimátolni utýoník xatét atvotýált. (15) état málltýk patutýlt at utýliola paxvatú.

## EXERCISE XXI

A. (1) přikástjik přijář gdrágu. (2) karóva i aftsá u zénjítjini. (3) vnútjka guláta sbábujkai. (4) ja jemú det knigu šestri. (5) utjítel gavařít atetrádi. (6) svéttaje úlitsa más ótjeň nrávitas. (7) mókraje travá natugú. (8) suxája žemlá jemú ňenrávitas. (9) on stróit dereváni dom péret dvartsóm. (10) sestrá atsá bitá tam. (11) mói tavářijtj kupít ba<sup>i</sup>jjói zamók sklutjóm. (12) ti přijót katsú. (13) stáraje stuzánka přiňestá máleňkaje vedró svadói. (14) utjátelňitsa sidéta namastú. (15) on tudá pajót bes má<sup>i</sup>ltjika. (16) tjórnaje tójať játa travú. (17) bétaje sabáka stajáta péret tójadju. (18) kňaš vídet járki svét fkómnate. (19) u stařiká svétti dómik, máleňki set, ba<sup>i</sup>ljói tuk, béti asót, tjórnaje aftsá. (20) utjeňítsa prajtá jkótu.

## EXERCISE XXII

A. (1) zénítíma paítá paúlités sdótforju. (2) nakanéte and priftá gdvéři. (3) stárajo mať atkrita samá dve<sup>i</sup>ř i vaítá. (4) snatjáta aná praítá kúxnu i dve kómnati. (5) patóm bédnajo zénítíma padnatás palésnités i uznáta dve<sup>i</sup>ř. (6) dva góda tamú nazát aná ótfon araítá záná dve<sup>i</sup>ř. (7) na zénítíma nozát aná ótfon araítá samá atkrit.
(8) paétamu aná datá dótfori klútí at kómnati. (9) dotí bos trudá atkrita i ané joítí ras vaítí.

## EXERCISE XXVII

A. (1) vadnóm góradə bitá jármarka. (2) véta vřéma bitá xaléra.
(3) mnóga naródu úmərta atétai uzúsnai balézňi. (4) přijéxat naétu jármarku adín kupéts izdrugóva górada szənói i matadói dót/kai.
(5) dévat/kə bita tölka t/ətírə góda. (6) vdruk atéts i mait zabaléli.
(7) sət/ás atvəzlí vbailnítsu bailnóva atsú sbédnai mátorju. (8) znát/it, astátas málənkajə dévat/ka adná. (9) ptákata, bédnajə, ptákata.

## EXERCISE XXVIII

A. (1) nakanéts aná zadúmata iskó<sup>i</sup>t atsá i ma<sup>i</sup>t. (2) pajtá aná pagóradu. (3) bradíta tsétü de<sup>i</sup>n i tó<sup>i</sup>lka kvétjeru dajtá aná da ba<sup>i</sup>ljóĭ ba<sup>i</sup>lnítsï. (4) no vba<sup>i</sup>lnítsu jejó ne puskáli. (5) jéxat míma dévatjki bagátï kupéts. (6) aná rasskazáta jemú pro svajó góre. (7) dóbrï tjetavék vajót vba<sup>i</sup>lnítsu uzná<sup>i</sup>t pro atsá i ma<sup>i</sup>t nestjás(t)naĭ dévatjki. (8) tam jemú skazáli, jto aní uzé úmerli. (9) i řejít dóbrï kupéts vža<sup>i</sup>t širótku kšebé. (10) tak i sdétat. (11) státa zït nestjás(t)naje širatá ftjuzóĭ šemjé kak fsvajéĭ.

#### EXERCISE XXIX

A. (1) vī stróili svói dom. (2) xʌrʌʃó, ʃto ja xʌtét kupít vaʃ dom.
(3) on rʌbótʌł fsvʌjóm sʌdú. (4) nəuʒéli on sudá přijéxʌł istʌvó górʌdʌ? (5) mï étʌ pʌtutʃili ʌt svʌjəvó ʌtsá. (6) váʃʌ kʌróvʌ brʌdítʌ ves de'n pʌ étʌmu túgu. (7) tʃéi grómki gótʌs mï tak tʃástʌ stíʃʌli? (8) fse éti díkijə ʒïvótnïjə jéli tó'lkʌ ʌdnú ʌftsú. (9) núʒnʌ bitʌ jix drużjám skʌzá't fso to, ʃto mï uʒé tʃətîrə gódʌ ználi. (10) vʌzmóʒnʌ li bitʌ vídət to, ʃto vï détʌli fsvʌjéi kómnʌtə? (11) fsɛ náʃï drużjá bíli tʌgdá zdeś (s). (12) tʃjəmú sinu vï dáli stáruju svʌjú kňígu? (13) tʃjéi dótʃəri vï rʌsskʌzáli fso to, ʃto stutʃítʌs? (14) nəuʒéli étʌ právdʌ? (15) pʌstʃástju ja nə znat étʌvʌ górʌdʌ.

## EXERCISE XXXI

A. (1) adná matadájə zénýtýina, katórajə sidéta adnázdi rádam ssvajéi stárai tótkai, i maýiná<sup>i</sup>lna igráta pá<sup>i</sup>ltsanii jejó rukí, zamétita zatatóje ka<sup>i</sup>ltsó na pá<sup>i</sup>ltse tótki. (2) aná sprasíta, "tótka, ýto éta za ka<sup>i</sup>ltsó ?" (3) stáraje dáma pakrasnéta, patóm pablednéta, i skazáta nakanéts drazújtýim gótasam, "mňe heprijátna ab étam gavarit."
(4) atýevídna aná starátas skrit at plemánitsi svaí týúfstva.

## EXERCISE XXXII

A. (1) právda, ja έtava no znat. (2) rána íli pózna ja fso búdu zna<sup>i</sup>t. (3) tagdá on gavaiít parúski, na ótjoň médlona. (4) skóra on búdot gavaiít jásna i právilna. (5) on přijót pózna, a aná přijtá garázda pózo. (6) ňixtó étava ňikagdá no búdot paňimáit. (7) mózot-bít, on moňá ňikagdá no paňimát. (8) aná tóilka ótjoň ňomnóga gavaiíta paňométski i paňaljánski. (9) přezdo aní tóilka

nomnóga tjitáli, na fjkólo jim núzna búdot garázda bó<sup>i</sup>ljo tjitáit. (10) xarajó, jto ané tó<sup>i</sup>lka pózo búdut atvotjáit.

## EXERCISE XXXIV

A. (1) přézdə málaňkaja utjaňítsa tá<sup>i</sup>lka ňamnöga utjítas, a vbúdujtjam gadú anú garázda bá<sup>i</sup>lja búdat utjítsa. (2) patjamú aná búdat skrivá<sup>i</sup>t at maňú svaí mňéňja? (3) ňalžú zna<sup>i</sup>t, jto záftra búdat. (4) vvaskřašéňja aňí búdut (j)im pisá<sup>i</sup>t. (5) jésli vi fsagdú dňom i nótjju búdata rabótat, vi búdata balé<sup>i</sup>t. (6) právda, ja ňikagdú ab étam ňa dúmat. (7) ňixtó ňikagdó ňa búdat puská<sup>i</sup>t takóva málaňkava má<sup>i</sup>ltjika vnáju kómnatu. (8) vbúdujtjam gadú éti bagátija inastrántsi búdut stróit gramádni nóvi dvařéts na bařagú řakí. (9) da razdastvá mi búdam utjítsa dóma. (10) na drugói de<sup>i</sup>n mi gavaříli svájim drúgam. (11) vasnói přilézni křastjáňin búdat séjat jatjmé<sup>i</sup>ň i avós, a ósaňju roj i pjaňítsu. (12) patjamú anglitjáňa ňikagdú ňa xatéli gavařít sňími? (13) fkatóram tjasú vi přijlí damói? (14) on přijót na drugói de<sup>i</sup>ň. (15) aňí vófša ňa

#### EXERCISE XXXV

A. (1) ja vnimátelna stúfaju féo to, fto vi tfitújete. (2) ani féeddá détajut, kak zetájut. (3) patfemú vi pradatzájete gavarit ab étam? (4) fto num sdétat? anií skrivájut at nus féo to, fto anií dúmajut. (5) aná xarafó uméjet přigatavlá<sup>i</sup>t éta mása. (6) féeddá li rána zazigájut támpu? (7) ja dúmaju, fto aná ne stúfajet. (8) vrasíi i výermánii rof upatřeblájut fjíftfu. (9) kak vi patagájete? (10) neuzéli on uzé utfit urók? (11) ne patagájet li on, fto jejó utfenítsi póze búdut utfítsa? (12) xarafó, fto mi ráinfe ne přiflí sudá. (13) kak vi pazivájete?

## EXERCISE XXXVI

D. (1) Sto détajət təpélir vaş matadói sin ? (2) práva nə znáju, na ju patagáju, Sto on təpélir vinéstə sasvaím brátam vutşíliştşə. (3) on, mózət-bit, safsénni druğínii málənkinii málitşikanni igrájət na utşílişnam dvaré fsatdáti, tak kak, vnastajáştşəjə vrénna, fsáki tşətavék zanimájətsa vainóju, dázə málənkijə dúmajut tólka a néi. (4) kázdi vétşər, kagdá zazigájut támpu, (j)ix mtátşi sin fsəgdá ródam sstárşinii sóstranin u statá. (5) trógajət, atkrivájət, zakrivájət

knígi i tətrádi. (6) fso vnimátəlna stúfajət to, sto tsitájut jəvő brátja i sóstri. (7) abiknavéna paslédnəjə da úzina prigatavlájut uróki i rəsajut zadátsi, a on fsəgdá zətájət uznák, sto détajətsa. (8) bəsprəstána sprásivajət, na sóstri ótsən tsásta nə atvətsájut na jəvó vaprósi.

#### EXERCISE XXXVII

A. (1) dévuski šidát u akná. (2) aná šidéta na stúle u akná; aná šéta na stut. (3) dňom lvï i fše drugíje zvéri spat vlesú. (4) lisá staít za štim dérevam. (5) áistï i zuravlí staját na mastú. (6) mï vófše ňe paňimájem, patsemú jejó krašívije kartínï visát na stenáx štai tómnai kómnati. (7) mï patagájem, sto te svíňji prinadlezát bédnamu krestjáňinu; jemú ze prinadlezít šta bétaje tósat. (8) éti frantsúskije satdáti tazátsa nážem (na žémlu); aňí lezát na mókrai žemlé.

## EXERCISE XXXVIII

A. (1) víditə li vi état gramádni dom? (2) palagáju, sto on prinadləzit étamu paméstsiku. (3) te kartíni jim vótsə nənrávətsa.
(4) mie ótsən nrávitsa éta málənkajə sabáka. (5) svínji staját pad dúbam. (6) skóilka stóit ta usáidba? (7) nə stóit dúmat ab étam.
(8) mie póminitsa, sto vási družjá nikagdá né bili u məná. (9) on məná pakórna blagadarít, na práva nə stóit. (10) vot patsəmú mői dáda nóvi sarái stróit. (11) nəlžá stístat fstatóvai jəvó drazástsəva gótasa. (12) ja nikagdá nə slísat, sto aná jəvó nastá natugú. (13) trinátsat máiltsikaf na utsílisnam dvaré.

## EXERCISE XXXIX

A. (1) Abïknavána mi xódim damói vdévət tjasóf. (2) sinavjá kuptsá bródət pagóradu. (3) átat dərəváni sarái stúzit ba<sup>i</sup>lnómu staříkú ziljóm. (4) on kúrit gráznuju trúpku; sigári i papirósi stójət slíjkam mnóga. (5) mi lúbim vájix družéi za jix dabratú i pravdívast. (6) blagadarú vas za krasívuju knígu, katóruju vi mne dáli. (7) nolžá uznáit, jto on dérzit rukóju (vruké). (8) éta prézde stuzita dvartsóm. (9) priléznije utjenikí útjat uróki naizúst. (10) stárasta i devenősta jest krestján staját péret dómam tjinóvnika.

## EXERCISE XL

A. (1) mnózostva tupíx nazéř. (2) déska<sup>i</sup>lka přijótnix řek. (3) mnóga ba<sup>i</sup>ljix usúdop. (4) stó<sup>i</sup>lka kapéjok. (5) na suxóř žomlé.

(6) skó<sup>i</sup>lka dénək? (7) bö<sup>i</sup>lşəjə tşast bédnïx zénştşin. (8) ménəjə lvof i bö<sup>i</sup>ləjə valköf. (9) mnögatşislənïjə sémji rúskix krəstján.
(10) fprijátnai akrésnasti nájïx dərəvé<sup>i</sup>n. (11) slíşkam mnöga mökrai travi. (12) nəmnöga bagátix paméştşikaf. (13) mnözəstva östrïx sábəl. (14) néska<sup>i</sup>lka damáşnix zövötnïx. (15) mátajə tşistö krasívïx kömnat. (16) stö<sup>i</sup>lka kartín izabrazájuştşix muştşin i má<sup>i</sup>ltşikaf. (17) slíşkam mnöga vəlikalépnïx damöf. (18) u paméştşika ötşən mnöga göntşix sabák. (19) stö<sup>i</sup>lka lisits. (20) o magútşəm knázə i datşəráx skrönnava krəstjánina. (21) prastijə zilja skrómnïx ludéi. (22) stö<sup>i</sup>lka dénək i tak máta xléba. (23) majá mílajə nana i jəjö mnögatşislənïjə družjá. (24) kázdamu má<sup>i</sup>ltşiku dáli östrï noş. (25) vösəmdəsət pa<sup>i</sup>t tşətavék. (26) sem tisətş şətsöt tiritsat dərəvé<sup>i</sup>n.

## Exercise XLI

C. (1) vnájoĭ Akřésnasti jest adín bagátī i magátji paméftjik. (2) on iméjot mnózostva góntjix sabák i tajadéi fsvaéi usáldbo. (3) jomú přinadlozit i état gramádni, volikalépni dom, katóri staít při sámam vézdo vles. (4) kagdá sidát u moná fspálho, íli staját u akná fpořédnoi, mózna vídot état dvařéts vózlo tšérkvi. (5) skólka stóit takójo ziljó? (6) práva, ja no znáju. (7) va fsákam stútjajo fso éta mie no intořésna, íba (tak kak) ja přotpatjitáju skrómnix ludéi i prastijo véjtji. (8) na přimér, ja tjásta xazú smatřél na éti mílijo dómiki, katórijo vi vídito zátugam. (9) mie nrávotsa éti krašívijo kartíni, katórijo vi sídát na stonáx vájoi kvartíri. (10) hodávna lubézni druk mói pastát majéi šostřé adnú is svaíx kúfk sřisúnkami izabrazájujtjini stárijo rúskojo básni i skáski, katórijo kázdamu is nas sdétstva znakómi. (11) velt i vi sámi no zabíli "votk i áist," "lisá i zuráť," "lef i mij," "svinjá pad dúbam," "dve sabáki."

## EXERCISE XLII

A. (1) na dvařé idót dojt. (2) no znájoto li vi, prodút li topé<sup>i</sup>r éti starúxi ? (3) safsém net ; ané tkut. (4) mi patagájom, što nométskijo satdáti porošlí tšéros řéku (řoků). (5) aná uzé tšotířo góda zivót vétam solé, na jix dořévna naxóditsa vdrugóm ujézdo. (6) état máiltšik idót fškótu, vot patšomú on nosot knígi i totrádi. (7) sovódna on přildót damói is škóti ftři tšasá, na abiknavéna tóilka fpait tšasóf přixódit. (8) atšovó váši družjá fisogdá smojútsa? (9) mi datzni rabótat jozodnévna da úzina. (10) gatódnijo sabáki lozát fsnogú. (11) tšji ízbi staját za řokář? (12) nouzéli éti mnógatšianje

sémji fše zīvút vadnóm dərəvánam dómikə? (13) nəlżá uzná<sup>i</sup>t, daīdót li aná da étava mésta. (14) dóbrījə lúdi umirájut, na dəfá jix zīvút.

## EXERCISE XLIII

A. (1) fkatóram týasú vï þjótð jezednévna týái ? (2) sevódna nelžá vílti ízdamu, patamújta nexarójeje pagóda. (3) nája mítaje, trudalubívaje ma<sup>i</sup>t jjot plátje dla mlátjix datjeréi i rubójki dla sinavéi. (4) ftjerá dojt lit rutjámi ; nesmatrá na éta, stáraje stuzánka palivájet mókri uzé sad (t). (5) davním-davnó fse krestjáne vétai derévne péli pésni, na uzé davnó bó<sup>i</sup>lje zdes (s) ne pajút. (6) třétjeva dňa on vit verófki. (7) ne vídite li vi, kak ptítjki vjut ghózda ? (8) ja xatét uzná<sup>i</sup>t, patjemú vaj sin bjot svajú sabáku. (9) aná tak tíxa pajót, jto ja jedvá stíju. (10) pérvi de<sup>i</sup>n nedéli—vaskresénje, a ftarói panedé<sup>i</sup>lnik. (11) tepé<sup>i</sup>r sedmája nedéla góda. (12) xarajó, jto tepé<sup>i</sup>r tóptaje pagóda; přijátna rabótat na dvaré. (13) vesnóju paséjali, a ósenju znut. (14) má<sup>i</sup>ltjiki zmútsa atxótadu. (15) fsirótstve zit—slózi lit.

## EXERCISE XLIV

A. (1) rázvə on nikagdá nə pişət? (2) ja pakórna biagadaiú dóbruju starúxu, katórajə mne vázət tşutkí, na aná fio gavarít: nə stóit.
(3) ksazalénju on vnastajáştşəjə viéma jédət za graniftsu; nəlżá sprasít jəvó. (4) kstjástju on uzé dótga zīvót za graniftsəju. (5) rázvə vi nə znájətə, patşəmú dévatşka piátşət? (6) mne skazáli, şto dótşka tex bédnīx ludéi uzé dótga íştşət ma't, na nə mözət naiti jəjó. (7) şto ani íştşut svajəvó atsá? (8) ja nə zətáju étava skazálit, da i tó'lka.
(9) mne pómnitsa, şto mai söstri piildút sudá səvódna. (10) şto ané fiso xódət vzat i fipərót? (11) néskailka ludéi patagájut, şto uzé atvəzlí váşəva drúga fturmú. (12) ja nə magú vam pakazálit náşïx nóvix kartín.

## EXERCISE XLVI

C. (1) mi zivóm vmáloňkai izbé vujézdo fsem izvés(t)nai dalókai gubérnii. (2) žimói ótfoň tfásta u nas bivájot durnája pagóda.
(3) paétamu mi inagdá no mózom gulá<sup>it</sup> vlosú (pólosu). (4) sovódňa snek idót. (5) nadvaré sordítajo moté<sup>il</sup> i nolzá viiti izdamu. (6) majá mtátfojo sostrá plátfot i xótfot zna<sup>it</sup>, fto nam détat i atfóm gavarít. (7) adnákaf fso éta ótfoň prósta. (8) tak kak uzé rána

tomnéjət, zazïgájut támpu ftři týasú. (9) na přézde fsevó mĩ zataplájem petý; petý tópet (dravámi). (10) málenkije déti, katórije ne datzní rabótat, uzé séli na stúlja vózle nejó. (11) aní týitájut knígi, igrájut druk zdrúgam, íli rasskázïvajut druk drúgu skáski i básúi. (12) vizbé přijátna i ujútna. (13) zénýtjinï přigatavlájut kújanje. (14) vétforam mï pjom tjájku tjáju róvna fsem tjasóf; patóm mői mlátji brat tazítsa spati. (15) na vzróstim pósle úzina jejtjó dótga núzna rabótat. (16) mátujka i bábujka tkut, předút, vázut tjutkí, jjut ptátje. (17) a bátujka jot sapagí iskózï, íli patýinájet pasúdu i mébel.

## EXERCISE XLVIII

A. (1) ffes(t)nátsatam véke né bita vytadénii rasíi ni adnavó móra, na təpé'r ana vladéjət néska'lkimi marami. (2) fprostam gadu tsárstvavat gasudáir imperátar nikatái ftarói; on stat (sdétatsa) imporátaram póslo smérti pakóinava aloksándra tiétjova. Inastajástsojo vřéma uzé ne tsárstvujet; tepé<sup>i</sup>ř net imperátara. (3) rúskaje tsárstva, katóraje tánetsa svastóka na zápat na trinútsat tisetí vorst, a ssévera na juk na tsətirə tisətsi vorst, rúskəjə stsitajut samim bailsim gasudárstvam na svéte. (4) tjetvórti de'n nedéli nazivájetsa sredóju, A Jestoi de'n-pátnitsa. (5) Jest rabótfix dnéi lúdi rabótajut tséti de'n, A vyaskresenje i vdrugije proznitinije dni fse adixojut at rabot i xódət ftsérkaf. (6) vgadú dvənátsat mésətsəf, a dvənátsati mésəts zavút dekabróm. (7) rekú, katóraje ne daxódit da móra íli da ózera, A vp. dájet vdrugúju řekú (řéku), n. zïvájetsa přitókam. (8) verblút --- otion paléznaje zivotnaje, tak kak mózet praití, tjéres pustinu, At sta vasmídeseti da dvúxsat vorst vnedelu. (9) on radítsa ftisetía vasemsót dyátsat ftaróm gadú, a skantsátsa (úmer) trítsat pérvava mája tisetla vasemsót devenósta pátava góda.

## EXERCISE XLIX

A. (1) ded (t) bit star i stap,  $\Lambda$  vnuk mtat i gtup. (2) stat naj sad (t) got. (3) stat naj pos ptox. (4) má<sup>i</sup>ltjik bit rad (t). (5) gip bit gnit. (6) on bit truslíf. (7) stat bik zot. (8) on pósla tavó na dótga bit ziv (zif).

B. igrá bitá ptaxá. (2) sabáka bitá umná. (3) izbá bitá ňematá. (4) bába bitá ráda. (5) vadá bitá tjistá. (6) státa tótka potná vadí. (7) lisá jéta srázu padvé míji, i státa zirná. (8) jejó zizn trudná. (9) krepká kok kost.

C. na vadé bîta gtótka. (2) na dvaré bîta tjísta. (3) jəmú stóta smojnó. (4) mie laxkó éta détat. (5) bîtá grazá i grom. máiltjik bit trus. on vles fjkap. tam bîta jəmú təmnó i dújna. jəmú né bîta stíjna, prajtá li grazá. (6) gnazdó uzé bîta pústa. (7) fso, jto náda. (8) dvéri bîli tésni. (9) tápki guséi bîli vidni. (10) máiltjiki stáli mókri. (11) zátka bîta.

## Exercise L

A. (1) t\ornaja krésta, na katoram vi sidíta, garázda krasívaja étava stúła. (2) béti xlep no fsogdá darózo tjórnava. (3) sámajo bailjójo zdánje vnájem górade-sámaje stáraje tšérkaf, na paslédneje ménje tói tśérkvi, katóruju vi vídeli naprótif svajéi kvartíri fstalítse. (4) umnéijeje utjenítsa nikagdá ne xótjet atvetjáit, kagdá jejó sprájivajet dobraje utsítelnitsa. Aná umná, na jejó stársi brat prilézen i garázda vnimátelneje jejó. (5) rúki ránenix beléje tjem kraváti, na katórix nií ləzát. (6) nəuzéli nə fse znájut, sto xaléra bójləjə uzásnajə balézn tsem skartatína? (7) sámajə tómnajə kómnata mne nrávitsa bóil(ə fsəvó. (8) mie gavaiát, sto sámajə stárajə zénstsina vázət sámije tútíje tíutkí i pertíátki. (9) patíemú bagatéije paméítíki fsagdá zatájut imé<sup>i</sup>t jastsó bó<sup>i</sup>lsa zamlí? (10) mie kázatsa, sto nastajástseje dom tsará velikalépieje étava gramádnava dvartsá, katóri tepéli strójet. (11) xarasó, sto sámije trudalubívije krestjáne inagdá zarabátivajut bó<sup>i</sup>líð. (12) ani patutsájut sámuju bó<sup>i</sup>líuju příbil. (13) právda svətléje sóntsa. (14) znánje--tút(eje bagáts(t)va. (15) právda daróze zółata. (16) vor varújet ne dla príbili, a dla svajéľ díbali.

## Lesson LI

## Illustrative Passages

## 1

tótka bitá gatóva, ja set váejó zdvumá greptsámi. Aní atsálili i udárili výosta.

néba bita jásna. tuná sijáta. pagóda bitá tíxaje. vótga nestás róvna i spakóina. tótka ska<sup>i</sup>lžíta pa pavérxnasti tómnix votn. prastó ókata patutsása. mi dastígli sredíni rekí. vdruk greptsi nátsali spetá<sup>i</sup>tsa mézdu sabóju.

-fto takója? sprasít ja.

--- no znájom.

graptsi smatréli vadnú stóranu. gtazá maí prináti tóza napra-

vlánja, i ja uvídat fsúmraka (tó-ta, naznakómi prodmát přit vniz pa vótýa, priblizátsa, tuná zastá za óblaka, přivústýi příznak sdátatsa jastsó tamnéja, on bit ot maná uzá blíska, a ja fso jastsó na mog javó razlitsít.

vdruk tuná víšta izá óbtaka, i azaříta ziélistše uzásnaje, knom nafstřétšu přítá víšelitsa, utverzdónaje na přatú, tři téta višéli na peřektádine, baléznenaje lubapítstva avtadéta mnóju, ja zaxatét vzglenú<sup>i</sup>t na lítsa víšelnikaf.

" kapitánskajə dót/ka," pú/kin.

2

ba<sup>i</sup>ljájə, vīsókajə, tómnajə zúta asvəjtjónajə tö<sup>i</sup>lka tjətīrmá fii patjú svətjámi, skatórīmi daktará padxadili asmátrivat ránənīx, bītá bukvá<sup>i</sup>lna patná. nasíljtjíki bəsprəstána vnasíli ránənīx, sktádīvali jix adín pódlə drugóva ná pat, na katóram uzé bila tak tésna, jto nəstjás(t)nījə tatkális i móknuli fkróvi druk drúga, i jli za nóvīmi. šóstrī, sa spakóīnīmi lítsami i zvīrazénjəm déjatəlnava praktítjəskava utjástja, to tam, to sam məlkáli mézdu ránənīmi. daktará, zzasutjónimi rukavámi, asmátrivali, ajtjúpīvali i zandíravali ránï, nəsmatrá na uzásnījə stónī stradá<sup>i</sup>ltsəf. adín iz daktaróf sidét ókata dvéri za stólikom, i ftu minútu, kak fkómnatu vajót afitsér, zapísīvat uzé pətsót třítsat dva.

"śəvastópa<sup>i</sup>lskije rasskázï," tałstóĭ.

## 3

—pastúje (aĭ), slepóĭ ! skazát on :—beřeğí to mésta . . . znájej ? tam bagátīje tavárī . . . skazî xažáinu, jto ja jemú bó<sup>i</sup>lje ne stugá. detá pajlí xúda, on mená bó<sup>i</sup>lje ne uvídit : tepélr apásna; pajédu iskált rabótī vdrugóm méste; tam ja búdu zdalt udóbnava stútjaja. da skazî, jéslib on patútje ptatít za trudî, tak i ja bi jevó ne pakínut. aná pajédet samnóju; ješ nelžá zdeš astaváltsa.

—a ja! skazát slopóĭ zátabnim gótasam.

on Štó-ta patazit slopómu vrúku, přimótviť: "na, kupí šobé přúnikať." "tó<sup>i</sup>lka?" skazát slopóř. "nu, vot tobé joštšó," i upáťšajo manéta zazvonéta, udařás o kámon. slopóř jojó no pódňat. aní šéli vtótku; vétor dut ot béřoga; aní bistra panoslís. dótga při svéto mésotsa molkát béti párus mézdu votn; slopóř fso šidét na bořogú i plákat, i dótga dótga.

"ġəróĭ náfəva viéməni," İérmantaf. tóma tjúfs(t)vavat səbá akantjátəlna sbítīm spažítšii: kórpus, jəjtjó tak nədávna kazáfjīsa détam rəjónïm, atadvínutsa kudáta daləkó-daləkó.

-tī kagdá, tóma, pajédə (\* sprašíta natá (a, ftará ja šəstrá, stará jas skrīt vatnaváf (ījə jəjó t (úfs(t)va pad (t) máskai prastóva lubapíts(t)va.

tóma zaglanút vgtazá səstri.

--nikudá ja nə pajédu, atvétit on, vzdaxnúf, i fstav (f), naprávitsa fkabinét.

tam on sagát fsaznánje přinešánai jim zértvi. mázet-bit, dla zértvi jevá vid bit slískam spakájen, na tem ne méneje éta ne mesáta jemú stsitá<sup>i</sup>t sebá zértvai, i jemú kazátas sto on srázu tátsna víras na néska<sup>i</sup>lka let. on log na diván, zatazit zá gatavu rúki i zadúmatsa a tom, sto zizň ne takája prastája i lóxkaje vests, kakói aná kázetsa pa narúznamu vídu.

tak i usnúť, dúmaja fiso atómze.

"səméinajə xrónika," gárin.

## EXERCISE LII

B. (1) přinosíto mňe, pazát(uĭ)sta, étu nóvuju rúskuju kňígu!
(2) přinašíto mňe jozodňévna totrádi stárýïx utýoňikóf! (3) tazítos spařt kázdi vétýor fšem týasóf! (4) pará ití spařt! razdéňitos, mářltýiki, i lákto spařt! (5) příň médlona i právilna! (6) napijíto to, ýto ja vam skazú! (7) smatříto! (8) pasmatříto to, ýto aní détajut topěř!
(9) ňo gavaříto jél atóm, što ja vam tóřlka što rasskazát! (10) ňo détažto étava! (11) ňo atvotýati na état vaprós! (12) puskál aná sdétajot, kak aná zotájot! (13) pušt aní paľdút topéř fykótu!
(14) fšogdá štújoto to, što gavařít utýtol! (15) utýtol gavařít topéř; pastújote jovó!

#### EXERCISE LIII

#### bïİ

vadnói dərévnə zīta starújka savnútjkai. Ané bili ótjən bédni, i jest jim bita nétjova. prijto svéttajə vaskrəsénjə. narót radujətsa. fse kupili səbé razgavéltsa, tölka starújkə savnútjkai nétjom razgavéltsa. paptakali ané i stáli bóga prasit, jtob on jim pamóg. i fspómnita starújka, jto fstarinú, vaviéna frantsúsa, muziki délnöji vzémlu zariváli. starúxa i gavarít vnútjkə: "vazini (ti), vnútjka, tapátu i idí na stárajə sətő, pamalís bógu, da parói vzəmlé: mózət bit, bog nam i pajlót (to-nibúlit,"

Α.

## EXERCISE LIV

A. vnúťýka i dúmajet: "kok mózna kłod (t) naĭtí? nu do sdétaju, kok bóbuýka velít." vzató tapótu i pajtá. vírita aná jámu, i dúmajet: "búdet, paĭdú damóĭ." xatéta padňáit tapótu, stíjīt—óba jtó-ta tapóta stúknuta. aná nagnútas, vídit—kubíjka bailjája. patřestá jejó, jtó-ta zvenít. aná brósita tapótu, pabezáta xbábujke, kitíjít: "bábujka, ktot najtá!" atkrili kubíjku, vhéi patnó šeřébřenïx maiét. i bábujka savnútjkai kupíli sebé kprózniku, tjem rasgavéitsa, i karóvu kupíli, i btagadaříli bóga, jto on ustíjat jix malítvu.

#### EXERCISE LV

## lənívï slugá

Α.

Α.

lenívï at piródī, on asta<sup>i</sup>lnóje viéma nitfevő ne détat. on ne davát sebé trudá ni pastávit samavára, ni padmestí patóf. on, fli dřemát fpřixózeř, fli uxadít battá<sup>i</sup>t fkúxnu; ne to, tak pa tsétīm tfasám staját u varót i pasmátřivat na fše stóranī. on vartfát fsáki ras, kak gótas bářina zastavlát jevő pakidá<sup>i</sup>t lezánku. nesmatřá na fše éta, on bit davó<sup>i</sup>lna máxkava i dóbrava sértsa. on lubít dáze pravadít vřéma sdetmí. nadvařé, u varót, jevő tfásta vidáli skútfeř deteř. on jix miřít, ustráivajet ígri, fli prósta sidít sními, vzaf adnavó na adnó kaléna, drugóva na drugóje, a sádi féju jevő abavjót jeftfó kakóř-nibú<sup>i</sup>t fatún rukámi.

#### EXERCISE LVI

## suvór.\f

má<sup>i</sup>lt<u>jik rán</u>n nát<u>lat ut</u>jítsa i sránix let palubít kniáji, fkatórix apísivalis vóini, paxódi, i tak dáleje, petnátsati let matadói suvóraf pastupít na vajénuju stúzbu i dévet let prastuzit prastim satdátam.

né bita satdáta isprávneje jevő: on fstavát rú<sup>i</sup>nfe drugix, sam tfístit sebé sapagí i ptátje i staját na tfasáx vafsákuju pagódu. zït on vméste sprastimi satdátami i jet satdátskije ftfi i káfu; bit fsegdá smet i véset i smefit svaíx taváriftfei vesótimi fútkami i rasskázami. fse lubíli jevó.

kagdá on stat afitséram i nátjat kamándavat satdátami, fsúdu na vamé on pabozdát noprijátola.

" rəbûta—gavarit suvóraf satdátam,—fsəgdá idítə fpərót na vragá. nə bəspakóitəs atóm, skólka pérət vámi dəprijátələi. vi velt prislí bit jix, a ne stsitált."

# GENERAL VOCABULARIES

## VOCABULARY OF VERBS

The verbs are arranged alphabetically according to the form of the imperfective aspect, but every verb used in the exercises is given separately whenever its form differs so markedly from that of the imperfective infinitive that its meaning might be troublesome to find.

The form of the perfective aspect is indicated by the prefix enclosed in brackets or is given immediately below as a separate verb.

First and second singular present and first and second singular future perfective are indicated. Reflexive pronouns are not always repeated.

The number enclosed in brackets indicates the vocabulary, paragraph, or exercise where a phonetic transcript of the word will be found.

Verbs marked with an asterisk will be found also in the lists in Par. 239.

(о)безпоко́нться (о́юсь о́ншься) (56), put oneself about, take thought \*(по)бере́чь (берегу́, жёнь, гу́ть), preserve, keep, watch (по)би́ть (быю, ёшь) (Par. 162), beat (по)благодари́ть (ю́, и́шь) (38), thank (по)блѣднѣть (ѣю, ѣешь) (31), turn pale (по)болтать (аю, а́ешь) (55), chatter (за)болѣть (ѣю, ѣешь) (27), be (fall) ill болить, болять (3rd pers. form) (44), be sore, hurt (по)боя́ться (ою́сь, и́шься) (52), fear (брать (беру́, ённь) (53), take ) взять (возьму́, ёшь) (28) (no)броди́ть (жý, óдншь) (28), wander about (бросать (аю, аешь) (54), throw ) бро́сить (о́шу, о́сишь) (16) будетъ (54), that will do! быва́ть (а́ю, а́ешь) (46), be usually, happen, occur быть (see 2, 6; Par. 123), be (по)бѣжа́ть (гу́, жи́нь, гу́тъ) (54), run \*(но)везти́ от везть (зу́, ённь) (Par. 157), convey, drive (trans.) вёзъ (Par. 96), past tense of цезти (по)велѣть (ю, и́шь) (Par. 214), order, command

) взгляну́ть (у́, я́нешь) (вздыхать (аю, аепь), sigh вздохну́ть (пу́, о́хнешь) взять (28) (see брать), take; взять къ себѣ, adopt (у)видать (аю, асшь) (55), see (у)видѣть (жу, дишь) (8), see висѣть (шу́, си́шь) (Par. 141), hang (intrans.) повиснуть (у, ешь) вить (вью, ёшь) (Par. 162), wind, twine, build (nest) свить (совыю, ёшь) (за)владѣть (ѣю, ѣешь) (48), rule, possess, command (влѣза́ть (а́ю, а́ешь), climb into ) влѣзть (зу, ешь) (49) (вноси́ть (шу, о́сншь), bring in внести (су, ённь) войти, все входить (вз)волновать (пую, усшь), excite, agitate (с)воровать (рую, уснь) (50), steal (за)ворчать or (по)ворчать (чу, ишь) (55), grumble вошёль (Par. 62) (see входи́ть), entered

\*(по)вести or весть (ду, ёшь), lead

(взгля́дывать (аю, аешь), look at

впадать (аю, а́ешь), fall into впасть (аду, ённь) (48) вспоминать (аю, а́ень) (53), remember вепомнить (ю, ишь) вставать (аю, а́ешь) (52), stand up, rise встать (ану, ешь) встр'вчать (аю, асшь), meet встратить (фчу, фтинь) (18) входи́ть (жу, о́дишь), go into, enter войти (ду, ёшь) выдблывать (аю, аешь), prepare, execute выдълать (аю, аешь) (Par. 208) выйду, выйти, see выходить выпла́чивать (аю, аешь), pay out выплатить (чу, тишь) (Par. 208) вырастать<sup>1</sup> (аю, а́ешь) (18), sprout, grow up \*вырасти1 (сту, ешь) вырывать (аю, аешь) (54), dig out, exeavate вы́рыть (ою, ешь) выходить (жу, одншь), go out, eome out выйти (ду, ешь) (Par. 160), (по)вѣрить (ю, ишь) (Par. 223), believe, trust (с)вяза́ть (жу́, -ешь) (Par. 168), knit, bind (по)гнать (о́ню, о́ншыь), hunt, drive (по)говори́ть (ю, и́шь) (3), speak, say сказать (жу, ажешь) (3), say, tell (по)гоня́ть (яю, ешь) (6), hunt (по)горевать (рюю, ешь) (Par. 225), grieve, mourn (за)гремѣть (млю, мишь) (Ex. 49 (с)), thunder \*(по)грести́ (ебу́, ённь), гоw \*(paз)гры́зть (зу, ёшь), gnaw, torment (по)гуля́ть (я́ю, я́ешь) (10), walk; be idle дава́й (imperat. of дава́ть, Par. 231), let us, etc. (дава́ть (даю, ёшь), give дать (3) (дамъ, Раг. 231) далъ, he gave (по)держать (жу, е́ржишь) (Par. 149), hold

дойти, see доходить (достнгать (аю, а́ешь), reach достигнуть (ну, ешь) доходи́ть (жу, о́дишь) (48), reach, arrive at дойти (йду, ёшь) (Par. 160) дошёль, шла (see доходи́ть) (28), reached (из)дремать (млю, емленнь) (55), doze, slumber (за)дрожать (жу, и́шь) (29), tremble дро́гнуть (ну, ешь, or ну́, ёшь) (по)думать (аю, асшь) (10), think (по)дуть (ую, emb), blow (с)лблать (аю, асшь) (2), do, make (с)дблаться (Par. 69), happen, take place, become ссть (13) (pres. tense of быть, be), there is, there are (по)жать (жму, ёшь) (Par. 163), press (с)жать (сожму, ёшь) жа́тьея (43), shrink together жать (жну, ёппь) (18, Раг. 163), reap (с)жать (сожиу, ёшь) (подо)жда́ть (жду, ёшь) (Par. 163), wait, await, expect (по)жела́ть (аю, а́ешь) (35), wish, desire \*жечь (52) (жгу, жжёшь, жгуть), burn сжечь (сожгу́) (по)жить (живу, ёшь) (2, 6), live (заболѣва́ть (а́ю, а́ешь), fall ill заболѣть (фю, фешь) (27) (забывать (аю, аешь), forget забыть (буду, ешь) (41) (по)за́втракать (аю, асшь), breakfast (загля́дывать (аю, аешь), glance at загллиуть (иу, я́нешь) задумывать (аю, аснь), conceive a plan задумать (аю, аень) (28) зажигать (аю, а́ешь) (35), light, kindle заже́чь (жгу, жжёшь) закладывать (аю, асшь), put; pawn; yoke; lay заложить (у, ожинь) закрывать (аю, асшь) (35), cover закрыть (рою, оешь)

<sup>I</sup> Also spelt with o in stem.

## VOCABULARY OF VERBS

(замѣча́ть (а́ю, а́ешь), notice замѣтить (ѣчу, ѣтишь) (31) занимать (аю, аешь) (36), busy, occupy, engage заня́ть (займу́, ёшь) записывать (аю, аешь), inscribe, enter записать (ншу, ишешь) зарабатывать (аю, аешь) (50),earn заработать (аю, аешь) зарывать (аю, а́ешь) (53), bury зарыть (рою, оещь) заставлять (яю, яешь) (55), oblige, compel, cause заста́вить (влю, впшь) засучать or засучивать (аю, аешь) засучить (у, учишь), roll up затопля́ть (яю, я́ешь) (46), stoke, keep up fire затопить (плю, опшиь) јзаходи́ть (жу, о́дишь) ∫ set (of sun) зайти (йду, ёшь) ) go behind (по)звать (зову, ёппь) (Par. 185), call (за)звенѣть (ию, и́шь) (54), resound, tinkle (у)зпать (аю, аешь) (2), know значить (чу, ишь) (27), mean зонди́ровать (рую, yemь), sound, auscultate ј игра́ть (а́ю, а́ешь) (2), play сыграть (извиня́ть (я́ю, я́ешь), excuse извини́ть (ню́, и́шь) (Par. 216) изображать (аю, а́ешь) (41), depict, represent изобрази́ть (жý, зи́шь) (изучать (аю, асшь) ) learn, study uзучи́ть (чý, ýчишь)∫thoroughly имъть (тю, тешь) (41), have, possess (по)искать (нщу, ищень) (28), seek итти́ (иду́, ёшь) (Par. 157), go, go on foot, be actually going ΠΟΪΤΗ итти спать (46), go to bed казаться (кажется) (50), appear, seem (\*класть (аду́, ёшь), put, lay иоложи́ть (жý, о́жниь) (с)ковать (кую, ённь), forge, hammer (с)кома́ндовать (дую, снь) (56), have command of troops

кончать (аю, aemь), finish, end (о)кончить (чу, ешь) (19) (на)корми́ть (млю́, о́рмишь) (39), feed (по)краснѣть or (за)краснѣть (ѣю. фешь) (31), blush \*(по)кра́сть от (у)кра́сть (ду́, ёшь), steal (за)кричать (чу, ишь) (54), сгу, сгу out крикнуть (ну, ешь) (Par. 212), сгу out once купи́ть (see покупа́ть) (6), buy (по)курить or (за)курить (ю, уришь) (Par. 149), smoke (по)кушать (аю, аешь) (10), eat (со)лгать (лгу, лжёшь, лгуть) (Ех. 54 (a)), tell lies лёгъ (15) (see лончіться), he lay down (по)лежать (жу, жишь) (10), lie, recline лечь (see ложиться), lie down (по)лить (лью, ёшь) (16), pour ложи́ться (жусь, жи́шься) (Par. 141), lie down ( \*лечь (ля́гу, ля́жешь, я́гуть) \*(по)лѣзть (ѣзу, ешь), climb (по)любить (блю, юбишь) (Par. 149), love (по)медлить (ю, ишь) (Par. 212, С), hesitate, delay (мелькать (аю, аешь), flit, flit past (мелькну́ть (ну́, ёшь) (по)мири́ть (ю, и́шь) (55), reconcile могъ (6) (past tense of мочь), could можеть (present tense of мочь), can, may (про)мо́кнуть (пу, ешь), be wet through (про)мо́лвить (влю, вишь), speak, say (по)моли́ть (лю́, о́лишь), pray (по)моли́ться (53), say one's prayers (с)мочь (могу, ожешь, огуть) (Par. 168), be able, can, may (по)мучить (чу, ишь), torture, torment (по)мѣша́ть (аю, а́ешь), prevent, disturb (пагибаться (аюсь, аешься) (54), bend, stoop нагнуться (нусь, нёшься) (по)падъяться (тюсь, тешься) (56), hope (называть (аю, асшь), call, name назвать (зову, ёшь)

называ́ться (Par. 185), be called

## VOCABULARY OF VERBS

(направля́ть (йю, йешь), direct направить (влю, вишь) находить (жу, одншь) (54), come upon, find найти (йду, ёнь) (44) находи́ться (42), be, be found пачинать (аю, асшь) (56), begin начать (чну, ёшь) нашёль (Par. 62), found ненравнться, neg. of нравиться \*(по)нести (несу, ённь) (Par. 157), carry, be actually carrying нестись, hurry along иёсъ (Par. 63), carried (по)носить (шу, о́сншь), carry, be in the way of carrying (по)правиться (влюсь, вишь) (Par. 38), be pleasing обвивать (аю, аешь) (55), twine round, embrace обвить (обовью, ёшь) (по)объдать (аю, аешь), dine овладъвать (аю), master, take possession овладъть (тю, тешь) одѣва́ть (аю, аешь) (52), put on, dress, elothe одѣть (ѣну, ешь) (52) озаря́ть (я́ю, я́ешь), shine (upon), light up озарить (ю, ишь) описывать (аю, аешь) (56), describe описать (шу, ишешь) освѣща́ть (а́ю, а́ешь), illumine освѣти́ть (ѣщу, ѣтишь) осматривать (аю, аешь), survey, inspect осмотрѣть (рю́, о́тришь) оставаться (остаюсь, ёшься), геmain, be left, stay остаться (анусь, ешься) (27) оставля́ть (йю, я́ешь) (55), leave, forsake оставить (влю, вишь) отвози́ть (жу, о́зншь), convey away отвезти́ (зу́, ёшь) (27) отвѣча́ть (а́ю, а́ешь) (19), answer отвѣтить (фчу, фтишь) отгоня́ть (яю, я́ешь), drive, chase away отгонать (отгоню, онншь) (16) отдвигать (а́ю), remove от(о)двинуть (ну, нешь)

отдыхать (аю, а́ешь) (18), rest отдохнуть (ну, ёшь) открынать (аю, а́ешь) (35), uncover. open откры́ть (о́ю, о́ешь) (22) отчаливать (аю, асшь), unmoor, cast off отчалить (ю, нинь) отъъзжать (аю, аешь), drive off, start отъбхать (бду, ешь) ощу́нывать (аю, аешь), palpate, finger ощу́пать (аю, аевь) (па́дать (аю, аешь) (Par. 159 note), fall пасть (аду, ёшь) (вс)паха́ть (пашу́, а́шешь) (Par. 168), plough перейду́ (Par. 160), see переходи́ть переходи́ть (жу, о́дишь), go through, across перейти (ейду, ёшь) (на)писать (шу, ишешь) (Par. 168), write (вы́)пить (пью, пьёшь) (Par. 162), drink (за)пла́кать or (по)пла́кать (а́чу, сшь) (27 and 53), weep, bewail, lament пла́каться, wail (intrans.) (за)плати́ть (ачу, а́тишь) (Par. 208), pay поблѣднѣть, see блѣднѣть побѣжда́ть (а́ю, а́сшь) (56), conquer, vanquish побъдить (ъжду, ъдишь) подметать (аю, а́ешь) (55), sweep up (\*подмести́ (ету́, сщь) поднимать (аю, а́ешь) (54), lift, raise подня́ть (ниму, имешь) (22) подниматься, rise подходи́ть (жу, о́динь), go up to; resemble подойти (йду, ёшь) поживать (аю, асшь) (35), live, dwell пожить (живу, ёшь) пова́зывать (аю, аешь) (52), show показа́ть (жу, а́жешь) (3) покидать (аю, а́ешь) (55), abandon, leave in the lurch поки́нуть (у, ешь) покраситьть, see красить покупать (аю, аешь) (53), buy купить (плю, упишь) (6) полагать (аю, асшь) (35), suppose. think положить (жу, ожишь) (also=put)

(поливать (аю, а́ешь) (43), water ) полить (лью, ьёшь) положить (see класть,) lay, put ∫ получать (аю, а́ешь) (52), receive (получи́ть (учу́, у́чишь) (Par. 98) (вс)помнить (ю, ишь), remember; ему помнится, he remembers (Par. 147)(помогать (аю, аешь) (53), help помочь (огу, ожешь, огуть) понимать (аю, аешь) (6), understand поня́ть (пойму́, ёшь) попада́ть (а́ю, а́ешь), fall upon, light upon попасть (аду, ёшь) (ис)портить (орчу, ортишь) (39), spoil, ruin (порывать (аю, аешь), tear порвать (рву́, ёшь) порываться, strive for, try hard послать (see посылать), send посма́тривать (аю, аешь) (55), look at. observe посмотрѣть (ю, отришь) поставля́ть (я́ю, я́ешь) (55), set, set up, erect поста́вить (влю, вишь) поступать (аю, а́ешь) (44), behave, act, enter upon поступить (плю, упишь) (16) посыла́ть (а́ю, а́ешь) (53), send послать (шлю, ёшь) (10) посѣщать (аю, аепь) (19), visit, frequent посѣти́ть (ѣщу́, ѣти́шь) посѣяли, see сѣять потрясать (аю, а́ешь) (54), shake (\*потрясти́ (су́, ёшь) ∫ почния́ть (я́ю, я́ешь) (46), repair почицить (ю, инишь) почитать (аю, аешь) (Par. 185), esteem, regard, consider почесть (чту, ёшь) почитаться, be considered as пошёль, шла́ (10) (see итти́), went пофсть, see фсть (предпочитать (аю, асшь), prefer предночесть (чту, ёшь) (представлить (ию, иешь), represent представить (влю, вишь) bring а́снь), (приближать (á10. nearer приблизить (йжу, изнив) приближаться, approach

приготовля́ть (яю, я́ешь) (18), prepare пригото́вить (влю, вишь) принадлежать (жу, ишь) (Par. 141), belong принимать (аю, аешь), accept принять (приму, имешь) приноси́ть (ошу́, о́сншь) (52), bring принести́ (су́, ёшь) (52) принёсъ (Par. 63), he brought приходи́ть (жу, о́дишь) (56), arrive, come (on foot) притти (нду, ёшь) пришёлъ, шла, etc. (Par. 62), came прійдуть (Par. 160), will come, are to come прівзжать (аю, аешь), arrive (not on foot) пріѣхать (ѣду, ешь) (Par. 97) проводить (жу, одишь) (55), lead through, spend (time) провести (сду, ёшь) продавать (даю, ёшь), sell прода́ть (амъ) (Par. 231) продолжать (аю, аешь) (35), сопtinue продолжить (олжу, олжишь) пройду, see проходи́ть, go through (по)проси́ть (шу, о́спшь) (53), beg, request (проходи́ть (жý, о́дишь) (52), traverse, go through пройти (йду́, ёшь) (52) прошёлъ, шла́, о́, и́ (Par. 62), traversed прощать (аю, аешь) (52), pardon. remit простить (ощу, стышь) (52) прощаться, bid farewell пры́гать (аю, аешь) (2), jump about ) пры́гнуть (ну, сшь), jump (once) \*(по)прясть (яду́, ёшь) (Par. 157), spin (пускать (аю, асшь) (28), let, admit ) пусти́ть (ущу, у́стишь) (52) пусть, let ! (Par. 215) (с)пъть (пою́, ёшь) (Par. 165), sing (по)работать (аю, асшь) (2), work (об)ра́довать (дую, ешь) (53), delight (об)радоваться, rejoice, be glad разгопля́ться (яюсь, я́ешься) (53) разгопыться (бюсь, фешься), eat meat for the first time after the fast

раздѣва́ть (аю, а́ешь) (52), undress (trans.) раздѣть (ѣну, ѣнешь) (52) раздъва́ться, undress (intrans.) ( различать (аю, áemь), distinguish различить (чу, чишь) разсказывать (аю, асшь) (46), геlate, tell разсказать (жу, ажешь) (18) (v) pasyntre (to, teme), understand pasymeteren (55), it is understood, it goes without saying \*(вы́)расти́ ог рости́ (сту́, ёшь), grow (па)рисова́ть (сую, ешь) (19), draw (рожнаться (аюсь, аешься), be born родитьси (жусь, дишься) (47) (по)рыть (рою, о́ешь) (53), dig (по)рыться, stir up, runmage about in ръщать (аю, асшь) (35), solve, resolve рѣши́ть (ý, и́шь) (28) (по)сади́ть (жý, а́ди́шь), plant садиться (жусь, адишься), sit down \*състь (ся́ду, ешь) (15) сбивать (аю, аешь), knock off, lead astray сбить (собью, ёшь) спелать (see пелать), do, make (по)сидѣть (жу, дишь) (15), sit (за)сіять (яю, яешь) (16), shino (сказывать (аю, аешь), relate сказать (жý, ажешь) (3), tell, say складывать (аю, аешь), put together, fold скласть (аду, ёшь) сложить (жу, ожишь) also means compose (скользи́ть (жу, зи́шь), slide, glide скользиуть (пу, ённь) скончаться (аюсь, асшься) (47), die (скрывать (аю, аспь) (31), hide, conceal скрыть (рою, оешь) (31) (по)служить (жу, ужишь) (Par. 149). serve (случаться (астел), happen случиться (-ится) (16) (по)слушать (аю, асшь) (35), listen (у)слышать (у, ишь) (29), hear (по)смотрать (ю, отришь) (Par. 149), contemplate, look upon, consider (по)смѣши́ть ог (на)смѣши́ть (у́, и́щь) (56), make laugh

(за)смѣя́ться (ѣю́сь, ѣёшься) (Раг. 157), langh снимать (аю, асшь), take down, take off спять (сниму, имешь) (Par. 98) солгаль, зее лгать спасать (аю, асшь), save спасти (су, ёшь) спасъ (15), he saved (по)сиать (силю, спишь) (2), sleep спранивать (аю, аснь) (19), question, ask спросить (шу, осншь) (19) (по)ста́вить (влю, винь) (55), set, stand станови́ться (влю́сь, о́вишься). become стать (16) (ста́ну, ешь), become, set about, begin (по)стара́ться (аюсь, а́ешься) (31). try, strive, endeavour сто́ить (о́ю, о́ншь) (9), cost, be worth ; ne cróurs, don't mention it (по)стоять (ою, оншь) (9), stand (по)стро́нть (о́ю, о́ншь) (10), build (по)стучать (чу, ишь) (54), knock стукнуть (ну, ешь) считать (аю, аешь) (56), count, reckon счесть (сочту, ёшь) сыскивать (аю, аешь) (Ex. 55 A(a)). seek out сыскать (сыщу, ыщешь) сълъ (15) (see садиться), he sat down \*състь (see садится), sit down \*(вы́)сѣчь ог \*(по)сѣчь (ѣку́, ѣчёшь. ѣку́ть), chop up; flog (110) churb (\$60, \$emb) (6), sow (по)темитьть or (за)темить (тю, фсиць) (46), grow dark (на)ткать or (со́)ткать (тку, чёшь, куть) (Par. 157), weave (толкаться (аюсь, асшься), strike, knock against толкиуться (пусь, ёшься) (ис)топить (илю, опшиь) (46), heat, stoke трогать (аю, асшь) (35), touch, move тропуть (ну, сшь) (по)тянуться (тянусь, инешься) (48), extend (intrans.)

(убѣга́ть (а́ю, а́ешь), run away убѣжа́ть (ѣгу, жи́шь, гу́тъ) (16) уважать (аю, аешь), respect, esteem уважить (жу, жишь) угоня́ть (я́ю, я́ешь), drive, hunt away **угнать** (гоню́, о́нишь) ударять (я́ю, я́ешь), strike ударить (ю, ишь) узнава́ть (узнаю́, ёшь), recognize, get to know узнать (узнаю, ешь) (22) умирать (аю, а́ешь) (42), die умерсть (умру, ёшь) (Par. 96) умывать (аю, а́ешь) (52), wash (face and hands, etc.) умы́ть (умо́ю, о́ешь) (52) (с)умѣть (ѣю, ѣешь) (35), understand, know how to, be able ∫ упада́ть (а́ю, а́ешь), fall (off), sink ↓ упа́сть (аду́, ёшь) упалъ (15), he fell (употреблять (яю, яешь) (35), use употребить (блю́, би́шь) (55),устра́нвать (аю, аешь) arrange устро́ить (о́ю, о́ишь) ( усыпа́ть (а́ю, а́ешь), fall asleep уснуть (ну, ёшь) утвержда́ть (а́ю, а́ешь), affirm, strengthen утвердить (рж(д)у, рдишь) уходи́ть (жý, о́дишь) (55), go away; escape уйти (йду, ёшь)

(на)учить (учу, учишь) (19), teach (на)учи́ться (19), learn, study учить наизусть, learn by rote ушёлъ, шла́, etc. (34) (see уходи́ть), went away (по)хвали́ть (ю, а́лишь) (39), praise ходи́ть (хожу, ходишь) (2, Раг. 149), go, be in the habit of going (3a)xottu (6; Par. 222), wish хо́чешь (46; Par. 222) царствовать (ствую, ешь) (48), rule, reign \*(за)цвести́ (ѣту́, ёшь), bloom (по)чистить or (вы)чистить (ищу, и́стишь) (56), clean (по)читать (аю, аешь) (19), read (по)чу́вствовать (вствую, уешь), feel (шага́ть (а́ю, а́ешь), step, stride ) шагну́ть (ну́, ёшь) шёль, шла, etc. (see штти), went (про)шептать (пчу, е́пчешь), whisper шепну́ть (ну́, ёшь) шить (шыю, шьёшь) (Par. 162), sew (с)шить (сошью, ёшь) ълъ, past tense of ъсть (по)ѣсть (6; Par. 220), eat

(по)ѣсть (b; Far. 220), eat (по)ѣхать (ѣду, ѣдешь) (Par. 97), go by any conveyance, not on foot

## **RUSSIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY**

Verbs are given in a special vocabulary on pp. 210-216, and do not appear in this vocabulary.

Of nouns the nominatives singular and plural, and occasionally the genitive plural, are given. When the noun ends in -b or when any other cause of ambiguity is present, the gender is marked.

Otherwise nouns in -ъ, -й are masculine; nouns in -а, -я are feminine; nouns in -o, -e, -мя are neuter.

When a masculine noun <sup>1</sup> is printed :

1. въбздъ, ы, the accent remains throughout on the stem;

II. rόπь, á, the accent in the singular is on the stem and in the plural on the termination;

III. дворъ, ы, the accent falls throughout on the termination.

IV. во́лкъ, и (о́въ), all cases of the singular and the nominative plural are accented on stem, oblique cases in plural have accent on termination.

Of adjectives the predicative forms (see Lesson XLIX), when in common use, are given in the lists in Par. 237.

Regularly derived adverbs in -o (see Par. 189 (1)) are not always separately mentioned.

The number enclosed in brackets indicates the vocabulary, paragraph, or exercise where a phonetic transcript of the word will be found.

	ба́сия, и (енъ) (39), fable
A	батюшка, $\mu(m.)$ (46), father, dear father
a (1), and, but	безпрестанию (36), incessantly
а́вгусть, ы (47), August	безпреста́нный, continual, incessant
авторъ, ы, author	безъ, бе́зо (4), without
áзбука, и, alphabet, A B C book	бéрегъ, á, II (10), shore, bank
а́нсть, ы, I (37), stork	ближе, nearer
Алекса́ндра, Alexandra	ближний (adj.) (52), neighbour
Алекса́ндръ, Alexander	Giniskin, near
англича́нниъ, а́не (34), Englishman	близъ (gen.) (Par. 70), near
англича́ика, и (Par. 230), Englishwoman	блѣдный (31), pale
ánraíňckiň (13), English	бога́тство, a (50), riches, wealth
Англія (34), England	бога́тый (5), rich
апрѣль, н (m.) (47), April	ooráye, richer
	Бо́гъ, н (о́въ) (53), God
Б	Боже! (53), О God !
баба, ы (14), peasant-woman	болга́ринъ, а́ре (Par. 230), Bulgar
ба́бушка, и (12), grandmother, old	Болга́рія, Bulgaria
woman	болга́рка, н (Par. 230), Bulgarian woman
ба́ринъ, ба́ре (55), master, lord	больница, ы (27), infirmary, hospital

<sup>1</sup> With many nouns, and especially with monosyllables, the use of the figures I, II, etc., is not necessary.

больной (4), siek, ill бо́льше (32), more; бо́льше всего́ (50), more than all, most бо́льшій (Par. 195), greater, larger большо́й (5), great, large, grown up бо́лѣе (40), more болѣзненный, sickly болѣзнь,  $\mu$  (f.) (27), disease, sickness брать, тья (евъ) (3), brother брита́нскій (50), British будеть (impers. verb) (54), that will do. enough бу́дущій (Par. 128), future, coming буква́льный, literal, exact бумага, н (19), paper бы, бъ (Par. 199), conditional particle бы́къ, п (49), ох бы́ль, и (f.) (53), true story быстрый, quick, sudden бѣдность (f.) (17), poverty бѣдный (5), роог бѣлый (1), white

#### B

- ва́шъ, a, e, и (7), your, yours
- вдругь (27), suddenly
- ведро́, ёдра (13), pail вездѣ (56), everywhere
- великій (25), great
- великолѣпный (40), splendid, magnificent
- верблю́дъ, ы (48), camel
- верёвка, и (43), горе
- верста́, ёрсты (48), verst (1067 metres)
- верхо́мъ (Par. 48), on horseback; ѣхать верхо́мъ, to ride
- вéрхъ, н (10), top, summit
- весслый (56), merry, glad, jolly
- весло́, ёсла, оаг
- весна́, ёсны (18), spring (season); весною, о́й, in spring
- весь, вся, всё, всѣ (Par. 106), all, entire
- весьма́, very, extremely
- вечеръ, а (18), evening; вечеромъ, in the evening
- вещь, и (f.) (39), thing, affair
- взадъ (44), backwards
- взрослый (46), grown-up, adult
- ви́дный, visible, evident
- ви́дъ, ы, sight, view, aspect
- вино́, 4a (43), wine
- висълица, ы, gallows
- вистльникъ, и, man who has been hanged

вку́сный (7), niee, tasty владѣніе, я (48), possession, territory вытето (gen.) (Par. 70), instead of вмѣстѣ (36), together виеза́пный (54), sudden винзъ, down(stream) внимательный (19), attentive внука, и, granddaughter внукъ, и (3), grandson виучка, и (14), little granddaughter во=въ, in, into во́все (34), at all, completely; во́все не. not at all вода́, -ы (12), water вое́нный (56), military, warlike во́злѣ (gen.) (Par. 70). beside, near возможный (Par. 41), possible война́, -ы (28), war во́йско, а́ (56), army вокза́ль, ы (19), railway-station во́лкъ, и (о́въ) (37), wolf волна́, ∸ы, wave во́льный, free воро́та́ (neut. pl.) (55), gate во́ръ, ы (о́въ) (50), thief восемиа́дцать (Par. 148), eighteen восемь (36), eight восемьдесять (Par. 150), eighty восемьсо́ть (181 (b)), eight hundred воскресе́ніе, resurrection, Easter воскресе́нье, я (Par. 128), Sunday восто́къ, I (48), East восьмидеся́тый, eightieth восьмисо́тый (Par. 184), eight-hundredth восьмо́й (Par. 166), eighth воть (2), here is! there is! there are ! вперёдь (44), forwards врагъ, и (56), enemy время, мена́ (n.) (Par. 219), time BCë (18), all, entire; always всегда́ (18), always всего́, gen. case of весь, etc. всюду (56), everywhere вся, fem. sing. of весь вся́кій (36), each, every вторникъ, и (47), Tuesday второ́й (Par. 166), second вчера́ (16), yesterday въ, во (acc. or prep.) (10), in, into въбздъ, ы (10), entrance вы (Par. 80), you выражение, я, expression высокій (30), high, tall высота́, о́ты́ (45), height Bicmin (Par. 195), higher, highest

выше всего́, higher than all, highest въдь (41), why, surely въкъ, п or á (48), age, century, lifetime върно, truly; не върно? (56), is it not so?

вѣрный, true, faithful вѣтеръ, тры *or* á, wind

Г

гдѣ (2), where генера́лъ, ы (56), general Герма́нія (34), Germany repóii, n (5), hero геройня, н (14), heroine гибель, н (f.) (50), ruin гладкій, smooth гла́зъ, а́ (ъ) (16), еуе глубокій (30), deep глу́пый (1), stupid гнило́й, decayed гиѣздо́, ∸а (43), nest говоря́щій, the person speaking гóдъ, á (10), year голова, головы (16), head голо́дный (42), hungry голосъ, а, II (29), voice голый, naked го́нчій (40), hunting (dog) гора́здо (32), by far го́ре, я́ (28), grief, misfortune го́родъ, а́, II (27), town го́рче, more bitter го́рькій, bitter ropáuli (Par. 94), hot Госпо́дь (m.) (gen. sing. Го́спода) (54), the Lord госуда́рство, a (48), state, empire госуда́рь, н (m.) (48), ruler гото́вый, ready граждани́нъ, а́не (Par. 230), burgher, eitizen граница, ы (44), frontier гребець, бцы, III, rower грибъ, ы́ (49), mushroom гроза́, -ы (49), thunder-storm грома́дный (34), enormous гро́мкій (29), loud гро́мъ, ы (о́въ) (49), thunder гру́да, ы, heap, lot гру́дь,  $\mathbf{H}$  (f.), breast гря́зный (13), dirty губе́риія (42), a government ryстой, thick, dense гу́сь, н (éň) (m.) (49), goose

#### Д

да (6), yes, and, but давнымъ-давио (21), long ago давиó, long, long since да́же (18), even далёкій (45), far, remote дальше, далье, farther да́ма, ы (12), lady да́нный, given да́тчанниъ, ане (Par. 230), Dane да́ча, и, summer resort два, двѣ (7), two двадцать (36), twenty две́рь, н (е́й) (f.) (Par. 64), door дворе́цъ, рцы, III (5), palace дворъ, ы (36), court, yard; на дворъ (Ex. 18, A), out of doors дворящинъ, я́не (Par. 230), nobleman (courtier) двухсотый (Par. 184), two-hundredth двѣна́дцать (Par. 148), twelve двѣсти (Par. 155), two hundred девяносто (Par. 150), ninety девятисотый (Par. 184), nine-hundredth девятиа́дцать (Par. 148), nineteen де́вять (36), nine девятьсоть, nine hundred дека́брь, и́ (*m*.), III (47), December день, дни (m.) (18), day це́ньги (f. pl.) (40), money дере́вия, и (е́нь) (18), hamlet (without ehureh); въ дере́виъ, in the country це́рево, а́ or с́вья (ьевъ) (37), tree деревя́нный (9), wooden де́сять (36), ten деше́вле, cheaper дешёвый, cheap дива́нъ, ы. couch ди́кій (Par. 92), wild дитя, дѣти (n.) (Par. 229), child дли́нный (16), long для (gen.) (4), for диёмъ (Par. 68), by day дно, до́нья (ьевъ), bottom до (gen.) (Par. 70), up to, till, before доброта́ (39), goodness, kindness добрый (1), good, kind дово́льно (55), sufficiently, fairly, rather дождь, и (m.) (42), гаіп докторъ, á, II, doetor до́лгій (30), long до́лго (adv.) (43), long должень, predicative of должный (42), obliged, compelled

до́ма (8), at home

- дома́шній (24), domesticated, tame
- домикъ, и (9), little house
- домо́й, home, homewards
- до́мъ, á (1), house
- дорога, и (50), way, road
- дорогой, дороже (50), dear, dearer
- доска́, -н (19), board
- дочка, и (14), little daughter
- дочь, дочери (Par. 86), daughter
- дра́ка, и (16), fight, scrimmage
- дрова́ (n. pl.) (46), firewood, timber
- дрожа́щій (29) trembling
- другой (5), other, second
- дру́гъ, друзья́ (зе́й) (Par. 15), friend
- другъ, друга (44), one another; другъ съ другомъ (46), with each other
- дружо́къ, и́, III (14), little friend, dear friend
- ду́бъ, ы́ (38), oak
- дурно́й (18), bad, hateful
- душный, close, oppressive
- дѣвочка (12), little girl
- дѣвушка, и (37), girl (growing up)
- дѣдушка, и (екъ) (m.) (46), grandfather
- дѣдъ, ы (1), grandfather
- дъйствительно (50), really, indeed
- дѣло, á (34), deed, affair, business
- дѣти (n. pl.) (Par. 229), children
- дѣтство (41), childhood
- дѣятельный, active
- дя́дя, и ог ья́ (ье́въ) (m.) (29), uncle

### E

eró (2), him, of him, his, it, its едпа́ (43), hardly, scarcely ежелневный (42), daily ему́ (Par. 21), to him е́сли (34), if есть (13), there is, there are ещё (16), still е́я (12), her, of hor, hers

### ж

жалкій, pitcous, pitiful малкю (49), it is a pity жаркій (18), hot маркій (18), hot матаа, ы (18), harvest, crops ме (37), for, but, yet, on the other hand, though, too, anyway жёлтый (23), yellow меслалый (50), of iron меслао, a (Par. 194), iron мена, ёны (27), wife жанцинна, ы (12), woman же́ртва, ы, victim, sacrifice живой, living, alive животпое (n. adj.) (24), animal жи́дкій, thin (of fluids) жизнь (f.) (49), life жильє,  $\neq \pi$  (39), dwelling жи́рный, fat жи́тель, n (m.) (54), inhabitant жи́то, a (18), crops, corn жура́вль, tí (m.), III (37), crane

#### З

за (acc., instr.) (Par. 44), behind, for, at: HI 3á 9TO, not at any price: что за-? what sort of ? забота, ы. care за́втра (Par. 68), to-morrow за́втракъ, и (34), breakfast, lunch зада́ча, и (36), exercise, problem зала, ы, hall, drawing-room за́мокъ, за́мки, castle замо́къ, замки́, III (21), lock за́падъ, I (48), west зачѣмъ (10), for what, why звѣрь, н (éň) (m.) (37), wild beast зда́ніе, я, I (7), building здоро́вый (4), well, healthy здоро́вье, health здра́вствуйте! (Par. 216) (imperative mood of здравствовать (вую, уешь), good day ! how are you ? hail ! здѣсь (3), here зелёный (16), green земля́, -и (е́ль) (21), land, earth зима́, -ы (2), winter зимо́й (Par. 68), in winter зло́й, bad, cross, spiteful знакомый (41), known знакъ, и (23), sign знамя, ёна (Par. 219), banner зна́ніе, я (50), knowledge значить (pres. tense of значить) (27), that means, that is зо́лото (29), gold золото́й (29), golden золь, predicative form of злой зрѣлище, a, sight, spectacle

### п

и (1), and, also и́бо (conj.) (36), for игра́, -и (Par. 60), game изба́, -и (42), peasant-house, hut извини́те! (Par. 216) (*imperative mood*), oxcuse me! извѣстный (45), well-known, certain изображающій (pres. part.) (40), representing нэъ, изо (gen.) (Par. 70), out, out of, from изъ-за́ (gen.), from behind или (18), or императоръ, ы (48), emperor нмъ (Par. 21) (dat.), to them имя, имена́ (Par. 219), name иногда́ (18), sometimes ипостранецъ, нцы (34), foreigner интерссный (41), interesting испа́нскій (50), Spanish испра́вный (56), correct, exact Пта́лія (34), Italy италья́нскій, Italian HXB (Par. 21), them, of them, their

I

ію́ль, n (47), July ію́пь, n (47), June

#### К

кабинеть, ы, I, private room ка́ждый (36), each како́въ (2), predicative of каково́й? which ? what sort of ? како́й? (6), which ? what sort of ? како́й-нибу́дь (55), some or other какъ (2), how, as какъ разъ (16), just, just as it happened каменный (9), of stone камень, мни (éй) (m.), stone капита́нскій, belonging to the captain каранда́шъ, и, III (Par. 67), pencil картина, ы (37), picture ка́ша, п (56), gruel ка́өедра, ы (19), pulpit, teacher's desk квартира, ы (40), flat, dwelling ква́сь, I, kvass (beverage made with rye-bread and malt) кислый (7), sour кла́дъ, ы (53), treasure классный (19), class, belonging to classroom ключъ, и (21), key книга, и (18), book кня́зь, ья́ (зе́й) (m.) (8), prince ко=къ когда́ (2), when кого́? (Par. 21), whom ? whose ? кожа, и (12), leather, skin коли, if кольцо, кольца (29), ring колѣно, а (55), knee

компата, ы (21), гоот кому́ (Par. 21), to whom комъ (prep. of кто) (10), whom контора, ы, office коню́шия, и (17), stable копéсчка, и. a little copeck копенка, и (Par. 153), copeck корабль, и, 111 (m.), ship коро́ва, ы (21), соw короле́ва, ы (48), queen коро́ль, и, III (m.) (9), king коро́ткій (30), short коро́че, shorter ко́рпусъ, á, II, corps (of officers) коса́, -ы (18), seythe ко́сть, н (е́й) (f.) (49), bone котёнокъ, тя́та (Ех. 16, С), kitten кото́рый (relat. pron. ; relat. or interrog. adj.) (7), who, which ко́шка, и (12), cat кра́пиій (Par. 82), extreme, last; по крайней мфрѣ, at least красивый (9), beautiful кра́сный (19), red; beautiful крéсло, a (9), arm-chair крестья́ншь, я́не (18), peasant кровать, и (f.) (31), bedstead кро́вь (f.), blood кромѣ (gen.) (Par. 70), besides, except; кромѣ того, besides (that) кро́ткій, gentle круглый (16), round крутой, stiff, abrupt, thick крѣпкій (29), firm, strong кто (2), who кубышка, и (54), jug, pot куда́ (2), whither куда-то, to somewhere or anywhere кузие́цъ, ы́, III (48), smith купе́цъ, нцы́, III (23), merchant кусо́къ, ски, III (13), piece, bit ку́хия, и (онь ог онъ) (21), kitchen ку́ча, 11 (55), heap, lot кушанье, н (7), food къ, ко (dat.) (Par. 39), towards, to кѣмъ? (съ) (9) (interrog.), with whom ?

#### Л

ла́мпа, ы (35), lamp ла́па, ы (12), paw ла́пка, н (49), little paw левъ, львы (37), lion лёгкій (25), light, easy ле́гче, casier лежа́пка, н (55), bench by the stove ли, ль, interrogative particle (Par. 12), whether (лиса́) лисица, ы (37), fox лицо, -a, face; person ло́дка, и (49), boat лопа́та, ы (53), spade ло́шадь, и (е́й) (f.) (17), horse лу́гъ, á (10), meadow луна́, ≁ы, moon лучшій (Par. 195), better, best лѣни́вый (19), idle, lazy лѣнь (f.) (39), laziness лѣстница, ы (22), stair лѣсъ, á (1), wood, forest лѣто, á (2), summer, year лѣтомъ (2), in summer любе́зный (41), amiable, dear любо́вь (gen. бви́) (f.) (39), love любопытство, a, curiosity люди (m. pl.), ей (42), people

#### м

- ма́й, и (47), May ма́лепькій (5), little, small
- мало (*adv.*) (6), little
- малый (40), little
- мальчикъ, и (1), boy
- марть, ы (47), March
- маска, и (окъ), mask
- ма́сло, á (9), butter
- матери, see мать, mother
- материнскій, motherly
- ма́тушка, и (скъ) (46), mother, dear mother
- мать, матери (Par. 86), mother
- машина́льно (31), mechanically, absently
- мéбель (f.) (46), furniture
- медвѣдь, н, I (8), bear
- ме́дленный (32), slow
- мéжду (instr. or gen.) (16), between, among
- мéлкій, small, fine
- ме́ньше, ме́нъс (adv. and adj.) (40), less; ме́ньше всего́, least
- ме́ньшій (Par. 195), smaller, less
- меньшой (Par. 195), younger, youngest
- меня́ (3), me, of me
- мёртвый (Par. 190), dead
- мете́ль, н (f.) (46), snow-storm, blizzard
- милліо́нъ, ы (Par. 155), million
- милын (40), nice, dear
- ми́мо (prep. with gen.; adv.) (Par. 62), past
- мини́стръ, ы (9), minister
- мниу́та, ы (Par. 181 (c)), minute

ми́ръ, I (55), peace мірь, ы (39), world; village community младой == молодой мла́дшій (19), younger, youngest мно́го (2), much мно́гочи́слепный (40), numerous множество, a (40), a lot, large number мной, мною (9), (with etc.) me миѣ (Par. 21) (dat. or prep.), me мнѣнie, я (34), opinion могу́чій (9), mighty можетъ-быть (32), may be, perhaps можно (4), it is possible мо́згъ, и, brain, marrow мой, моя, моё, мой (Par. 104), my, mine мо́крый (18), wet, damp моли́тва, ы (54), prayer молодо́й (1), young молоко́ (16), milk моне́та, ы (54), money, coin мо́ре, я́ (7), sea моро́зъ, ы (18), frost мо́сть, ы́ (10), bridge мужи́къ, и, III (3), peasant мужчина, ы (23), man мужъ, мужья (éй), husband мы (Par. 80), we мы́шь, и (е́й) (f.) (38), mouse мѣлъ, I (19), chalk мѣра, ы (22), measure мѣсто, á (15) place мѣсяцъ, ы, I (44), month, moon мѣщани́нъ, а́не (Par. 230), small townsman мя́гкій (25), soft мя́со (13), flesh, meat

, ...., .....

### н

па (acc. and prep.) (10), on to, on павстрѣчу, towards, to meet надо (49), it is necessary; миѣ па́до, I have to, I must надъ, надо (instr.) (Par. 127), over, above наза́дъ (21), back, ago панзу́сть (39), by heart наконе́цъ (10), at last направле́ніе, я, direction напротнвъ (50), but, on the contrary; (prep. with gen.), opposite наро́дъ, ы, I (27), people настоя́щій (Par. 128), present; real naxógka, n (53), a find начало, a (28), beginning name (7), our, ours

не (1), not néco, nececá (7), sky, heaven Heró, form used for eró after prepositions неда́вно (41), recently, not long since педѣля, и (43), week ие́жели=чѣмъ (Par. 194), than незнакомый, unknown, strange некраси́вый (9), ugly, not pretty нельзя́ (Par. 41), (it is) impossible немно́го (2), a little, not much, somewhat  $\text{Hem} \dot{y} = \text{em} \dot{y}$  after prep. нспрія́тель, н (56), enemy пепрія́тный (Par. 116), unpleasant несмотря на (acc.) (43), in spite of несча́стіе, н (26), misfortune несча́стный (28), unfortunate, unhappy He to (55), if not that, or else неужéли (15), surely not, can it be ? is it possible that ? пеуче́ніе (or ье) (7), ignorance неучёный (55), ignorant ие́чего (53)=нѣтъ инчего́, что (чего́), nothing of which не́чь́мъ (53)=иѣтъ ничего, чъ́мъ. nothing whereby нигдѣ (8), nowhere ниже, lower ийзкій (30), low, not high никако́й, no sort of никогда́ (3), never Никола́й (gen. а́я), Nicholas ныкто́ (Par. 47, E), no one никуда, to nowhere нимъ (съ нимъ) (9) instr. of онъ, him ними (съ ними) (9) instr. of они, them нихъ, see Par. 126 инчего́ (6), gen. of ничто́, nothing; (это) ничего́ (34), it does not matter инчто́ (Par. 47, E), nothing 110 (2), but ио́вый (34), new пожъ, и (40), knife носильщикъ, и, bearer ио́съ, ы́ (16), nose иочь, и (ей) (f.) (17), night; иочью (Par. 68), by night ноя́брь, и́ (m.), III (47), November ну (54), well нужный (29), necessary; мнѣ нужно, I need нѣме́цкій, German ибмецъ, мцы, German ињеколькіе (adj.), a few, some исколько (with gen.) (40), a few, some

иътъ (6), no, not, there is not ни́ни, и (12), children's nurse О о,обо,объ (10),concerning, about

o, obo, obt (10), concerning, about (prep.); against (acc.) 66a, 66t (Par. 176 (d)), both облако, á, cloud образъ, ы (Par. 115) form, manner, image; каки́мъ о́бразомъ? in what manner? how? обыкнове́нно (9), usually обыкнове́нный, usual, customary объ, fem. of оба обѣдъ, ы (34), dinner; послъ обѣда, in the afternoon овёсь, овсы, III (6), oats овца́, ≁ы (21), sheep огоро́дъ, ы (3), kitchen-garden оди́ннадцать (Par. 148), eleven оди́нъ, дна́. о́, и́ (m. and n.), ѣ (f.) (Par. 107 (b)), one, a certain, sole, alone однажды (4), опсе одна́кожъ (46), however ósepo, á or ëpa (48), lake окнó, ∠a (9), window о́коло (Par. 181 (c) (gen.), about, nearly окончательно, finally, definitively окре́стность,  $\mu$  (f.) (40), environs октя́брь, и́ (m.), III (47), October оле́нь, и (m.) (5), stag онъ, опа́, о́, и́ (ѣ) (2, 12, Par. 126), he, she, it, they опа́еный, dangerous осёль, слы, III (6), ass бсень, н (f.) (17), autumn остальной (55), remaining о́стрый (40), sharp оте́цъ, тцы́, III (1), father откуда (19), whence отчего́ (28), wherefore, why оть, ото (gen.) (Par. 70), away from, from офице́рь, ы or a, I or II, officer ouesigno (31), evidently óчень (3), verv налецъ, льцы (29), finger папироса, ы (39), cigarette на́рень, рин (31), (peasant) lad ца́руеъ, á, II, sail па́снортъ, ы or á (Par. 146), passport

- не́рвый (Par. 166), first
- пере́дияя (fem. adj.) (24), ante-room, hall

пе́редъ (Par. 44) (acc., instr.), before, in front of перекла́дина, ы, cross-beam перо́, пе́рья (10), feather, pen перча́тка, и (50), glove пёсъ, псы (49), dog пе́чь, и (е́й) (f.) (46), stove пи́во, а́ (43), beer письмо, - (44), letter питьё, я́ (7), drink пища, и (35), food пла́мя, ена́ (n.) (Par. 219), flame платье, я (ьевъ) (43), clothing племя, мена́ (Par. 219), race, breed племя́нникъ, и (29), nephew племя́нница, ы (29), niece плотъ, ы, raft пло́хо (2), badly плохо́й (1), bad площадь, и (f.) (50), square, (market-) place по (Par. 87), (dat.) on, along, according to, etc.; (acc.) up to, as far as, at the rate of (Par. 183); (Par. 69) (prep.) after по-а́шглійски (3), in English повари́ха, и (Par. 69), cook пове́рхность, и (f.), surface повторе́ніе, я (22), repetition пого́да (18), weather подлѣ (gen.), beside, near  $\mu$  nonpýra,  $\mu$  (14), friend (f.) подъ, подо (acc., instr.) (Par. 127), under пожалуй (imperat. of пожаловать) (Par. 216), if you like, as far as I am concerned, perhaps пожалуйста (Par. 216), please по́здній (24), late позже (32), later пози́ція, и (iй), position noká, as long as; noká ne, till, until покойный (48), peaceful; deceased; (с)покойной ночи! (56), good-night! покорно (38), humbly, obediently иóле, л (18), field поле́зный (48), useful nómo (54), stop, that is enough по́лный (54), fuil, complete получиис, better, in a better manner иолчаса, gen. получаса (m.), half-an-hour полъ, ы (10), floor поль, ы, sex помѣщикъ, и (38), land-owner попедѣльникъ, и (34), Monday нора́, 4ы (52), time; пора́, it is time

поро́къ, и (17), vice портион, ыя (30), tailor по-русски (3), in Russian послъ (gen.) (32), after послѣдній (36), latter, last посте́ль, и (f.) (15), bed посуда (f. coll.) (46), vessels, utensils потому, therefore потому́ что (8), for, because пото́мъ (7), thereafter, then по-французски (5), in French похвала́, ы́ (19), praise похо́дъ, ы (56), campaign почему (6), wherefore, why почти (18), almost, nearly поэтому (22), therefore пра́вда (32), truth правди́вость (39), truthfulness, uprightness пра́вильный (32), regular, correct пра́во (32), really, truly пра́вый, right, just пра́здникъ, и (54), festival пра́здничный (48), festival (adj.) практичный, practical превосхо́дный, excellent предложе́ніе, я, offer, proposal предметъ, ы, object пре́жде (prep. with gen.; adv.) (32), before; прежде всего (46), first of all при (prep.) (Par. 45), at, near, in the time of при́быль,  $\mu$  (f.) (50), profit прика́зчикъ, и, I (21), shop-assistant, clerk прилежный (19), diligent примѣръ, ы, example; на примѣръ (39), for example приро́да (55), nature прито́къ, и (48), confluent, tributary прихо́жан (f. adj.) (55), ante-room, corridor прія́тель, п (Par. 194), friend прія́тный (Par. 116), pleasant про (acc.) (Par. 100) = o (prep.), concerning, about простите! (imperat. of простить) (Par. 216), excuse me ! pardon me ! просто (55), simply просто́й (Par. 88 (b)), simple про́шлый (34), past; last, preceding прощайте! (imperat. of прощать) (Par. 216), farewell! ирямой (Par. 192), upright

приникъ, и, gingerbread

пти́ца, ы (12), bird пти́чка, и (43), little bird пусто́й, empty; vain пусти́ни, и (48), desert, wilderness писни́ца (34), wheat пѣсин, и (43), song пѣшко́мъ (44), on foot пятис́отый (Par. 184), five-hundredth пяти́адцать (Par. 184), fifteen пя́тийдать (Par. 184), fifteen пя́тий (Par. 166), fifth пять (36), five иятьеся́ть (Par. 155), fifty пятьесо́ть (Par. 155), five hundred

### Р

работа, ы (48), work рабо́тникъ, и, I (5), workman рабо́чій (48), workman; working (day) равнодушный, indifferent ра́вный, equal ра́дъ, а, о, ы (Par. 188), glad pásbě (44), perhaps; interrog. particle разска́зъ, ы (56), tale, narration páзъ, ы, time, occasion; (adv.) (4), once ра́на, ы, wound ра́неный (50), wounded páimiñ (Par. 89), early ра́но (32), early ра́ньше, ра́нѣе (32), earlier ребёнокъ, нка, бята (Par. 229), child рису́нокъ, нки (38), sketch, drawing робкій (5), timid ро́вно (46), exactly родной (14), related, native, dear рождество́ (28), Christmas рожь (f.) (34), гуе ро́зовый (16), pink Poccín (34), Russia руба́шка, н (43), shirt рубль, и́ (m.) (9), rouble рука, -и (29), haud, arm русскій (13), Russian ручей, ьи (ье́въ), III (43), brook, stream ручьёмъ, ручья́ми (43), in torrents рыжій (16), tan(-eoloured) рѣдкій (Par. 128), rare, infrequent рѣка́, ∠н (15), river рядомъ съ (31), beside, in one row with ря́цъ, ы́ (31), row

### С

са́бля, и (40), sabre са́дъ, ú (3), garden са́мка, и (14), female animal; hind

самова́ръ, ы (55), tea-urn, lit. self-boiler

самъ, á, ó, н (emphatic) (22), self, same

- са́мый (Par. 186), very, same; prefixed to adjective it has the force of extremely, most
- сапо́гъ, и, III (46), boot
- capáñ, n (5), barn, eart-shed
- свида́ніс, и, re-union, meeting; дө свида́нія (Par. 216), au revoir
- свине́цъ, gen. sing. нца́ (50), lead
- свниья́, -и (ей) (37), pig
- cbóň, ń, ë, ń (Par. 104), one's own
- свѣтлый (17), light, bright
- Свѣтлое Воскресе́ньс (53), Easter Sunday
- свѣтъ, I (7), light; world
- свѣча́, -и, eandle
- святой, holy
- себя́ (reflex.) (Par. 103), self, of self; себь́, to oneself
- сего́дня (8), to-day
- седьмо́й (Par. 166), seventh
- cen, cin, ë, ú (Par. 106), this
- сейча́сь (27), at once
- село́, ёла (7), village (with church)
- семисо́тый (Par. 184), seven-hundredth
- семна́дцать (Par. 148), seventeen
- семь (36), seven
- семьдесять (Par. 150), seventy
- семьсо́ть, seven hundred
- семый, ∠н (éй) (28), family
- септя́брь, и, III (47), September
- серди́тый (21), angry, violent
- се́рдце, я́ (44), heart
- серебро́ (Par. 194), silver
- сере́бряный (54), of silver
- середина, ы, middle
- серпъ, ы́ (18), sickle
- сестра́, ёстры (12), sister
- сзадн (adv. and prep. with gen.) (55), from behind
- сига́ра, ы (39), cigar
- си́льный (1), strong
- cúniñ (7), blue
- сирета, -ы (m. or f.) (28), orphau
- сиро́тка, п (28), little orphan
- сиротстве (43), orphanhood
- сказка, и (39), fairy-tale
- скаме́йка, и (19), bench, seat
- скарлатина (50), searlet fever
- ско́лько (6), how much, how many
- скоро (32), soon
- скромность (f.) (39), modesty
- скромный (39), niedest

скучный, sad, wearisome

- сла́бый (1), weak
- слеза́, ёзы (43), tear
- слишкомъ (39), too
- слуга, -и (m.) (55), servant
- служанка, н (12), maid, servant
- служба, ы (56), service
- слу́чай, п (Par. 61), case, occasion, opportunity; во вся́комъ слу́чаѣ (41), in any case
- слышный, audible
- слѣдующій, following
- слѣпо́й, blind
- сме́рть, н (е́й) (f.) (48), death
- смѣлый (56), bold
- смѣшно́й, ridiculous, laughable; ему́ смѣшно́, he is inclined to laugh
- снача́ла (22), first, to begin with
- снова (16), again, anew
- снѣгъ, а́ (42), snow
- со=съ
- собана, и (12), dog
- собо́іі, о́ю, instr. case of себя́, self
- совсѣмъ не (нѣтъ) (42), not at all
- сожалѣніе (8), regret; къ сожалѣнію
- (8), unfortunately
- созна́ніс, consciousness солда́тскій (56), soldierly
- солдать, ы (ть) (36), soldier
- солцать, ы (тв) (00), sona
- сороково́й (Par. 171), fortieth
- сорокъ (Par. 150), forty
- сорых (rai. 100), rorey сотъ, gen. of сто, hundred
- сотый (Par. 171), hundredth
- coxá, -11 (18), Russian plough
- сиа́льня, и (сиъ) (38), bedroom
- споко́йный (56), quiet, still, restful
- спѣлый (7), ripe
- cpásy (49), together, at one time
- среда́, -ы (47), Wednesday
- средина, ы, middle
- стака́нь, ы (39), glass, tumbler
- стари́къ, и́, III (3), old man
- старина́ (53), days of old
- ста́роста, ы (m.) (39), village elder
- ста́рость (f.), old age
- старуха, и (14), old woman
- стару́шна (53), old wifie
- старшій (19), elder, eldest
- старый (1), old
- сто (Par. 150), hundred
- столица, ы (50), eapital (eity)
- сголован (f. adj.) (38), dining-room
- столь, й (9), table
- сто́лько (40), so much

сто́нъ, ы, groaning сторона́, о́роны (55), side стоты́сячный, hundred-thousandth страда́лецъ, льцы, sufferer страна́, -ы (50), country, land стремя, ена (Par. 219), stirrup стро́гій, strict сту́лъ, сту́лья (евъ) (Par. 60), chair стѣна́, -ы (37), wall суббота, ы (47), Saturday сумракъ, I, twilight, gloom су́пъ, ы (26), soup суро́вый (19), rough, severe; dark cyxóii (21), dry счастие (26), happiness; по (къ) счастию, happily счастли́вый (28), happy съ, co (gen.) (Par. 44), from, off, since: (acc.) about (approximately), as; (instr.) with, along with сы́нъ, сыновья́ (е́й) (1), son сы́ръ, ы (3), cheese сѣверъ, I (48), north

- сѣмя, сѣмена́ (Par. 219), seed
- сѣрый (16), grey
- сюда́ (16), hither

### т

таба́къ, и, III, tobacco TÁIDRE (10), also, likewise тако́й (2), such такъ (2), so; такъ ка́къ (36), as (conj.); не та́къ, not so, in the wrong way тамъ (3), there твёрдый (23), hard твой, я, ё, и (Par. 104), thy тебѣ (dat. or prep. of ты) (Par. 21), thee тебя (gen. or acc. of ты) (Par. 21), thee теку́щій (Par. 128), eurrent темно́, (it is) dark тёмный (17), dark тене́рь (3), now тёнлый (17), warm терпѣніс (55), patience тётка, и (29), aunt тетра́дь, н (f.) (17), copy-book ти́хій (30), low, soft, not loud то, neuter of тотъ, that; не то́, if not that, or else; to me, the same thing; TO....TO..., now....then, at one time... at another time тобою, о́й, instr. of ты (9), theo това́рищь, и (9), companion

## RUSSIAN-ENGLISH VOCABULARY

това́ръ, ы, wares, goods тогда́ (3), then, at that time того, gen. of тотъ, то (Par. 21) то́же=та́кже (10), also толстый, thick то́лько (5), only; да и то́лько (44), and that's all; то́лько что (52), just (with past tenses) тому, dat. of тоть, то (Par. 21) тоть, та, то, ть (2, Par. 107), that, the one тоть же, same tóuno, as it were трава́, –ы (21), grass третій (Par. 166), third трёхсо́тый (Par. 184), three-hundredth три (Par. 27), three три́дцать (Par. 150), thirty трина́дцать (Par. 148), thirteen триста (Par. 155), three hundred трубка, и (39), ріре тру́дный (23), difficult трудолюбивый (18), industrious трудъ, ы (21), trouble, labour трусли́вый, cowardly трусь, ы (о́вь) (49), coward туда́ (16), thither тупо́й (40), blunt ты (2), thou тысяча (Par. 155), thousand тысячный (Par. 184), thousandth тьма (f.), darkness тѣло, á, body тьмь (9), instr. of тоть, with that тѣмъ не ме́иѣе, none the less тЕсный, narrow, close тюрьма́, ∠ы (44), prison тяжёлый (23), heavy

#### У

y (gen.) (Par. 70), at, near, with; у него́, he has ужа́сный (27), terríble, frightful у́же, narrower ужа́ (18), already; уже́ давно́, for a long time past; уже́ не, no longer у́жнињь, ы (36), supper у́жнињь, ы (36), supper у́жній (25), narrow у́лица, ы (21), street у́мный (1), intelligent умѣ́ліе, understanding, capacity умѣ́ліе, understanding, capacity умѣ́ліе, u(18), lesson уµс́адьба, ы (38), farm; estate ўтро, á (18), morning; ўтромь, in the morning
учаснікь, ú, III (19), pupil
ученніка, ы (19), pupil (f.)
ученный, learned man
учёнься я (7), learning, teaching, study
учілищсьи (36), connected with the school
учитель, й, II (19), teacher
учитель, ы (19), lady-teacher
учіленница, ы (19), lady-teacher
учіленница, ы (45), comfortable

#### Φ

февра́ль, й (т.), III (47), February Фра́нція (34), France францу́зскій (13), French францу́зь, ы (53), Frenchman

#### Х

хвость, ы (16), tail хи́трый (41), sly хи́щный (41), ravenous хлѣбъ, ы (1), bread хлѣбъ, á, corn хозя́ниъ, хозя́ева, host, master холе́ра (27), cholera холо́дный (17), cold xopómin (4), good хорошо́ (2), (it is) well хра́брый (5), brave христіаци́нъ, а́не (Par. 230), Christian христо́въ, а, о, ы (Par. 181 (b)), of Christ xygóñ, bad xýquiii (Par. 195), worse, worst xýne, worse

#### $\mathbf{I}$

цари́ца, ы (14), czarina ца́рство, а (48), reign, empire царь, и́ (5), czar цвѣть, á (7), colour цвѣть, ы́, flower цс́рковь, кви (éi) (f.) (19), church цѣ́лый (28), whole

### Ч

чай, чай, II (43), tea ча́сть (4), often ча́сть, и (én) (f.) (40), part ча́сть, й (Par. 128), hour; but два, три, четыре часа́, 2, 3, 4 hours or o'clock; онъ на часа́хъ (56), he is on guard

- ча́шка, н (43), cup
- чего, gen. of что (Par. 21)
- чей, чья, ё, и (Par. 106), whose?
- человѣкъ (1), pl. люди (42), man, people (after the numerals 5, 6, 7, etc., in the nom. or acc. use человѣкъ)
- чему, dat. of что (Par. 21)
- чёмъ (10), prep. of что
- чéрезъ (acc.) (42), across, through, after the lapse of
- чёрный (1), black
- че́стный, honest
- четве́ргъ, и́, III (47), Thursday
- четвёртый (Par. 166), fourth
- че́тверть, и (е́й) (f.) (181 (с)), quarter
- четы́ре (Par. 27), four
- четы́реста (Par. 155), four hundred
- четырёхсо́тый (Par. 184), four-hundredth
- четы́рнадцать (Par. 148), fourteen
- чино́вникъ, и (39), official
- число́, a (40), number
- чистый (13), clean
- чте́ніе, я, reading
- что (pron. and conj.) (2), which, what; that; why
- 4Tó, that which, what
- чтобы, чтобъ (10), that, in order that
- что-либо, anything; что-нибу́дь (Par. 47, E), something or anything; чтото, something
- чу́вство, a (31), feeling
- чу́дный, wonderful
- чужой (28), strange, not one's own
- чуло́къ, лки, III (44), stocking
- чуть, scarcely
- чъмъ, instr. case of что, conj. (9), wherewith; than (Par. 194)

#### Ш

шалу́пъ, ы́, III (55), scamp

шестисотый (Par. 184), six-hundredth
шестой (Par. 166), sixth
шесть (36), six
шесть (36), six
шестьдеся́тъ (Par. 150), sixty
шя́ра, и (12), neck
широ́кій (25), broad
шка́шъ от шка́фъ, ы́ (49), press, cupboard
шко́ла, ы (18), school
шу́тка, и (56), joke

#### Щ

щено́къ, нки́ от щени́та (Ех. 16, С), рирру щи (f. pl.) (56), cabbage soup

#### Э

эста́мпъ, ы, print, engraving э́того, gen. of э́тотъ, э́то (Par. 21) э́толу, dat. of э́тотъ, э́то (Par. 21) э́тотъ, э́та, о, н (2, Par. 107), this, that

#### ю

ю́гъ (48), South

#### Я

н (2), I йблоко, и (7), apple язы́нъ, ѝ, III (23), tongue, language ѝма, ы (54), pit, hole янва́рь, ѝ, III (47), January ѝркій (21), bright-coloured ѝрмарка, и (27), a fair ѝсный (32), bright, clear ячме́нь (m.), III (6), barley

The two preceding vocabularies give more detailed information as to forms of verbs and nouns and to pronunciation. This vocabulary gives, quite frequently, only one form for each verb—the infinitive of the imperfective aspect; where two verbs are given separated only by a comma, the second form is perfective. Of nouns the nominative, singular and plural, is given.

#### A

abandon, to, оставлить; нокидать АВС, азбуна able, to be, мочь; умѣть about, o (prep.); про (acc.); по (dat.); о́коло (gen.) about, to be put, безпоко́иться above, over, надъ (instr.) abroad, za rpaniny (motion); 38 грани́цею (rest) abrupt, крутой absently, машина́льно accept, to, принимать according to, no (dat.) across, черезъ, чрезъ (acc.); сквозь (acc.) act, to, поступать active, деятельный activity, дѣятельность (f.) admit, to, пускать adopt, to, взять (perf.) къ себъ adult, взрослый affair, дбло, а; вещь (f.), и affirm, to, утверждать afraid, to be, see to fear after, nócath (gen.); no (prep.) afternoon, послъ объда again, спова; опять against, противъ (gen.) age, see century age (old), ста́рость (f.)agitate, to, волновать ago, тому назадъ Alexander, Алекса́ндръ Alexandra, Алекса́ндра alive, живой all, весь, вся, всё, всѣ

all, not at, вовсе ивть (не); совстять иѣтъ (пе) all, that is, да и то́лько almost, nouri alone, ogint along, no (dat.) along with, съ, ридомъ съ (instr.) aloud, rpómko alphabet, ásöyka already, ymé also, также: тоже: н always, bcergá amiable, любезный; милый among, Méngy (gen. and instr.) and, n; a (=but) angry, cepnitui animal, животное, ыл another, gpyróii; one another, gpyrb друга; to one another, другъ другу; with one another, другъ съ другомъ answer, to, отвъчать (dat. of person; na with acc. of question) anything, что-нибудь anywhere, гдѣ-нибу́дь appears, it, кажется apple, лблоко, н approach, to, приближаться April, anpfant (m.) arm, рука, -и arm-chair, кресло, a army, bóйско, á arrange, to, устра́ивать arrive, to, приходи́ть; прі́тхать; (attain to) постигать arrived, he, пришёль; прібхаль as, какъ; такъ какъ; instr. case of nouns

as it were, точно ask, to, проси́ть (request); to ask (questions), спрашивать, спросить aspect, ви́дъ, ы ass, осёль, слы at, y (gen.); при (prep.); въ (=in, prep.); Ha (= on, prep.); sa (= for, behind,acc.) at once, сейча́съ ate, ѣлъ; ку́шалъ attentive, внимательный audible, слышный August, а́вгусть aunt, тётка, н author, а́вторъ, ы; писа́тель (m.), и autumn, о́сень (f.), и await, to, ждать away from, отъ (gen.)

### в

backwards, взадъ bad, дурной; худой; плохой badly, пло́хо bank (shore), бе́регъ, а́ banner, зна́мя, ёна barley, ячме́нь (m.) barn, capáй, н be, to, быть; находи́ться; to be usually, бывать; to be (of health), поживать bear, медвѣдь (m.), н bearer, носи́льщикъ, н beast, wild, звѣрь (m.), и beat, to, бить beautiful, краси́вый; прекра́сный because, потому что become, to, (с)дѣлаться; станови́ться bed, посте́ль (f.), и bed, to go to, see Par. 143, Voc. 46 bedroom, сиа́льня, и bedstead, крова́ть (f.), и beer, ни́во, á before, (time) пре́жде (gen.); до (gen.); (space) пе́редъ (instr. or acc.) beg, to, npocúra begin, to, начинать; стать beginning, нача́ло, а behave, to, ноступать, поступить behind, 3a (acc. or instr.) behind, from, сзади (gen.) believe, to, вфрить (dat.) belong, to, принадлежать bench (seat), chaménna, n bench by the stove, лежанка, и bend, to, (trans.) нагибать; (intrans.) нагибаться

beside, возлѣ (gen.); ря́домъ съ (instr.) besides, (prep.) кромъ (gen.); (adv.) кро́мѣ того́ best, лу́чшій; нанлу́чшій betake oneself, to, направля́ться better, лу́чшій better (adv.), лу́чше; полу́чше between, ме́жду (instr. or gen.) bewail, to, (по)пла́кать beyond, see behind big, большо́й bird, птица, ы; little bird, птичка, и bit (piece), кусо́къ, ски bitter, горькій; more bitter, горче black, чёрный blacksmith, see smith blind, слѣпой blizzard, мете́ль (f.), и blood, кровь (f.) blow, to, дуть blue, cúniñ blunt, тупо́й blush, to, красить board, доска́, -и boat, ло́дка, и body, тѣло, á bold, смѣлый bone, кость (*f*.), и book, кни́га, и boot, canórъ, и́ born, to be, рожда́ться, роди́ться both, óбa, óбѣ bottom, дно, до́ньн bought, he, купилъ boy, ма́льчикъ, и brain, мо́згъ, й brave, хра́брый bread, хлѣбъ, ы breakfast, за́втракъ, и breakfast, to, за́втракать breast, гру́дь (f.), н bridge, мо́стъ, ы́ bright, свѣтлый; исный; иркій bring, to, приносить (impf.); принести (pf.)bring in, to, вносить (carry); вводить (lead) bring near, to, приближать British, брита́нскій broad, mupókiŭ broader, múpe brook, руче́й, ьй brothor, бра́ть, ьи brown (tan), pínkiň bucket, see pail

build, to, стро́нть; вить (nest) building, ада́ніс, я Bulgaria, Болта́рія Bulgarian, болта́ріянъ, а́ре; (f.), болта́ріянъ, а́ре; (f.), болта́ріянъ, а́не burgher, граждани́нъ, а́не burn, to, жечь bury, to, зарыва́ть business, дѣло, á busy oneself, to, занима́ться but, no; a butter, ма́сло, а́ buy, to, покупа́ть, купи́ть by, *instr. case of noun* by far, гора́адо

### С

cabbage soup, щн (f. pl.) call, to, звать; называть called, to be, называться сате, пришёлъ; пріфхалъ camel, верблюдъ, ы campaign, noxónt, ы can (verb), MOUL; YMETL candle, csbuá, -u canton, see district capital (city), столи́ца, ы care, забота, ы carried away, he, отвёзъ carry, to, nochth (indef.); nectú (def.); вози́ть (in a vehicle) cart-shed, capáň, u case (occasion), случай, и; in that case, вь тако́мъ случаѣ; in any case, во всякомъ случаѣ cast off (unmoor), to, отчаливать castle, за́мокъ, мки cat, ко́шка, и cause, to, заставли́ть century, вѣкъ, и or á certain, одинь; известный chair, стуль, ья; (arm-chair), кресло, a chalk, мѣлъ chatter, to, болтать cheap, дешёвый cheaper, деше́вле cheese, сы́ръ, ы child, дити́; ребёнокъ (see Par. 229) childhood, детство children, дбти; ребята cholera, xonépa Christ, of (adj.), христо́въ Christian, xpucriaumina, áne Christmas, Рождество́ (Христо́во) church, це́рковь, кви (f.)

cigar, сига́ра, ы cigarette, напироса, ы citizen, граждани́нъ, а́не class, классъ, ы class, connected with, классный clean, чистый clean, to, чистить clear, я́сный; свѣтлый clerk, приказчикъ, и climb, to, леать; to climb into, влезать close (stuffy), ду́шный close, to, see to shut clothing, пла́тье, я cloud, облако, á coin, моне́та, ы cold, холо́дный cold, with, отъ хо́лоду colour, нвѣтъ, á come, to, приходи́ть ; прізажа́ть (not on foot) come out, to, выходить comfortable, cosy, yiotumii coming (adj.), будущій command, to, see to order command of, to be in, командовать (instr.) companion, това́рищъ, и compel, to, заставли́ть compelled (obliged), должный complete, полный; цълый completely, соверше́нио conceal, to, скрывать conceive, to, задумывать (see Voc. 28) concerned, as far as I am, no: kányň conquer, to, noo bright consciousness, cosnánie consider, to, почитать considered, to be, nountathen contemplate, to, смотрѣть continual, безпрестанный continue, to, продолжать contrary, on the, nanpótnet; naodopótt convey, to, Boshith; Besth; (carry), поси́ть; нести́ cook (f.), повари́ха, и copeck, nonéňna, u; little copeck, mite, копесчка, п copy-book, тетра́дь (f.), и corn. хлѣбъ. а́ corps (officers'), корпусъ, а́ correct, правильный corridor, прихожая (adj.) cost, to, сто́нть cosy, see comfortable couch, дива́нъ, ы

could, he, могъ count, to, считать country, страна́, -ы; in the country, въ пере́внѣ course, of, see understood, it is court(yard), дворъ, ы́ cover, to, закрывать соw, корова, ы coward, трусь, ы cowardly, трусливый crane (bird), жура́вль (m.), й crops, жа́тва (f.), ы cross (adj.), злой cry, to, кричать; плакать (weep) cunning, xитрый сир, ча́шка, п cupboard, шкапъ or шкафь, ы curiosity, любопытство current (adj.), текущій czar, царь, и (m.) czarina, царица, ы

#### D

daily, ежедневный damp, мо́крый Dane, да́тчанинъ, ане; (f.), датча́нка, п dangerous, опа́сный dark, тёмный; it is dark, темно dark, to grow, темибть darkness, temnotá; temá daughter, дочь, чери; little daughter, дочка, и day, день (*m*.), дни; by day, днёмь; good day ! здравствуйте! dead, мёртвый dear, дорого́й; ми́лый dearer, дороже death, сме́рть (f.) decayed, гнилой deceased, покойный December, дека́брь (m.) deep, глубокій defeat, to, see to conquer delay, to, медлить depict, to, изображать describe, to, onnicusars desert, пустыни, и desire, to, желать; хотыть desk (teacher's), ка́осдра, ы did, дблалъ, сдблалъ; indicates past tense die, to, умирать; скончаться died, he, умеръ difficult, трудный difficulty, трудность (f.)

dig, to, pыть; to dig out, вырывать diligent, прилежный dine, to, объдать dining-room, столо́вая, ыя dinner, обѣдъ, ы direction, направление dirty, rpязный disease, болћзнь (f.), и distant, see far distinctly, scno district (canton), уѣздъ, ы do, to, дѣлать doctor, до́кторъ, á dog, соба́ка, и; пёсъ, псы domesticated, дома́шній door, две́рь (f.), и; out of doors, на цворѣ down, внизъ doze, to, дремать draw, to, pucobáth drawing (sketch), рису́нокъ, ики drawing-room, за́ла, ы; гости́ная, ыя dreadful, ужа́сный drenched, to be, мо́кнуть dress, to (act.), одѣва́ть; (neut.), одѣваться, одъться drink, питьё, я; drink, to, пить drive, to (=go in a vehicle), txatb; (=convey in a vehicle), возить; to drive away (=chase), угоня́ть; отгоня́ть; (=depart), отъѣзжа́ть drove up, he, прітхаль; дотхаль dry, cyxóü dwelling, жильё, ≁я

#### E

each, ка́ждый; each other, другъ друга; to each other, другъ другу; with each other, другъ съ другомъ; see Par. 183 early, pánniŭ; (adv.), páno earn, to, зарабатывать earth, земли, и; міръ, ы (world) easier, ле́гче east, востокъ Easter, Свѣтлое Воскресе́нье easy, nërkin eat, to, ѣсть; ку́шать eight, воссмы eighteen, восемна́дцать eighth, восьмой eight hundred, восемьсоть eightieth, восьмидсся́тый eighty, восемьдесять

either, и́ли elder, crápmiň elder, village, ста́роста,  $\iota$  (*m*.) eleven, оди́ннадцать else (or), не то́ embrace, to, обвивать emperor, императоръ етріге, дарство, а empty, nycróň end, коне́цъ, ниы́ enemy, непріатель, и (m.); врагь, й engage, to, see to occupy England, Ahrnin English, ánrainckin; in English, noанглійски Englishman, англича́нниъ, ане enormous, грома́дный enough, дово́льно; enough ! по́лно! enter, to (=go in), входить; (=inscribe), записывать; to enter upon, поступать entered, he, вошёлъ entire, цѣлый; полный entrance, въъздъ, ы entrance-hall, нере́дняя, ін environs, окрестность (f.), и equal, ра́вный erect, to, поставля́ть estate, уса́дьба, ы esteem, to, уважать; ночитать even, даже evening, вечерь, á; in the evening, ве́черомъ every, каждый; всякій everybody, всякій человѣкъ everything, всё everywhere, всюду; вездѣ evident, очевидный exact, исправный exactly, póbno example, примѣръ, ы; for example, на примѣръ excavate, to, вырывать excellent, превосхо́дный excuse, to, извинить; excuse me! извините! execute, to, выделывать exercise (problem), зада́ча expect, to, ждать expression, выражение extend, to (intr.), тянуться external, наружный extreme, крайній extremely, са́мый (adj.), о́чень еуе, глазъ, а

#### F

fable, ба́сия, n faee, лицо́, ≁а fair, a, я́рмарка, п fairly, дово́льно fairy-tale, ckáska, n faithful, верный fall, to, ynagáts; to fall into, впадать family, семья́, ≁и far, далёкій far (before compar.), repásgo farewell ! прощайте! farther, да́лѣе, да́льше fast, see quick fat, жирный father, отець, тцы; батюшка, н fear, to, боя́ться feast, *see* festival feather, неро́, не́рья February, февра́ль (m.) feeble, сла́бый feed, to, кормить feel, to, чу́вствовать feel a desire, to, saxorfith (perf.) feeling, чу́вство, а fell, he, уна́лъ festival, праздинкъ, и; (adj.), праздничный few, нѣсколько (with gen.); немно́гіе (adj.)field, поле, я fifteen, нятна́дцать fifth, แล่тый fiftieth, пятидеся́тый fifty, пятьдеся́ть fight, драка, и finally, окончательно find, a, naxógka find, to, naxoguite fine, see good finger, палецъ, льцы finish, to, кончать fire, orónь, гни (m.); to keep up the fire, to stoke, затонля́ть firewood, дрова́ (n. pl.) firm, кренкій first, не́рвый; at first, сначала; first of all, прежде всего five, пять five hundred, нятьсотъ flame, пла́мя (n.), ена́ flat (a house), квартира, ы flesh, Mrico

flit past, to, мелькать flog, to, сѣчь floor, поль, ы flower, цвѣтъ, ы fold, to, скла́дывать following, слѣдующій food, пища, и; кушанье, я foot, norá, -и; to go on foot, итти пѣшко́мъ for (conj.) ибо, потому что; (prep.), для (gen.); за (acc.) (of price); на (acc.) (time); as for, что каса́ется (with до and gen.) foreigner, иностранецъ, ицы forest, лѣсъ, á forge, to, кова́ть forget, to, забывать form (figure, way), образъ, ы fortieth, сороково́й fortunately, къ (по) счастію forty, сорокъ forwards, вперёдъ; to go backwards and forwards, ходи́ть взадъ и вперёдъ found, to be, Haxogútters found, he, нашёлъ four, yetsipe four hundred, четыреста fourteen, четы́рнадцать fourth, четвёртый fox, лиса; лисица, ы France, Фра́нція free, во́льный French, panuýsckiň; in French, noфранцузски Frenchman, францу́аъ, ы Frenchwoman, француженка, и frequent, to, nochmárk Friday, пятница friend, дру́гъ, -узья́; подру́га (f.), п; прійтель (т.), и frightful, ужасный fro, to and, взадъ и вперёдъ from (=out of), изъ (gen.); (=away), оть (gen.); (=off, since), сь (gen.); from behind, cságn (gen.) front of, in, see before frontier, rpanúna frost, моро́зъ, ы; hard frost, сильный моро́зъ full, но́зный furniture, мéбель (f.) future (adj.), бу́дущій

234

G

gallows, висълица, ы game, нгра́, ∸ы garden, садъ, ы; kitchen-garden, oroродъ, ы gate, ворота́ (n. pl.) gave, he, далъ gaze, to, see to look at general, генера́лъ, ы generally, обыкнове́нио gentle, ми́лый German, нѣмецъ, мцы; (adj.), нѣме́цкій Germany, Герма́нія get up, to, see to rise ginger-bread, пряннкъ, и girl, дбвушка, и; little girl, дбвочка, и give, to, давать, дать given, да́нный glad, pags glad, to be, радоваться glance, to, загля́дывать glass (drinking), стана́нъ, ы glide, to, скользить gloom, сумранъ glove, перчатка, и gnaw, to, грызть go, to, xomite; utti; sxare (not on foot); to go abroad, fixate sa rpaminy; to go away, уходи́ть<sup>1</sup>; to go into, входи́ть<sup>1</sup>; to go on, сдѣлаться (= to take place); to go out, выходи́ть<sup>1</sup>; to go through, проходи́ть<sup>1</sup>; nepexoди́ть<sup>1</sup>; went through, проmёль; to go up to, подходить<sup>1</sup>; доходи́ть 1; to go to bed, ложи́ться спать; итти спать; to go upstairs, нтти наверхъ God, Бо́гъ, и gold, зо́лото golden, золото́й good, xopómin; добрый good-bye, до свида́нія good-day, здравствуйте goodness, добротá goods, вещь (f.), и; това́ръ, ы goose, гусь (m.), и government (administrative division of Russia), губернія, и grand-daughter, виучка, и grandfather, дбдь, ы; дбдушка, и grandmother, бабушка, п grandson, внукъ, и

<sup>1</sup> Cf. note to Par. 208.

grass, трава́, -ы great, больвіо́ї; вели́кій greater, бо́львій green, зелёный grey, сі́рый grief, го́ре, и́ grieve, to (*intr.*), горева́ть groaning, сто́нъ, ы groand, see earth grow, to, расти́; выраста́ть grown up, варо́слый gruel, ка́ша grumble, to, ворча́ть guard, on, на часа́хъ

## Η

half, полови́на, н hall, за́ла, ы; (vestibule), пере́дияя, ія halt ! =stand !hamlet, дере́вия, и hammer, to, ковать hand, рука́, ≁н hang, to (intr.), висть happen, to, случаться, случиться; дблаться happiness, cuáctie happy, счастливый hard, твёрдый; see difficult hardly, едва́ hard-working, трудолюби́вый harvest, жатва, ы; to harvest, жать have, to, быть y + gen. of person; имѣть; владбть; have I? есть ли у мения? I have to, и долженъ (на́, но́, ны́) he. ont head, голова́, го́ловы; to take into one's head, see to conceive health, здоро́вье healthy, адоро́вый heap, ку́ча, н hear, to, слышать heart, cépque, á; to learn by heart, учить наизусть heat, to, топи́ть heaven, néõo, -becá heavy, тяжёлый height, высота́, о́ты help, to, помогать (dat.) hence, отсюда her, eá (gen.), eñ (dat.), eë (acc.) here, здѣсь; here is ! воть! hero, repóñ, u heroine, геропня, и hesitate, to, мéдлить

hide, to, спрывать high, высо́кій higher, Bhuili highest, Bhime Beeró him, eró (gen. and acc.), emý (dat.) hind, са́мка (оле́ня) his, eró hither, cюда́ hold, to, держать hole (=pit), я́ма, ы holy, святой home, at, дома; home (with verbs of motion), домо́й honest, честный hope, to, надъяться horse, ло́шадь,  $\Pi(f.)$ horseback, on, верхомъ hospital, больница, ы host (master), хозя́ниъ, -я́ева hot, горя́чій; жа́ркій hotter, жа́рче hour, ча́съ, ы́ house, домъ, а; little house, домнкъ. и: peasant house, изба́, -ы how, какъ; какимъ образомъ; how are уои ? какъ вы поживаете? however (conj.), однакожъ; всётаки how many, how much, сколько huddled, to sit, see to press (themselves) humble, ноко́рный humiliating, унизительный hundred, сто hundredth, сотый hunt, to, гонять; гнать hunting (used for), rónniñ hurry along, to, nectrics (used of the river) hurts, it, боли́ть, боли́ть husband, мужь, ый hut (wooden house), изба́, -ы

## I

I, я idle, лёни́вый if, éсли ignorance, неучёніс ignorant, неучёный ill, заболёть ill, заболёть illumine, to, осв'ыца́ть; озари́ть image, образь, ы imneuse, see enormous impossible, невозмо́жный; it is impossible, нельзи́

in, въ, во (*prep.*) incessant, постоя́нный; непреры́вный; безпреста́нный indeed, дѣйстви́тельно; пра́вда; пра́во indifferent, равнодушный industrious, прилежный: трудолюбивый infirmary, больница, ы inhabitant, жи́тель, и (m.) inquire, to, see to ask inseribe, to, записывать inspect, to, осматривать instead of, вмѣсто (gen.) intelligent, умный interest, yuáctie interesting, интере́сный into, въ (acc.) iron, желѣзо; of iron, желѣзный is there ? есть ли? is to, долженъ it, оно; это (or masc. or fem. forms) Italian, италья́нскій (adj.); in Italian, по-италья́нски Italy, Ита́лія its, eró, eń J. January, янва́рь (m.) jingle, to, звеньть joke, шу́тка, и

10Ке, шутка, п jolly, весёлый jug, кубышка, и July, йоль (т.) jump about, to, прытать June, йонь (т.) just (=right), пра́вый; just (with past tense), только что; just as it happened, какъ ра́оъ

### $\mathbf{K}$

keep, to, держать; беречь кеу, ключь, и kind, добрый; любезный kindle, to, зажигать kindness, добротá king, коро́ль, й (m.) kitchen, ку́хия, и; kitchen-garden, огоро́дъ, ы kitten, котёнокъ, -тя́та knee, колѣно, а knife, ножъ, и knit, to, вязать knock, to, стучать know, to, знать; to know how to. умѣть; to get to know, узнава́ть, узнать

knowledge, эна́ніе known, знако́мый; well-known, извѣстный kvass, квасъ

## L

labour, see trouble lad, молодой человѣкъ; парень (m.), рни (=peasant-lad) lady, да́ма, ы lake, ósepo, á or ëpa lament, to, (по)пла́кать lamp, ла́мна, ы land, земля́, -и; страна́, -ы landed proprietor or land-owner, nontщикъ, и language, языкъ, и large, большо́й larger, бо́льшій largest of all, бо́льшій всего́ last, послѣдній; про́шлый (past) last, at, наконе́цъ late, поздній; (=deceased), покойный late (adv.), по́здно later, позже latter, послѣдный laugh, to, смѣя́ться; to make laugh, смѣщи́ть laughable, смѣшной lay, to, класть lay down, she, легла́ laziness, лѣнь (f.) lazy, лѣни́вый lead, свине́цъ, gen. нца́ lead, to, вести lead astray, to, сбивать learn, to, учиться (neut.) (dat.); изучать (transitive,=to study a subject); to learn by heart, учить наизусть; see to get to know learned, учёный learning, yuénie least, ме́ньшій; at (the) least, по кра́йней мѣрѣ; not in the least, совстмъ (не) итътъ leather, кожа leave, to, нокидать (=to leave in the lurch); to leave (school), кончить; to leave alone, оставля́ть left, лѣвый left, to be, оставаться less (adj.), ме́ньшій; (adv.), ме́ньше; ме́нѣе lesson, ypókъ, и; to learn a lesson, учить урокъ

let, to, пускать; let ! нусть!; нускай!; let us! gabáň! letter, нисьмо, -a lie, to (=to tell lies), лгать; (=to recline), лежать; to lie down, ложи́ться life, жи́знь, н (f.) lifetime, in his own, въ своёмъ вѣку́ lift, to, поднимать light, cBETE (gen. sing. a) light (=not heavy), лёгкій; (=not dark), свѣтлый light, to, зажигать; to light upon, нопала́ть like, to, любить; нравиться (=to be pleasing); if you like, пожалуй lion, левъ, львы listen, to, слушать literal, буква́льный little (adj.), ма́ленькій; ма́лый; (adv.), мало; a little, немного live, to, жить ; поживать living, живой lock, замо́къ, мки́ long, дли́иный; до́лгій (time); long ago, давнымъ-давно; not long since, неда́вно look, to take a, nocmotphete (perf.) look, to, cmotpfstb; to look at, cmotpfstb на (acc.); посматрывать; взглядывать; to look for=to seek Lord, the, Госпо́дь (m.), Го́спода (gen. sing.) lot, a, мио́го; мио́жество, a; (=heap), куча, и loud, громкій love, любо́вь (f.), gen. sing. бви́ love, to, любить low (=not high), ни́зкій; (=not loud), ти́хій lower, низшій, ниже Μ magnificent, великолѣнный maid(servant), служа́шка, н majority, бо́лшая часть, и make, to, пѣлать; see to oblige man, человѣкъ, pl. лю́ди; мужчи́на, ы manner, образъ, ы; in what manner? какимъ образомъ? many, MHÓFO March, марть market-place, площадь, и (f.)

marrow, мозгъ, и

mask, маска, н master, хозя́инъ, -я́ева matter, gáno, á; it does not matter. ничего́ Мау, май may (verb), мочь (be able); it may be, можстъ-быть me, меня́ (gen., acc.), мнъ́ (dat.) meadow, лу́гь, а́ means, that, значить measure, мѣра, ы meat, мя́со mechanically, машина́льно meet, to, встрѣча́ть; till we meet again, до свида́нія meeting, свида́ніе, я mention it, don't, не сто́нть merchant, купецъ, нцы merry, весёлый middle, средина, ы mighty, morýviů; сильный military, вое́шный milk, молоко́ million, милліо́нъ, ы mind, never, muyeró mine, мой, моя, моё, мой minister, министръ, ы minute, минута, ы misfortune, нссча́стіе, я; го́ре, я́ modest, скромный modesty, скромность (f.) moment, моме́нть, ы; мину́та, ы Monday, понедбльникъ money, де́ньги (f. pl.) month, мѣсяцъ, ы moon, луна́, ∸ы more, бо́лѣе, бо́льше; far more, гора́здо бо́лыпе morning, ýrpo, á; in the morning, утромъ most, бо́льше всего́; see majority mother, мать, матери; матушка, н motherly, матери́нскій mourn, to, (по)пла́кать ; горева́ть mouse, мышь, H(f.)much, мно́го mushroom, грибъ, ы must, I, я долженъ, жна, etc.; мнъ нало ту, мой, моя, моё, мой

#### Ν

naked, го́лый name, и́мя, имена́ (n.) narrow, у́зкій; тѣсный

native tongue, родной языкъ nature, природа near, близъ (gen.); бли́зко отъ (gen.) nearly, почти necessary, пужный neck, mén, n need to, I, мнѣ нужно; мнѣ на́до neighbour, ближний (adj.) neighbourhood, окрестность, и neither=also not; ни nephew, племя́нникъ, н nest, гнѣздо́, гпѣзда; to build nests. вить гнѣзда (ѣ=ё) never, никогда́ never mind, ничего́ nevertheless, тъмъ не ме́нъ́е new, но́вый next=following or future nice, вкусный (to taste); милый (dear) Nicholas, Никола́й niece, племя́нница, ы night, ночь, и; by night, ночью; goodnight! (с)поко́йной но́чн! nine, де́вять nine hundred, девятьсоть nineteen, девятна́дцать ninety, девяносто no, нѣтъ; не nobleman, дворящинъ, я́не no one, никто nor, nu north, съ́веръ nose, nócu, ú no sort of, никако́й not, пѣтъ; не; ни; not at all, совсѣмъ не (нѣтъ); во́все не (нѣтъ) nothing, инчто; инчего notice, to, замѣча́ть November, поя́брь, и́ (m.) now, теперь nowhere, нигдѣ nowhere (nowhither), никуда́ number, число́, -а; мно́жество, а (=а great many) numerous, многочисленный nurse (child's), mina, n

#### 0

оак, дубъ, й оаг, весло́,  $\neq$ а оаts, онёсъ, всм object, предмётъ, ы; ве́щь, п (f.) oblige, to (= compel), заставли́ть; to be obliged, быть долженъ, жиа́, etc. observe, to, посма́трынать; замѣча́ть occasion, случай, и occupy, to, занимать o'clock, at what? BE ROTÓPONE Jacv? October, октябрь (m.) of, изъ (out of; gen.); отъ, (from; gen.) off, съ (away from; gen.); отъ (gen.) offer, предложе́ніе, я office, контора, ы officer, офицерь, ы or a official, чино́вникъ, и often, чáсто old, старый; old age, старость (f.); old man, стари́къ, и; old woman, стару́ха, и; days of old, старина́ on, на (*prep.*); on to, на (acc.) once, однажды; разь; одинь разь; at once, сейча́съ; once more, ещё разъ one, одинъ, дна, о́, и́, ъ́ only, то́лько open, to, открыва́ть opinion, Muthie, H; in my opinion, no мо́ему (мнѣнію) opportunity, see occasion opposite, противъ (gen.) oppressive, ду́шный (=close) ог, или: ли order that, in, чтобы order, to, велѣть (dat.) orphan, сирота́, -ы; little orphan. спротка, н other, gpyrón; each other, gpyrb gpýra; to each other, другь другу our, ours, на́шъ, a, e, н out of, изъ (gen.); out of doors, па IBOD<sup>4</sup> outside=out of doors over, надъ (above; instr.); о (about; prep.); че́резъ (through; acc.) own, свой; собственный own, to, IMTTL ох, быкъ, н

### Р

pail, ведрó, <sup>⊥</sup>а palace, дворе́цъ, рци́ pale, блѣднѣть; to be (turn) palo, блѣднѣть palpate, to, ощу́пывать paper, бума́га, и pardon, to, проща́ть; извпийть; pardon me! прости́те! part, ча́сть, и (f.) pass, to (of time), проводи́ть; pass by, итти́ ми́мо

passed through, he, прошёлъ passport, наспорть, ы or a past (adj.), прошлый; (prep. time), нослѣ (gen.); (adv. or prep. space), ми́мо (gen.) patience, reputnie paw, ла́на, ы; little paw, ла́нка, н pay, to, marine; to pay out, выплачнвать peace, MMpb; to make peace between. see to reconcile peasaut, мужикъ, и́; крестья́нинъ, я́не; peasant-house, изба́, -ы; peasantwoman, ба́ба, ы pen, перо́, пе́рья pencil, каранда́шъ, и́ people, лю́ли (folks); наро́дъ, ы (nation; working-class) perhaps, можетъ-быть person, лицо, -a pick up, to, see to lift picture, картина, ы ріесе, кусо́къ, ски pig, свинья́, ≁и pink, розовый ріре, трубка, п pit, я́ма, ы piteous, pitiful, жа́лкій pity, it is a, жа́лко place, мѣсто, á play, to, пграть playground (school), учи́лищный дверъ pleasant, пріятный; милый please, to (to be pleasing), правиться; if you please, пожалуйста plough (Russian), coxá, 41 plough, to, naxátb point, точка, и роог, б'ядный position, nosmuis, u possess, to, имъть; владъть (=have under command) possession, владение, я possible, возможный; is it possible? можно ли? возможно ли?; it is possible, Móжno; is it possible, can it be? неуже́ли... не? pot (jug), кубышка, и pour, to, лить poverty, бѣдность (f.) powerful, morýчiň practical, практичный praise, похвала́, ы́ praise, to, xBannith pray, to, моли́ть

prayer, мели́тва, ы; to say one's prayers, молиться prefer, to, предпочитать prepare, to, приготовля́ть ; выдблывать presence of, in, npn (prep.) present (adj.), настоящий preserve, to, беречь press, see cupboard press, to, math : mathen (Voc. XLIII) pretty, краси́вый; хоро́шенькій prevent, to, Měmára price, цъна́, -ы; not at any price, ни за что на свътъ prince, князь, ья print, a, эстамиъ, ы prison, тюрьма́, -ы private, see simple problem, зада́ча, п profit, при́быль, u(f.)proposal, предложение, я proprietor, see landed proprietor pupil, учени́къ, и́ (m.); учени́ца, ы (f.)рирру, щенокъ, нки от шенята put, to, класть (=lay); to put on, ста́вить (=set, stand); to put on (clothes), одъвать; to put behind (to pawn), закла́дывать; to put questions, see to ask

## Q

quarrel, see fight queen, короле́ва, ы question, вопро́съ, ы question, to, спра́шивать quick, ско́рый quiet, сиоко́йный; ти́хій

### $\mathbf{R}$

гасе (stock), пле́мп, мена́ (л.)
гайt, пло́ть, ы
гайt, пло́ть, ы
гайn, доядь, и́ (m.)
гаіля, доядь, и́ (m.)
гаіля, іt, доядь ндёть
гаісе, to, поднима́ть
гагеly, рѣдко
гаte of, at the, no (Par. 183)
гаther, скорѣє; лу́чше (=in preference to); дово́льно (=fairly)
гачени, to, доходи́ть (=go as far as); достига́ть (=got, attain)
геасhеd, he, дошёть (до)

read, to, читать reading, чте́яіе ready, гото́вый really, право; дѣйстви́тельно; въ самомъ пълъ reap, to, жать recede, to, отдвигаться receive, to, получать, получить recently, неда́вно reckon, to, считать recognize, to, узнавать reconcile, to, мирить red, красный regard, to, смотрѣть; почита́ть (= esteem); уважать (=respect) regret, сожалѣніе, я; to one's regret, къ сожалѣнію regular, пра́вильный reign, царствованіе; царство, а (=етpire) reign, to, царствовать rejoice, to, радоваться relate, to, сказывать ; разсказывать related, closely, родно́й remain, to, остава́ться remaining, остально́й remember, to, помнить ; вспоминать remote, далёкій repair, to, починя́ть repetition, повторение represent, to, представля́ть; изобража́ть representing, изобража́ющій request, to, просить resolve, to, phinats, phinits resound, to, звенъть respect, to, уважать rest, to, отдыха́ть resurrection, воскресе́ніе rich, богатый richer, бога́че riches, богатство ride, to, fixatь верхомъ right, пра́вый; not right, не такъ ring, кольцо, -а ripe, спѣлый; зрѣлый rise, to, встава́ть (=get up); восходи́ть (of the sun); поднима́ться (=go up) river, ръка, -н road, дорога, и; путь, и (m.)<sup>1</sup> room, комната, ы; (private room, study), кабинеть, ы горе, верёвка, и rouble, рубль, и

round, кру́глый row (rank), ря́ль, ы́ row, to, грести́ rower, гребе́ць, биы́ ruin, ги́бель, н (f.) rule, ца́рствованіе rule, to, владѣть (*instr*.) ruler, госуда́рь, н (m.) rummage, to, ры́ться run, to, бѣжа́ть; to run away, убѣжа́ть Russia, Россія Russian, ру́сскій; in Russian, по-ру́сски ryče, рожь (f.)

### $\mathbf{S}$

sabre, са́бля, н sacrifice, жертва, ы sad, скучный sail, парусъ, а same, са́мый samovar, самова́ръ, ы sat down, he, сълъ Saturday, суббота, ы save, to, спасать saved, he, cnacъ say, to, говори́ть, сказа́ть scamp (playfully), шалу́нъ, ы́ scarce, pfgkiň scarcely, едва́ scarlet-fever, скарлатина school, шко́ла, ы; учи́лище, а; (adj.), училищный; school-boy, ученикъ, и; гимназисть, ы; school-girl, ученица, ы scrimmage, дра́ка, и scythe, коса́, ≁ы sea, mópe, я season, время года second, второ́й; друго́й see, to, видѣть; вида́ть seed, chmn, ená seek, to, nckátь ; to seek out, сыскивать seems, it, kárkerch seldom, pfako self, себя́ (refl. pron.); са́мъ, а́, о́, ∠и (emphatic) sell, to, продава́ть send, to, носылать, послать September, сситя́брь (m.) servant, слуга́, -и (m.); служа́шка, и (f.)serve, to, служить

<sup>1</sup> Declined as a fem. noun, but the instr. sing. is путёмъ.

service, служба, ы set, to, ста́внть (trans.); заходи́ть (of the sun); to set about, начинать; стать (perf. verb); to set up. поставля́ть seven, семь seven hundred, семьсотъ seventeen, семиа́дцать seventh, седьмой seventy, семьдесять severe, суро́вый; стро́гій sew, muth shake, to, потрясать share, yuáctic sharp, о́стрый she, oná; эта shed, capáň, H sheep, овца́, ∸ы shine, to, ciять ship, кора́бль, и (m.) shirt, руба́шка, н shop-assistant, clerk, приказчикъ, и shore, бе́регъ, а́ short, короткій shorter, коро́че show, to, показывать, показать shrink, to, жаться shut, to, закрывать sick, больной sickle, серпъ, ы́ sickness, болѣзнь, и (f.) side, сторона́, - -ы sigh, to, вздыхать sight (spectacle) зрѣлище, a; (view) видъ, ы sight of, to catch, увидъть (perf.) sign, знакъ, и silly, see stupid silver, ссребро́; (adj.), сере́бряный simple, простой simply, npócro since (prep.), съ (gen.); (adv.), съ тѣхъ поръ; тому́ наза́дъ (=ago); long since, уже давно; not long since, неда́вно; (conj.) такъ какъ (=as); съ тѣхъ по́ръ, какъ (oftime) sing, to, ntrb sister, сестра́, ∹ы sit, to (=to be seated), cugfrb; to sit down (=take a seat), cagúrьca six, шесть six hundred, meetbcorb sixteen, шестнадцать sixth, mectóň

sixty, шестьдеся́ть sketch, pucýnokъ, nku skin, ко́жа, н sky, néfo, nefecá sleep, to, cnarь sleep, to go to, итти спать; ложиться спать; усыпать slide, to, скользить slow, медленный slumber, to, дремать ; спать slv, xútphů small, ма́лый; маленькій; мелкій (= fine)smaller. ме́ньшій smith, кузне́цъ, ы́ smoke, to, курить smooth, гладкій snow, cutra, á; snow, to, снъ́гъ идётъ snow-storm, мете́ль, н (f.) so, такъ; столько; so much, столько; so that, чтобы soft, мя́гкій (=not hard); ти́хій (=not loud) soldier, солда́ть, ы soldierly, солдатскій solve, to, phuáth some, иѣкоторый (=a certain); како́йнибудь; н $\pm$ сколькіе, ія (=a few); нѣсколько (governs gen.) something, что - либо; что - нибудь (=anything); что-то sometimes, morgá somewhat, иѣсколько; немио́го somewhere or other, to, куда-то so much, сто́лько son, сы́нъ, -новья́ song, пъсня, н soon, ckópo; páno sooner, pánьme; ckopfe sorrow, rópe, я́ sort of, no, никакой: what sort of. каково́й (adj.); како́й soup, су́пъ, ы; cabbage-soup, щи (f. pl.)sour, кислый south, ю́гъ sow, to, сѣять spade, лопа́та, ы Spanish, испа́нскій speak, to, говорить ; молвить spectacle, зрълнще, а spend, to (time), проводить spin, to, прясть spite of, in, несмотря на (acc.)

spiteful, злой splendid, великолѣпный spoil, to, портить spring (season), весна́, ты; in spring, весной sprout, to, выраста́ть square (in a town), площадь, и (f.) stable, коню́шня, п stag, оле́нь, и (*m*.) stair, лѣстница, ы (*intr.*); ставить stand, to, стоять (tr.) stand up, to, вставать, встать start, to, начина́ть; стать (=begin); отътажать (=drive away) state (polit.), госуда́рство, a station (railway), вокза́лъ, ы stay, to, see to remain steal, to, воровать; красть stiff, kpźnkiń still (adv.), see yet; (adj.), rúxiñ; спокойной stirrup, стремя, ена́ (n.) stocking, чулокъ, лки stoke, to, затопля́ть; топи́ть stone, камень, мин (m.); (adj.), каменный stoop, to, нагибаться stop! по́лно! stork, ансть, ы story, разсказъ, ы; сказка, и stove, пе́чь, п (f.) strange, странный; чужой (=not one's own) stream, ручей, ьй; рѣка, -п street, у́лица, ы strict, crpóriñ stride, to, marárь strike, to, ударя́ть; бить; to strike against, толка́ться strive, to, стараться strong, сильный; крынкій study, to, see to learn stupid, глу́ный such. Takóň sudden, внезапный suddenly, вдругъ sufferer, страдалецъ, -льцы sufficiently, дово́льно ; доста́точно summer, nitro, a; in summer, nitroma; summer (country) residence, gáva, и sun, со́лице, а Sunday, Bockpecéme, H superficial, паружный

supper, ўжинь, ы suppose, to, полага́ть sure, вѣрный surely, вѣрно; surely not, пеуже́ли surface, пове́рхность, и (f.)surrey, to, осма́тривать sweep up, to, подмета́ть sweet, сла́дній

#### т

table, столъ, ы; at (the) table, за столо́мъ tail, хвость, ы tailor, портной, ые take, to, брать; to take away (in a conveyance), отвозить; to take off (down), снимать; to take place, случаться; делаться; to take thought, безпоко́йться tale, разска́зъ, ы talk, to, болтать; говорить tall, высо́кій tame, дома́шній tan (colour), рыжій tasty, вкусный taught, to be, see to learn tea, ván, ú teach, учить teacher, учитель, я (m.); учительница, ы (f.) tear, слеза́, <del>"</del>ы tear, to, порывать tea-urn, самова́ръ, ы tell, to, сказывать, сказать; велѣть (order) ten, де́сять terrible, ужа́сный territory, владѣніе, я than, чѣмъ; не́жели thank, to, благодари́ть; thank you, спасибо that (demonstr.), тоть, та, то, тѣ; этоть, эта, это, эти; (relative), который; кто; что; (conj.), что; чтобы; that is, то есть; значитъ that is why, воть почему theo (acc. and gen.), refi; (dat.), тебѣ their, theirs, ихъ them, нхъ, нмъ, etc. then, тогда́ (=at that time); пото́мъ (=after that) thence, оттуда there, TAME; there is or are, есть

therefore, потому, поэтому there is! there are! BOTE! they, out (m. and n.); out (f.)thick, толстый thief, во́ръ, ы (о́въ) thin, tómin ; mágkin (of fluids) thine, see thy thing, вещь, и (f.); предметь, ы; дѣло, а́ think, to, думать third, rpérin thirteen, трина́дцать thirty, тридцать this, этотъ, эта, это, эти thither, туда́ thou, ты though, хотя́ бы thousand. тысяча three, TPH; three hundred, TPHCTA through, черезъ (acc.); сквозь (acc.) through, went, прошёлъ throw, to, бросать, броснть thunder, громъ, ы; to thunder. гремѣть thunderstorm, гроза́, -ы Thursday, четвергъ, и thus, такъ; такимъ образомъ thy, thói, oń, oë, où till, до (gen.); till now, до сихъ поръ; (conj.), пока́ . . не time, время, ена (n.); разъ, ы (=оссаsion); it is time, nopá; at the present time, въ настоящее время; at a time (=at one stroke), cpásy; what time is it ? который чась? every time, всякій разь; at times, иногда́ time of, in the, при (prep.) timid, робкій tinkle, to, звенѣть to, BE (acc.) (=into); RE (dat.) (=towards); go (gen.) (=as far as); на (acc.) (=on to); для (gen.) (=for); dative case of noun tobacco, таба́къ, и́ to-day, сего́дия together, вмѣстѣ to-morrow, за́втра tongue, языкъ, и too, сли́шкомъ; too much or many, слишкомъ миото; too (=also), также top (= highest part), ве́рхъ, н torment, to, мучить torrents, in, ручьёмъ; ручьями

torture, to, мучить touch, to, трогать towards, RE (dat.); HABCTPEUY town, го́родъ, á townsman, small, мѣщани́нъ, а́не traverse, to, проходить treasuro, кла́дъ, ы tree, дерево, а or евья tremble, to, дрожать trembling, дрожа́щій tributary, притокъ, и trouble, трудъ, ы true, вбрный truly, вправду; право truth, пра́вда try, to, стара́ться Tuesday, вторникъ turn ill, to=to fall ill, see ill turn pale, to, блѣднѣть twelve, двѣна́дцать twenty, два́дцать twice, два раза; дважды twine, to, вить two, два, двѣ two hundred, двѣсти

### U

ugly, некраси́вый uncle, дя́дя, н (m.) under, подъ (instr. or acc.) understand, to, понимать ; умѣть understanding, ymfenie understood, that is (=goes without saying), разумѣется undress, to (intr.), раздѣва́ться unfortunate, песча́стный unfortunately, къ сожалѣнію unhappiness, necuácrie, я unhappy, несчастный unknown, незнакомый unpleasant, แenpiя́าแый until, see till up, до (gen.) (=as far as); по (dat.) (=over, along); (adv.), вверхъ; наверхъ; up and down, взадъ н вперёдъ upright, прямой; правдивый uprightness, правдивость

upstairs, Habépxi (with verb of motion)

use, to, употребля́ть

used to, rendered simply by the Imperfective Past or by this tense followed by бывало useful, полезный

usual, обыкнове́нный usually, обыкнове́нно utensils, see vessels utmost, кра́йній

## V

vanquish, to, побъжда́ть verst, верста́,  $\dashv_{M}$ very (adj.), са́мый; (adv.) о́чень vessels (= utensils), посу́да (f. collect.) vice, поро́къ, и vietim, же́ртва, ы vietim, же́ртва, ы village, село́,  $\dashv_{a}$ ; дере́вня, п (without a church); village community, мі́ръ, ы virtue (quality), ка́чество, a visible, ви́дпый; очеви́дный visit, to, посѣща́ть voice, го́лосъ, а́

W

wait, to, ждать walk, to, ходи́ть; итти́; гуля́ть; to go for a walk, итти гулять wall, стѣна́, ≁ы wander, to, бродить want, to, see to wish, to seek war, война́, ≁ы wares, see goods warlike, воинственный warm, тёплый; горя́чій (=hot) was, быль, ла́, ло wash (oneself), to, умыва́ться water, вода́, <sup>н</sup>ы water, to, поливать wave, волна́, ≁ы way, доро́га, и; путь, и́ (m.) we, мы weak, слабый wealth, богатство wearisome, ckýчный weather, noróga weave, to, TRATE ; BUTE (wind) Wednesday, cpegá week, недбля, н weep, to, плакать well, xopomó; ny; see healthy well-known, известный went, ходиль; шёль, ношёль, see to go wore, были West, Janaga

wet, мо́крый wet through, to be, мо́кнуть what (adj.), который (=which); какой (=what sort of ?); (pron.), что; (=that which) что; то, что wheat, пшеница when, когда́; тогда́ какъ whence, откуда; отчего where, гдъ; nowhere, нигдъ; everywhere, noncógy, nesgá; wherewith(al), чёмъ whether, ли (Par. 228) which, который (adj. and pron.); что (pron.) whisper, to, шептать white, бѣ́лый whither, куда́ who, кто; который whole, цѣлый; весь, вся, всё, всѣ whom, кого, кому, etc. whose ? чей, чья, чьё, чьи; whose, gen. of который why, почему; зачѣмъ; отчего́; что wide, mupókiň wider, mupe wife, жена, -ы wild, дикій; wild beast звѣрь, и (m.) wind, вѣтеръ, тры or á wind, to, BHTL window, okhó, -a wine, винó, ∠a winter, зима́, -ы; in winter, зимо́й wish, to, желать; хотъть with, съ (instr.); у (gen.); (from) отъ (gen.) without, безъ (gen.) wolf, во́лкъ, и (о́въ) woman, же́нщипа, ы; old woman, старуха, и wonderful, удивительный wood (=forest), лѣсъ, а́; (=timber), де́рево; (=fuel), дрова́ (n. pl.) wooden, деревя́нный work, paбóтa, ы; work, to, paбóтать working (day), pacoviit workman, работникъ, и; рабочій world, свѣтъ; міръ, ы; земля́, -и worse worst } xyдшій, ху́же worth, to be, сто́ить; it is not worth mentioning, не сто́нтъ ; ничего́ would, see Par. 199;=wished weund, ра́на, ы wounded, pánchuň

write, to, писать wrong, неправый; in the wrong way; не такъ

## Y

yard, дворъ, ы

year, годъ, а; лѣто, а. After 1, 2, 3, 4 use годъ, года; after 5, 6, 7, etc. in nominative or accusative use лѣтъ

yellow, жёлтый

yes, да yesterday, вчера́

- yesterday, the day before, третьяго дпя
- yet (adv.), ещё; (conj.), однако; несмотря́ на э́то

уои, вы, васъ, etc.

young, молодой

younger, младшій; меньшой

your, yours, ва́шъ, a, e, n

# INDEX

The figures refer to the paragraphs in the text, the Roman numerals to those of the Introduction.

Accent, importance of, vi, xxi Accusative, meaning of, 16 after prepositions, 60, 100, 127, 160, 183 animate and inanimate, 16, 74, 84 neuter, 74, 84 in time phrases, 128, 181 Adverbs in o, e, 189, 237, 238 of quantity, Voc. XL Adjectives : accentuation, 6, 191, 192, 237, 238 declension, see Declension comparative, attributive, 195 attributive, exceptional forms, 195(a)predicative, 192 in e, 193, 238 predicative form, 187-190, 237, 238 use of, 69 (note), 116, 189 superlative, 186, 196, 197 Animate and inanimate, see Accusative Approximate number, 181 (c), 182 Aspects, see Verb быть, р. 34 весь, 106 въ, 60, 61, 128, 181 (с) вы (pronoun) written with capital, 80 (note) BLI, prefix in perfective verbs, always accented, Voc. LVI (note) Consonants, voiced and voiceless, v Dash, use of, 8 Date, to express the, 181 Dative, meaning of, 20 after prepositions, 39, 87 after verb 'command, 214; 'believe,' 223 (2); 'help,' Voc. LIII (2); 'learn,' Voc. LVI (1) Declension of adjectives, 88, 89, 92, 94 of predicative adjective, 187, 188

Declension of nouns : masculine, 43, 133-136 names of young animals, 229 of peoples and classes, 230 feminine, 53, 64, 86, 151-153 in ія, Россія, Voc. XXXIV, 152(2) in ь, 64, 86, 136 neuter, 43, 172, 173, 219, 229 in ie, 43 (note), 173 Declension of cardinal numerals, 176,177 of ordinal numerals, 167 Declension of pronouns, see Summary, p. 33 Dentals, xvi питя́, 229 до, 99 e dropped or interpolated in declension, 14 (note), 153, 172, 190, 237 есть, есть ли, Voc. XIII ' from,' translation of, 98 3a, 44, 115, Voc. XXXIX sa as prefix, Voc. LIII (note) Gender, 3, 66 Genitive : meaning, 19 after numerals, 27, 138, 179, 180 after prepositions, 70 after adverbs of quantity, 30, Voc. XL after comparative, 194 in negative phrases, 28, 29 partitive, 31 plural masculine, 133-136 feminine, 151-153 neuter, 172, 173 ending in y, Voc. XXVII (note), Voc. XLII, Voc. XLIII after y with быть, 24

## INDEX

' go,' translation of, 40, 97, 160 Greetings, Ex. XXXV. A (13), 216 Gutturals, xv

' have,' translation of, 24 Hours of the day, 181 (c)

u=also, Ex. XVI A (11) n35, 98 Imperative, see Verb Instrumental case : after prepositions, 44 after verbs, 69, 185 exceptional form in plural, 111 of means, 67 of manner, 115 in time phrases, 68 Interrogative forms, see Verb Irregular verb, see Verb

n interpolated in 1st singular of verbs, 141 (note 2) Labials, xiv 'let him (them),' 215 'let us,' 214, 231 Liquids, xx

Modification of verb stem, 141 (note), 142, 158, 169, 201, 207, 232 н prefixed in declension, 25 на, 60, 61, 128 надъ, 127 Nasals, xix Negative, 8, note to Ex. I, 217 double, Voc. III and note Nouns : accentuation, 48-50, 54, 75, 112 declension, see Declension plurals, 72-76 lists, 77–79, 117–119 genitive, see Genitive пѣть, 29 Numerals : approximate number, 182 cardinals 1-10, 20, see 138, and Voc. XXXVI 11–19, see 148 **30–100**, see 150 hundreds, thousands, 155 declension, see Declension distributive, 183 ordinals, 1st-19th, 166 20th-100th, 171 200th upwards, 184

Numerals-continued time of day, 181 (e) with genitive singular, 138, 179 with genitive plural, 138, 180 o or e dropped or interpolated, 39 (note), Voc. XIX (note), 153, 172, 190, 237 одинъ, 107 (b), 178 Orthography, general rule of, 91 оть, 98 Passive voice, see Verb Peoples, classes, names of, 230 передъ, 44 (note 3), Voc. IX Phonetic symbols, iii transcript, 194-209 пить and пѣть, 165 110, 87, 183 no as prefix, 207 подъ, 127 Prepositions, list of, 236 Prepositions in o or ъ, 39 (note) Prepositional Case : occurrence, 45 in time phrases, 128, 181 (b) in ý, 46 npn, 45 при as prefix, 62, 63, 97 про, 100 про as prefix, 62 Pronouns, see Summary, p. 33 Pronunciation, see Introduction, especially iv and vi

#### Poccíя, Voc. XXXIV

Salutations, 216 самый and самъ, 107 (е), 186, 235свой, 104, 109 Script, pp. 190–193 сей, 106 Sibilants, xvii, xviii Signs, hard and soft, xiii Suggestions for use of this book, p. 36 Summary of Regular Forms, pp. 32-35 съ, со, 39 (note), 44, 98 ' than,' 194 ' they ' (indefinite), 101, 102 Time phrases-in, on, at, by, 68, 128, 160, 181 date, 181 тотъ, 107 (а)

Verbs : see Summary of Regular Forms, pp. 34 - 35actual and potential (or definite and indefinite, or concrete and abstract), 40, 159, 208 (note) aspects, 199 et seq. changes in stem, 141 (note), 142, 158, 169, 201, 207classification, 129, 130; 202, 203; 208 (note) conditional, 199, 223 dative, governing, 214, 223 (2) (examples), Voc. LIII (2), LVI (1) of fearing, 233, 234 future : быть, 123 imperfective, 124 perfective, 160, 204 of hoping, 233 imperative, formation of, 210-218 first plural, 214 imperfective and perfective, 217 negative, 217 expressed by infinitive, 218 imperfective aspect, 202 imperfective aspect derived from perfective, 232 indefinite 3rd plural, 101, 102 indicating a state of rest and cognate verbs describing an act or motion, 60, 143 infinitive, 32, 33, 41 irregular forms, 158, 239 as imperative, 218 use of, 33, 41, 218 instrumental, governing, 69, 185 interrogative forms, 12, 13, 24 (c), 228, Voc. XV and XLIV irregular, 156, 220-222, 231, 239 л interpolated in 1st singular present, 141 (note) in -овать, -евать, 225 omission of verb, 7 participles, see Summary, p. 35 passive voice, see Summary, p. 35, and Pars. 80 (a), 102, 139 (b), 157 (a) past tense : form, 32, 57, 58, 80, 161 without n in masculine, 96

Verbs-continued past tense: irregular forms, 96, 239 with бы, 199, 223 with чтобъ, 200, 233 perfective aspect, 203 formation of, 206, 207 forms of, illustrated in Vocs. LII-LVI illustrative passages, following 209plural for singular, Ex. XXVII B (note) prefixes, effect of, 208 present tense : in –аю, –аешь, 131 -ѣю, -ѣешь, 131 -ý, -ёшь, 157 -ью́, -ьёшь, 162 *-*у *оr* −у́, -ешь, 168 -ю, -ишь, 141 -ю, -ншь, 145 -ю, *ч*ишь, 149 -ую, -уешь, 225 irregular forms, 220, 221, 222, 231, 239 present for English past, 144, 227 reflexive verb, 37 spelling, 132 for passive, 102(b)scheme of Russian verb, 205 tense sequence, 144, 227 tense systems, 202, 203 of wishing, 224 in -ывать, 226, 232 'there is,' Voc. II, XIII Vowels, hard and soft, iv, viii-xii 'whether,' 228 y with genitive and быть= to have, 24 Young of animals, declension of names of, 229 ходи́ть and итти, 40, 159, 208 (note)

чей, 106

#### этоть, 107





